

Worthy to Remember

An Abridgment



Family Surnames

*Bowles, Buckingham, Cocke, Farrar, Hastings,
Houghton, Huntington, Jefferson, Massey, Morgan,
Phillips, Rogers, Smith, Tinker, Whitney, and
Other Related Families*

Compiled by Richard T. Martin

Published 2026

Copyright © 2026 by Richard T. Martin

Copies for non-commercial, personal use are permitted. Inquiries may be made at rtmsharp99@gmail.com

Introduction

It was only a few months ago that I realized that I should make an abridgment of *Worthy to Remember*. At first, I didn't like the idea because I realized it would take a lot of work, but as I thought about it, I knew it would be worth the effort. I reviewed each of the fifteen histories within this compilation and chose the accounts that I believed were most interesting. Then I edited them and brought these histories together into this book. It was a challenge at times, deciding what to leave out and what new information to add, but the process was rewarding because it caused me to think about the lives of my relatives once again.

This is not a rewrite and on occasion the accounts may be too long. If a history seems to lack something it is often because there just isn't enough information about that person or situation, but it is included here because it has a certain merit. As I reread these histories, my heart was touched by the lives of some of my ancestors. Everyone has some private sorrows that they don't share with others and certainly they suffered afflictions and discouragements that they kept hidden. One relative once wrote, "I get the blues now and then," and isn't that the way everyone feels at some time or another? One recent study revealed that everyone has 3.2 down days in a month and even if you eat right and exercise regularly you will still have 1.7 down days during the same period. We're not always at the top of our game and we're not always enthusiastic or happy. Few people have written anything about their lives so we don't know how they felt most of the time. Most of the histories contained in this record are only outlines, but when we get something that they wrote, I've made it a point to include it in this abridgment because it is so rare.

Headings are used to emphasize some interesting aspect of the story, but often some other parts of the narration are just as important. The histories begin with the first book in *Worthy to Remember*, *The Bowles Family*, and continue to the final book, *The Whitney Family*, with some exceptions.

Most of the relatives mentioned here are great-grandparents of Richard T. Martin and his relatives, but many great-grandaunts and great-granduncles are also included. Cousins are entered only when they have an interesting story, such as Jack Swilling (1830-1878; the son of Margaret Prince Farrar, the daughter of Thomas Farrar, 5th Great-Granduncle), who was the founder of Phoenix, Arizona.

Summary

A quick overview reveals that some relatives accomplished extraordinary things within their lifetimes. Two examples among many are Rev. Thomas Buckingham (1646-1709) and Asa Griggs Chandler, Sr. (1851-1929; husband of Lucy Howard). Buckingham was a Founder of Yale University in 1701 and held the college's first commencement in his home. It is recognized as one of the premier universities in the world and as of October 2020, 65 Nobel laureates have been affiliated with the school. In addition, Yale has graduated five U.S. Presidents, 19 U.S. Supreme Court Justices, and 31 living billionaires

(Wikipedia). Chandler was the founder of the Coca-Cola Company. This product has affected virtually everyone in the world. Even the well-known image of Santa Clause was created by the advertising department of Coca-Cola.

Everyone in the following list is related to the compiler, most are great-grandparents, great-granduncles, or great-grandaunts: Mathew Griswold (1620-1698) was a founder of Lyme, Connecticut; Thomas Hosmer (1602-1687), Stephen Hosmer (1644-1693), and Thomas Shelden (1617-1655) were founders of Hartford, Connecticut; Henry Wadsworth Longfellow (1807-1882) was a world renowned poet; Francis Griswold (1635-1671), Thomas Adgate (1620-1707), Christopher Huntington (1624-1691), and Simon Huntington (1629-1706) were founders of Norwich, Connecticut; Lt. Alexander Scammel Wadsworth (1790-1851) was an officer on the *USS Constitution* during the War of 1812; General William Hart (1746-1817; husband of Esther Buckingham), a rich ship-owner, armed his merchant ships and served his country in numerous privateering forays against the British during the Revolutionary War; Hannah Griswold Clark (1658-1687) has the oldest gravestone for a women in Plymouth, Massachusetts; Thomas Buckingham (1606-1657) built in 1640 what is today the oldest home in America that has been continuously owned by a descendant of the original owner; John Bowles (1592-1664) helped save Jamestown from starvation in 1610; Capt. James Cocke (1691-1775) was a founder of St. John's Episcopal Church in Richmond, Virginia; Dr. John Woodson (1586-1644) was killed in the Virginian Indian massacre of 1644; Moses Parish (born 1742) fought in the battles of Brandywine and Monmouth; U.S. Senator Abraham Venable (1758-1811) perished in the Richmond Theatre fire on December 26, 1811; Bishop Robert Ferrar (1500-1555) was burned at the stake for his beliefs in 1555; Justice Henry Ferrer (1537-1610) was stabbed to death in Westminster Hall, London, by a fellow justice in 1610; William Farrar (1594-1637) was one of the most prominent early settlers of Virginia; Dr. Thomas Fearn, Jr. (1789-1863) of Huntsville, Alabama, was famous for his pioneering work in the medicinal use of quinine; William Hawkins (served 1812-1814) and General Alfred Scales (1827-1892; served 1885-1889) were Governors of North Carolina; Fuller Earle Callaway (1870-1928) created a manufacturing empire in Georgia; Richard William Norton, Sr. (1886-1940) struck oil in northern Louisiana in 1930 and became rich; Capt. Waller Massie Boyd (1843-1917) was one of the few Confederate soldiers to reach the Union's lines in the famous Pickett's Charge in the Battle of Gettysburg in 1863; Fletcher Summerfield Stockdale (1823-1890) was Governor of Texas in 1865; Henry Percy (1321-1368), William de Ros (1329-1352), John de Wingfield and two of his brothers, Thomas de Beauchamp (1313-1369, "many of his relatives were killed in this battle"), Sir Hugh Hastings (1307-1347), Ralph de Stafford (1301-1372), Alan la Zouche de Mortimer, John de Montacute (1330-1389), and John de Beauchamp (1313-1369) fought in the Battle of Crecy in 1346; Adam de Bostock (1325-1374), Edward le Despencer (1335-1375), Sir John de Wingfield (died 1361), John de Montacute (1330-1389), and Thomas de Beauchamp, (1313-1369) fought in the Battle of Poitiers in 1356; Thomas de Morley (1393-1435), John Clifford (1389-1422), Thomas de Camoys, Michael de la Pole (1394-1415; died in the battle), and Ralph de Bostock (1392-1421) fought in the Battle of Agincourt in 1415; Sir Hugh Hastings (1307-1347) had the largest and finest of all English brasses placed over his burial in 1347; William de Warenne (1119-1148) was in the Second Crusade, but was killed in the Battle of Mount Cadmus in 1148; William Longespee (1176-1226), who has a magnificent effigy, was the first burial in Salisbury Cathedral in 1226—he was poisoned; Edward le Despencer (1335-1375) is

depicted as the famous kneeling knight of Tewkesbury; Hugh le Despenser (1286-1326) had many enemies because of the king's favor, and eventually died by being hanged, drawn and quartered; Hugh le Despenser (1261-1326) was hanged in his armor, beheaded, and his body cut into pieces for the dogs; Sir Henry Percy "Harry Hotspur" (1364-1403) was a dynamic, brave leader in northern England, who died in the Battle of Shrewsbury fighting the king in 1403; Henry Percy (1341-1408) died fighting the king in the Battle of Bramham Moor in 1408—he was a direct-descendant of King Henry III and a descendent of many generations of French kings by his great-grandmother, Blanche of Artois (1248-1302); Ralph Neville (1291-1367) led the English Army to victory at the Battle of Neville's Cross in 1346; Alice de la Pole (1404-1475) was the granddaughter of the English poet, Geoffrey Chaucer, author of the *Canterbury Tales*; Gilbert de Clare (1243-1295) completed Caerphilly Castle in 1271, the second largest castle in Great Britain; Thomas de Clare (1245-1287) built the famous Bunratty Castle in Ireland of stone in 1277; William Marshal (1146-1219) was considered "the greatest knight that ever lived;" Sir John de Wingfield (died 1361) was six foot five inches tall; William de la Pole (died 1366) was so rich that he financed the king with huge sums of money; Robert de Beaumont (1040-1118), Walter Giffard (died before 1085), William de Warenne (died 1088), Odo, Bishop of Bayeux (died 1097), and Robert, Count of Mortain (1031-1090) are all proven companions of William the Conqueror and fought with him in the Battle of Hastings in 1066; Roger de Beaumont (1015-1094; "The Bearded") contributed 60 ships to William the Conqueror and was his close advisor; Isabel de Clare (1172-1220), the beautiful and rich wife of William Marshal, descended from kings of Ireland; Lorcan Ua Tuathail, also known as St. Laurence O'Toole, was canonized by Pope Honorius in 1225; Thomas de Beauchamp (1313-1369), who commanded the center at the Battle of Crecy in 1346, was 11th Earl of Warwick and died in the Black Death of 1369; the Beauchamp Tower in the Tower of London was named for Thomas de Beauchamp (1338-1401); Richard de Beauchamp (1382-1439) has the finest gilt-bronze monumental effigy in all of Great Britain; Roger de Mortimer (1287-1330) escaped from the Tower of London and overthrew the king; William de Braose (died 1093) probably fought in the Battle of Hastings; William de Braose (1197-1230) committed adultery with Prince Llywelyn's wife and was hung; Maude de Braose (1155-1210) was starved to death with her oldest son by King John; Miles Fitz Walter (died 1143) was killed while hunting; Philip de Braose (1070-1134) fought in the First Crusade and died in another in 1134; Walchelin de Ferrieres (died 1201) fought in the Third Crusade with King Richard; Guy de Beauchamp (1272-1315) executed Piers Gaveston, the king's hated favorite, in 1312; Sir John Dinham (1359-1428) killed one of the murderers of his father in Exeter Cathedral; Hugh de Vere (1207-1263) had Castle Hedingham as his primary estate, which today is considered the best preserved Norman keep in England; John de Montacute (1330-1389), who has a prominent effigy in Salisbury Cathedral, was in the Siege of Calais in 1349; Thomas de Monthermer (1301-1340) died from wounds received in the Battle of Sluys in 1340; Ralph de Monthermer (1270-1325) married King Edward I's daughter without his permission, and helped Robert the Bruce escape; William Montacute (1301-1344) was the best friend of King Edward III; Elizabeth de Montford (died 1354) has the oldest effigy in Christ Church Cathedral in Oxford; Peter de Montford (1205-1265) was the first Speaker of the House of Commons in 1258; Simon de Montagu (died 1316) was Governor of Corfe Castle and Beaumaris Castle; Robert Fitzroy (1090-1147) was the leader of Empress Matilda's Army during The Anarchy; Robert Fitzhamon (died 1107)

founded Tewkesbury Abbey; Roger de Montgomerie (died 1094) may have commanded the right flank at the Battle of Hastings—as Earl of Shrewsbury he was one of the richest and most powerful men in England; Mabel de Belleme (died 1077), who was known for being cruel, was murdered by Hugh Bunel and his brothers for taking their paternal inheritance; William I Talvas (995-1052) had his wife, Arnulf, strangled on her way to church “because she loved God and wouldn’t support his wickedness”; Ranulf II (1099-1053) was poisoned with wine by his host in 1053; Ranulf de Blondville (1170-1232) fought in the Second Battle of Lincoln in 1217 and participated in the Fifth Crusade; Matilda, Empress of England (1102-1167) lost the civil war, but won the throne for her descendants; Geoffrey of Anjou (1113-1151) was called the Handsome and the Fair and was known as a great warrior; Fulk (1089-1143) was King of Jerusalem; Henry II (1133-1189) ruled from Scotland to the border of Spain; Richard the Lionheart (1157-1199) led the Third Crusade; King John (1166-1216) could be cruel and was forced by his nobles to sign the Magna Carta; Henry III (1207-1272) ruled England for 56 years; Edward I (1239-1307) subdued Wales and Scotland, building a number of great castle along the way; Eleanor of Castile (1241-1290) was the great love of King Edward I—she had a great Spanish heritage; Edward III (1312-1377) made England the strongest military power in Europe; Bleddyn ap Cynfyn (died 1073) was “betrayed and killed”; Maredudd ap Bleddyn (1047-1032) was captured by his brother and then handed over to the king of England for personal gain; Madog ap Maredudd (died 1160) fought with his Welch cavalry in the First Battle of Lincoln in 1141; Owain ap Gruffudd (1100-1170) was the first Prince of Wales; Iorwerth ab Owain Gwynedd (1130-1174) was not allowed to be king because of his broken nose—he was killed in the Battle of Pennant Melangell in 1174; Llywelyn the Great (1173-1170) was ruler of all Wales for 45 years by a combination of war and diplomacy; Gruffudd ap Cynan (1055-1137) was betrayed, imprisoned, escaped, and lost his throne three times before finally keeping it for a final time about 1101; Gwenllian ferch Gruffydd (1100-1136) was the only medieval woman to lead a Welsh army into battle; Rhys ap Gruffydd (1132-1197) was the ruler of the kingdom of Deheubarth in south Wales from 1155 to 1197 and was the dominant power in Wales after the death of Owain Gwynedd; Ragnhilda, wife of Cynan ab Iago, appeared on the list of the “Fair Women of Ireland” in the 12th century; Amlaib mac Siltriuc (died 1034) was slain while on his way to Rome on a pilgrimage; Sigtrygg II Silkbeard Olafsson (died 1041) fought in many battles and reigned for 46 years—in 1035 he burned 200 men in a stone church tower; Brian Boru (941-1014) was High King of Ireland; Amlaib mac Sitric (927-981) was King of Northumbria, England, and Dublin, Ireland; Sitric Caech (died 927) defeated six Irish kings in one battle in 919; Madog ap Gruffudd (Prince of Powys Fadog from 1191 to 1236) united Northern Powys and founded Valle Crucis Abbey; Emma de Audley (1224-1278) was a direct-descendant of King Henry I, who was descended from William the Conqueror; Thomas Hastings (1605-1685) was a founder of Watertown, Massachusetts; Samuel Hyde (1610-1689) and John Fuller were founders of Newton, Massachusetts; Elizabeth Cole (1623-1700) was born in Lavenham, England, a town whose architecture has been frozen in time; Walter Cole (died in 1653) was a “barber chirurgion” in Lavenham, England; Abraham Browne (1671-1729) built in circa 1697 what is today the oldest home still standing in Watertown, Massachusetts; John Houghton (1624-1684) has the oldest grave-stone in the town of Lancaster, Massachusetts; John Houghton (1650-1737) was in his day the most prominent person in Lancaster, Massachusetts; Robert Houghton (1658-1723)

survived the Indian massacre of 1675 and the Indian raid of 1704 in Lancaster, Massachusetts; George Bennett (1630-1675) was killed in the Indian massacre of 1675—his son, Samuel Bennett (1665-1742), has one of finest ancient gravestones remaining in Massachusetts; Solomon Houghton (born 1729) remained a loyalist during the Revolutionary War, although the rest of his family supported the revolution; the photograph of Esther Lepingwell Houghton's (1657-1740) gravestone is the best ever taken by me; Ann Linton (1613-1680) and her husband, Lawrence Waters, were fined for dancing; Tamar Houghton (1779-1856) married John S. Strong and he was one of the founders of Strongsville, Ohio, which was named for him—their home from 1833 is still standing; Nathaniel Whitney (1749-1829), Jonas Whitney (1751-1842) and Eliphalet Whitney (1757-1832), married three sisters, Mary Houghton (1752-1844), Tamar Houghton (1754-1831), and Lois Houghton (1756-1838); Eleazer Houghton (1691-1790) built a New England saltbox home about 1726, which is still standing; Capt. Edmond Goodenow (1610-1688), his wife, Anne Barry Goodenow (1607-1675), and their son, Joseph Goodenow (1645-1676), have grave slabs that still exists, which are some of the oldest in Massachusetts; Simon Huntington (1583-1633) emigrated from Norwich, England, to New England in 1633; Christopher Baret (1562-1649), and Peter Baret were mayors of Norwich, England, when it was the second greatest city in England; Simon Huntington (1629-1706) has the oldest gravestone in Norwich, Connecticut, which dates from 1706; Simon Huntington (1659-1736) built a large, fine, red wooden house on the village green in Norwich, Connecticut in 1689, which is still standing in excellent condition; Samuel Huntington (1731-1796) was a signer of the Declaration of Independence and President of the Second Continental Congress; Joseph Huntington (1661-1747) was a founder of Windham, Connecticut; Matthew Marvin (1600-1678) emigrated from Great Bentley, England, where his home called Eden's Farm is still standing; Edward Marvin (1550-1615) had a fight in the church over his ancestral seat; Deacon Thomas Adgate (1620-1707) has the second oldest gravestone in Norwich, Connecticut; Mary Bushnell (1653-1745) lived with her husband, Thomas Leffingwell, in the excellent Leffingwell Inn in Norwich, Connecticut, which was built in 1675; Elihu Tinker (1741-1816) and his wife, Lydia Huntington Tinker (1744-1816), died on the same day, August 29, 1816; Solomon Huntington (1700-1752) called his family together and counselled them on his deathbed in 1752; Christopher Branch (1600-1681) was among the first to settle Virginia in 1621 and survived the Powhatan attack of 1622; William Branch (1524-1602) was mayor of Abingdon, England; Richard Branch (1496-1544) grew rich as a woolen draper; John Branch (died about 1488) lived at 46 West St. Helen Street in Abingdon, England, and his home is still standing today; Peter Jefferson (1708-1757) did a famous survey and was the father of Thomas Jefferson; Thomas Jefferson (1743-1826) was the author of the Declaration of Independence; Col. Henry Soane (1623-1662) was a Speaker of the Virginia House of Burgesses; George W. Randolph's (1818-1867) image was depicted on the Confederate \$100 banknote; Francis Wayles Eppes (1801-1881), grandson of Thomas Jefferson, was the chief founder of Florida State University; Sir Adam de Bostock (1270-1338) fought in the battles of Sterling Bridge and Falkirk, both in Scotland; Lionell Bostock's (1533-1600) portrait has survived to the present day; Roger de Venables' (died 1261) coat of arms is displayed in Westminster Abbey; Robert Cuthose (1051-1131), the oldest son of William the Conqueror, led a Norman army in the First Crusade; Robert the Magnificent (1000-1035) died returning from his pilgrimage to Jerusalem; Rollo (846-930) was the first Viking ruler over Normandy; Emma of Normandy

(984-1052) was the mother of Edward the Confessor, King of England, who was canonized; Alfred the Great (849-899) was one of only two English monarch to be called “the Great”; William E. Massey (1840-1910) was wounded and captured at the Second Battle of Fort Donelson in 1863; Isaac Franklin Anderson (1842-circa 1863) was killed by a mule while crossing the Tennessee River; Isaac “Eudie” Massey (1881-1919), a railroad conductor, died in the world-wide pandemic in 1919; John William Massey (1875-1946) once ran away to join the circus, but instead became a railroad conductor for 43 years; Smith Massey (1911-1918) died from contact with a doctor who had the whooping cough; Frances Ewell Massey (1904-1974) took a trip back east with her mother, Jessie Smith Massey, in 1918 and wrote about her trip in a detailed, excellently written, 160 page journal; George Whitfield Morgan (1825-1879), a Confederate soldier, was on the losing side of the longest siege in American military history in 1863; Dr. James Erastus Lay (1843-1916) built the finest house in Lavaca County, Texas, in 1882, which is still standing; William Lay (1817-1886) was part of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints’ historic move to Utah in 1848; Abraham Lay (1700-1785) immigrated to America in 1715; Isaac Dancy (1783-1863) was an early settler in Haywood County, Tennessee, and the town of Dancyville was named after him in 1837; Benjamin Towler (1752-1837) was a Revolutionary soldier and saw Cornwallis surrender at Yorktown in 1781; Anna Morgan Bowles (1869-1955) had 15 children; George Walter Hall (1880-1918) died in the Battle of St. Mihiel, France, in 1918; William Phillips (1773-1862) built a red brick home in Kentucky in 1820 that is still standing; Augustus Burnet Smith (1832-1890; a blacksmith and a Civil War soldier) and Mary Evelyn Phillips (1840-1890) sat for portraits in 1890, the year that both of them died; Isabel Quiney (1628-1666) was the great-niece of William Shakespeare; Jane Rogers (1698-1760) was the grandmother of Thomas Jefferson; William Jackson Bowles (1819-1887), a rich planter, moved from Richmond, Virginia, to Arkansas in 1856; Richard Lilburne (1583-1667) was the last man in England to insist that he should be allowed to settle a legal dispute with a trial by combat; John Lilburne (1614-1657) defended the “freeborn rights” of all men; Col. Robert Lilburne (1613-1665) was one of the chief commanders under Oliver Cromwell—he signed the death warrant of King Charles I and after the Restoration died in prison; John Lilburn (1279-1355) built the famous Lilburn Tower when he was Constable of Dunstanburgh Castle; Idonea de Vieuxpont (1255-1333) owned Pendragon Castle; Robert de Vieuxpont (died 1228) founded Brougham Castle and was given Brough Castle and Appleby Castle by King John; William de Ferrers (1168-1247) fought alongside William Marshal at the Second Battle of Lincoln in 1217; William de Ferrers (died 1190) died in the Siege of Acre in the Third Crusade; Robert de Ferrers (died 1162) and his wife, Margaret Peverel (1114-1154), have effigies in Merevale, England, that still exist; William Peverel (1080-1155) was a commander in the Battle of the Standard and was captured in the First Battle of Lincoln; William Peverel (1040-1115) was a great favorite of William the Conqueror and built Peveril Castle; Henry de Ferrers (died 1093/1100) is believed to have fought in the Battle of Hastings and his elder brother, William, fell in the battle; Geoffrey Fitz Peter (1162-1213) was Constable of the Tower of London and given Berkhamsted Castle by King John; Roger Bigod (1144-1221) built Framlingham Castle; Hugh Bigod (1095-1177) was Constable of Norwich Castle; Roger Bigod (died 1107) is believed to have fought in the Battle of Hastings; Redmond Smith (1760-1842) was a Revolutionary War soldier who fought in the Battle of Monmouth in 1778; Thomas Burnett and his brother, John Burnett (1730-1773), were soldiers in the

French and Indian War; Redmond Rudd Smith (1794-1881) moved from Virginia to Arkansas in 1855; Theodore Pryor Smith (1913-1990) joined the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints in the 1950s in Arkansas even though he was active in his own church at the time; Thomas R. Smith (born 1828) went against his father's advice and married a woman who "made his life miserable"; Judy Mallett was Miss Texas in 1973 and played the violin for the halftime show of the Super Bowl in 1974; Elizabeth Judith Smith (1860-1880) died on her wedding day in 1880; William Cullen Smith (1866-1923) was in Galveston, Texas, when the Great Hurricane of 1900 hit, killing over 6,000 people; Jessie Isaac Smith (1876-1923) was noted as an exceptionally sweet and beautiful person; Benjamin or Bond Burnett (1765-1837) became a Shaker with his wife in 1809 and practiced celibacy for the rest of their lives; Jeremiah Burnett II (1740-1816) was a militiaman who fought in the Battle of Guilford Courthouse in 1781; John Tinker (1613-1662) was the business assistant to two governors and the principle founder of Groton, Massachusetts; Alice Homan Smith (1629-1714) had a child out of wedlock and as a result had to pay a five pound fine to a Puritan court in 1663; Amos Tinker (1657-1730) built a home in Old Lyme, Connecticut, about 1700, which is the oldest house in the town that is still standing today; Samuel Tinker (1659-1733) and his wife, Abigail Durant Tinker (1668-1728), have grave-stones that are still standing today; Ralph Tinker (1781-1856) was a medical doctor who moved from Morristown, Vermont, to Kentucky and then to Bowling Green, Missouri, where he became a farmer; Dr. James Tinker (1785-1860) was a medical doctor who built probable the finest home in the town of Morristown, Vermont, about 1828; Richard Cutter (1621-1693) and his wife, Elizabeth Williams Cutter (1620-1662), have excellent grave-stones in the Old Buying Ground next to Harvard University—hers is the second oldest in the cemetery; Eli Whitney (1765-1825) invented the famous cotton gin; William Whitney (1683-1720) built a home in Weston, Massachusetts, about 1707 that was known as the Whitney Tavern and is still standing; Capt. Samuel Whitney (1739-1811) was a famous bear hunter who was once bitten by a bear and carried the wound to his grave; Capt. Nathaniel Whitney (1749-1829) killed perhaps the largest bear ever recorded in Vermont, the meat weighing 466 pounds—he also fought in the Battle of Bennington in 1777; Jonas Whitney (1751-1842) was deacon of the church in Marlboro, Vermont, for 50 years; Eliphalet Whitney (1757-1832) moved from Shrewsbury, Massachusetts, to Marlboro, Vermont, to Morristown, Vermont, where he died; Newel K. Whitney (1795-1850) owned a store in Kirtland, Ohio, which was the headquarters for the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints for a time in the 1830s; Horace Kimball Whitney (1823-1884) and his brother, Orson K. Whitney (1830-1884), were in the first pioneer company that entered Salt Lake Valley on July 24, 1847; Col. Timothy Bigelow (1739-1790) sacrificed everything he had for his country—he commanded a regiment in the Battle of Saratoga in 1777 and in the Siege of Yorktown in 1781.

This abridgment is 354 pages long, and has 838 photographs, drawings, maps, and reproduced documents.

Worthy to Remember

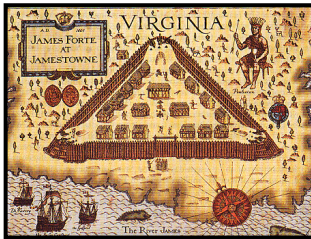
An Abridgment

This special book has been created to help the reader find what the compiler believes are the most interesting facts and stories recorded in Worthy to Remember. Because the book is over 3,800 pages long, only the most intrepid reader will peruse the entire publication. Therefore, this abridgment will help the reader get through the names, dates, and places (which are necessary parts of genealogy) to the highlights of the book.

Saved Jamestown

John Bowles (10th Great-Grandfather; 1592-1664) was on board one of the three ships that brought supplies to Jamestown, Virginia, in May 1610, thus saving the colony from starvation.

“In 1609 the London Company sent out 500 men to the colony of Virginia in the hope that this addition to the resources of the colony would speedily result in the return



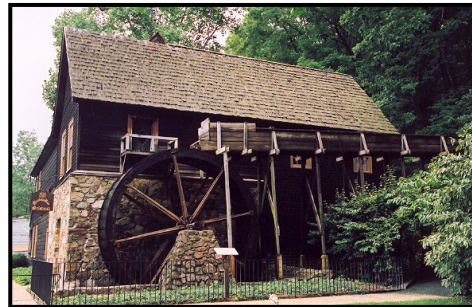
Top right: View of Jamestown from a ferry looking across the James River in 2001. The monument stands at the location of the original settlement. **Above left:** An accurate depiction of Jamestown fort from 1607. The fort was discovered in 1995 and has been partially reconstructed (center). **Above right:** Little remains of Jamestown today.

of some profit to the shareholders. These new arrivals were the sons of the great families of the Kingdom, and adventurers, who sought in the new land a new field for daring enterprise.”

“Though all probably possessed courage and talent in abundance, few had skill and inclination for the various kinds of wearing labor so necessary in the primitive country. The ruin that followed the colony forms a horrible chapter in the history of Virginia. Famine and murder stalked unchecked in Jamestown. The misgovernment of the Colony collapsed and anarchy succeeded. Hundreds perished and the survivors subsisted on roots and berries. A survivor of this dreadful time says, ‘So great was the famine that a savage that we slew and buried, was taken up and eaten and so did divers one another boiled and stewed

Worthy to Remember an Abridgment

with roots and herbs. One amongst the rest did kill his wife, powder her and had eaten part of her before being executed. Now whether she was better boiled or roasted I know not,



Top right: Above: Jamestown Church in 1994. The building was reconstructed over the first foundations, but the tower is original. Many prominent, early settlers of Jamestown are buried in and around the outside of the church. Above and middle: Ruins of the Bowles gristmill on Horsepen Creek in Oilville, Goochland County, Virginia. The mill was built in the 1790s and resembled Meadow Run Gristmill in Charlottesville, Virginia (right), which was built in 1797. Lower right: Land owned by James Cocke (4th Great-Grandfather; 1752-1812) and John Bowles (3rd Great-Grandfather; 1780-1826) where the mill was located; 2014. “Oilville was once an important stage stop on Three Chopt Road, known then as Horsepen Mills.” A Sassafras oil factory was located here in the 1900s. (Wikipedia)

but of such a dish as a powdered wife I never heard.”

“Sir Thomas Gates and Sir George Sommers arrived with 150 men and were so overcome with the state of woe prevailing that it was determined to abandon the colony. They were a few hours’ sail from Jamestown when they received dispatch from Lord Delaware that he was coming to Jamestown with provisions to last a year. This changed the aspect of

affairs, and the vessels of the colonist turned toward Jamestown with joy. Three days later Lord Delaware arrived opposite Jamestown with three ships, on board was a boy, John Bowles (10th Great-Grandfather). These men arrived in May 1610.”

“John Bowles returned to England in the ship *George* in 1612 and came again with Sir Francis Wyatt who arrived in 1621 with 1,200 planters. It is not known when he finally settled, where or by what means he secured his livelihood during the first period of the colony, but he received an allotment from the Virginia Company of three acres of land on the East shore of Warwick Cove plantation. He must have prospered for he removed to Elizabeth City County before 1641.”

In 1884 William Jackson Bowles (2nd Great-Grandfather; 1819-1887) told his daughter-in-law, Anna Morgan Bowles, that the Bowles were descendants of Edward III, King of England and Wales. (The Bowles Family, pages 1-5; Worthy to Remember, pages 181-185.)



Above: Another view of the waterwheel of the Bowles gristmill, built in the 1790s. I (Richard Martin) took this photograph in the winter of 2014.

Built Gristmill

James Cocke (4th Great-Grandfather; 1752-1812) built a gristmill on Horsepen Creek, which was on his property in Oilville, Goochland County, Virginia in the 1790s. After he died in 1812, his son-in-law, John Bowles, bought the mill and his plantation for \$4,654. The mill, which resembled Meadow Run Gristmill in Charlottesville, Virginia, was operational until the 1940s

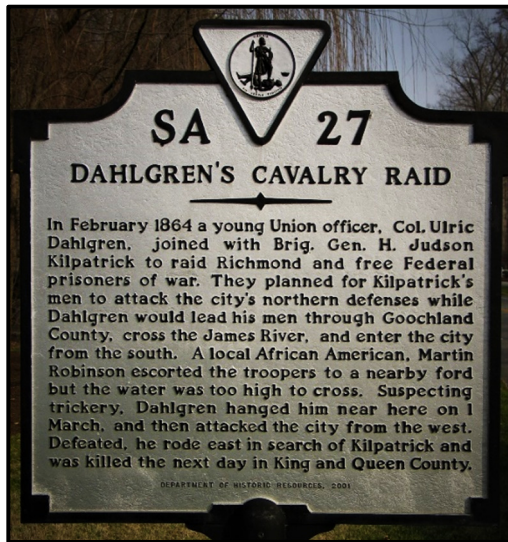
John Bowles (3rd Great-Grandfather; 1780-1826) was a wheelwright by trade and a farmer. In 1810 he moved from Hanover County to Goochland County, Virginia. He married Martha “Patsy” A. Cocke (3rd Great-Grandmother; 1786-1853) and they had twelve children, including William Jackson Bowles (2nd Great-Grandfather; 1819-1887), who moved to Reedville, Desha County, Arkansas, in 1857. (The Bowles Family, pages 9-11, 14-15; Worthy to Remember, pages 189-191, 194-195.)

Single-handedly Captured Fourteen Union Soldiers

“**Martha Bowles** (2nd Great-Grandaunt; 1822-1844) married Joseph Reuben Pleasants, on

Worthy to Remember an Abridgment

March 2, 1843, in Goochland County, Virginia, and died October 1, 1844. Her son, James Pleasants, was three days old when she died and he was raised by his grandmother, Martha



Above: Virginia historical marker noting the raid made by Col. Ulric Dahlgren in 1864. Right: Monument to James Pleasants (1844-1872; son of Martha Bowles, 2nd Great-Grandaunt), located on Bowles' land in Goochland County, Virginia. The inscription reads: "To commemorate / the heroism of / James Pleasants / 1844-1872 / Member of Goochland Troop / March 1, 1864 / Alone killed one Federal / Captured 13, and 16 horses." He was awarded the Confederate Medal of Honor by the Sons of Confederate Veterans in 2004.



Bowles, until he was six years old, and upon her death he was taken into the family of his uncle, James Henry Bowles (2nd Great-Grand-uncle). "Upon the outbreak of the Civil War,

at 16 or 17 years of age, James Pleasants entered the Goochland Troop, and while at home upon a furlough he performed the astounding feat of capturing, single-handedly, fourteen armed Union soldiers. This exploit, celebrated at the time, is spread upon the court records of Goochland County."

When Ulric Dahlgren (Colonel in Union Army) made his raid on Richmond in 1864, "James Pleasants had come home to get a fresh horse and was asleep in the upper room of his uncle's house. When he awoke, his aunt informed him of the raid and that his two horses had been taken. Telling he was going to get his horses, he put on a uniform, which he had on a previous occasion taken from a union soldier. Taking a short carbine he started down the road in the same direction as the union troops; groups of which were occasionally passing by the house. He hid in a place by the roadside, sheltered by hanging branches. A union cavalryman leading two horses came along and hastily complied with the demand for surrender as James pointed the carbine at him. Disarming his prisoner, he mounted a horse and ordering his prisoner to ride to one side and a little in front of him, they proceeded towards his home. Entering a large wood, they met a group of union soldiers. When close

upon them, he suddenly demanded them to surrender, which they did immediately. He thereupon ordered them to drop their arms in the road and ride beside the first prisoner. Keeping them covered, they proceeded until they met another group of soldiers, who were astonished at being called upon to surrender by troops wearing union uniforms. They dropped their arms in the road. One prisoner suddenly galloped away and warned two soldiers who were watering horses at the well in front of the Bowles' home. Upon the demand to surrender, these two opened fire, but after James shot and killed one the other surrendered. The shooting attracted the attention of his uncle, James Bowles, and Dr. Quintus Snead, who galloped up and aided James in taking the fourteen prisoners, horses and arms to the Confederate Government" (*The Virginia Branch of the Bowles Family*, pages 29-30, by Thomas Farquhar, published 1907). (The Bowles Family, pages 17-19; Worthy to Remember, pages 197-199)

Another account reads: Private James Pleasants (son of Martha Bowles, 2nd Great-Grandaunt) served in Company F, 4th Virginia Cavalry, C.S.A. "At home on furlough, 19 year-old Private Pleasants awakened to learn that Union raiders had taken his 2 cavalry mounts in the early morning hours. Arming himself with his carbine and donning a captured Union sack coat for protection from the winter cold, he set out on foot intending to recover his horses and, if possible, to take the war to his foe. Sighting numerous small groups of Federal cavalry during a 3-mile trek, it became apparent that a sizable Union force was in the area."

"Though alone and without hope of support, he remained steadfast in his quest. Using the wood line as cover, Private Pleasants twice captured lone raiders as they rode near him. Now mounted, he pressed on toward the main body. Unfazed at suddenly meeting a small party of raiders, he swiftly presented his carbine and forced their surrender without resistance."

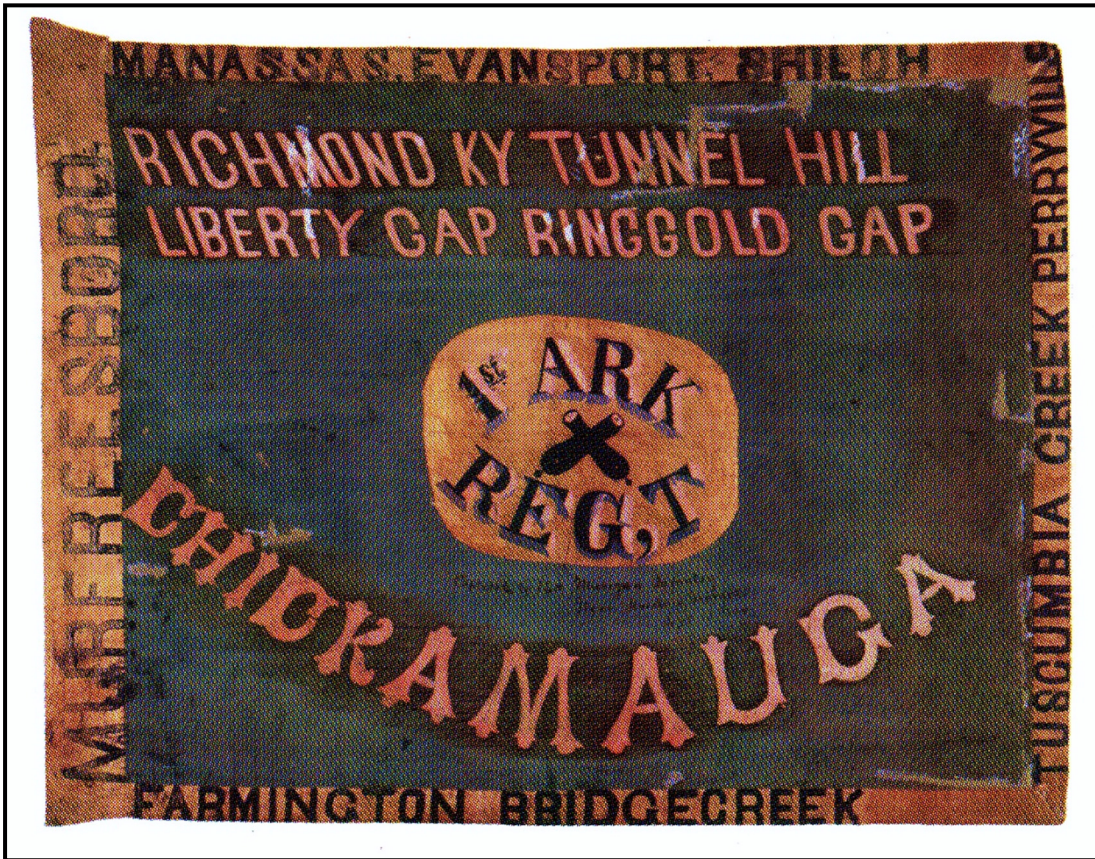
"Returning to the road with his prisoners, Private Pleasants deliberately allowed an unsuspecting group of Union riders to converge. Audaciously presenting his carbine with a demand for surrender, he captured them all. With 12 prisoners now in his custody and other groups of raiders still in the vicinity, Private Pleasants deemed it prudent to return home, by now nearly 5 miles away."

"When 150 yards from his house, he spied 2 Federals there at a well. Though burdened by his prisoners, Private Pleasants boldly continued toward them. Arriving, he presented his carbine and demanded their surrender. The raiders instead responded by drawing revolvers and firing at him."

"In the brief but furious fusillade that followed, Private Pleasants displayed uncommon coolness by shooting one and forcing the other to surrender, all the while maintaining control of his prisoners. With assistance from his uncle and a neighbor, Private Pleasants then began a 20-mile trip, much of it still teeming with Union cavalry, to the jail of a neighboring county. That night he deposited his prisoners and a wagon load of their equipment with authorities."

"Young, determined and intrepid Private Pleasants, displaying astounding daring and

and personal valor, captured 13 Union soldiers, killed another and took 16 horses that morning. For extraordinary heroism at great personal peril, Private James Pleasants is



Above: Regimental Flag of the 1st Arkansas Infantry Regiment, which William Andrew Bowles (Great-Granduncle), John Jackson Bowles (Great-Granduncle), and Ralph P. Phillips (2nd Great-Granduncle) served in during the Civil War. (Photograph courtesy of Old State House Museum.) Some of the battles that the 1st fought in are shown on the flag, but the regiment was also at Corinth, Perryville, Missionary Ridge, Resaca, Kennesaw Mountain, Jonesboro, Franklin, and the final major battle of the war, Bentonville.

hereby awarded the Confederate Medal of Honor.” (Confederate Medal of Honor, Internet—note the Southern Army didn’t give Medal of Honors—this site lists men that have been posthumously given the honor by the Sons of Confederate Veterans—as of 2004 only 46 men had received this award.)

First Arkansas Infantry Regiment

William Andrew Bowles (Great-Granduncle) served in 1st Arkansas Infantry Regiment for the entire war from the Battle of Manassas until the surrender at Greensboro, North Carolina, on April 26, 1865. His brother, **John Jackson Bowles** (Great-Granduncle), also served in the 1st until he was wounded at Atlanta on July 22, 1864. Once he recovered he served as an officer in the 4th Virginia Cavalry. William and John served in Company I, called the “Monticello Guards,” perhaps the finest company in the regiment. “This was an unusually well-educated company of men. Its ranks included lawyers, physicians, clerks, merchants, and skilled artisans of all trades. Unlike most Arkansas companies, farmers

were a distinct minority.” Many of these men could have easily secured officer or staff positions but instead chose to serve in the ranks as privates. “Very few desertions occurred in the Monticello Guards and they fought in some of the bloodiest battles of the war, sustaining appalling casualties, yet remained true to the colors to the end. This appears to have been a highly motivated group of men.” **Ralph P. Phillips** (2nd Great-Granduncle) also served in the 1st. (The Bowles Family, pages 26, 33-34; Worthy to Remember, pages 204, 213-214.)

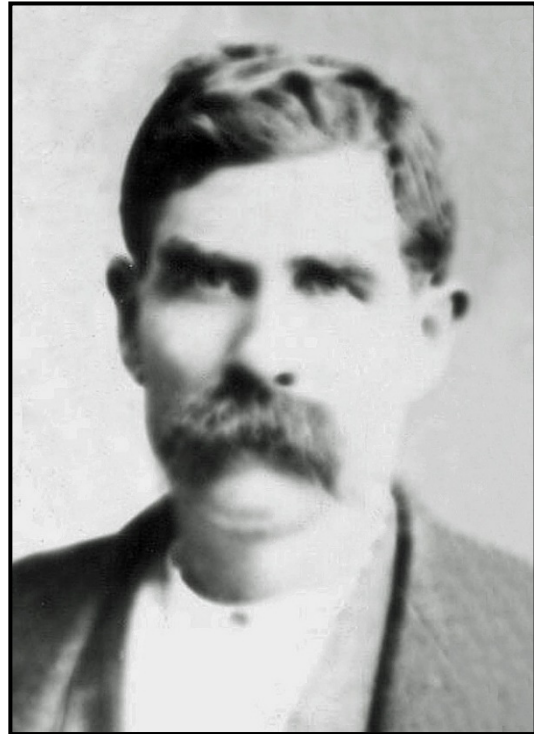
Uncle and Nephew Killed Each Other in a Duel

As noted above, **William Andrew Bowles**, (Great-Granduncle; 1843-1883) served in Company I of the 1st Arkansas Infantry with his brother, John Jackson Bowles, (and possibly his father, William Jackson Bowles). William married Sarah Thompson in 1873 and they had four children, including Walter Edgar Bowles (1877-1899). When William died in 1883, his brother, John, was the administrator of his estate, and when his wife, Sarah, died three years later, John became the guardian for W. Edgar Bowles. So John Jackson Bowles raised Ed-



gar Bowles with his large family from the time he was nine years old until he married.

John Jackson Bowles (Great-Granduncle; 1841-1899) came to Arkansas in 1858 with his parents, brothers and sisters. A handsome man, John served his country as a Confederate soldier during the Civil War, in Company I, 1st Arkansas Infantry (Colquitt's). His company fought in the battles of First Manassas, Shiloh, Murfreesboro, Chickamauga and the Battle of Atlanta. At Chickamauga, fifty-four percent of the regiment's 430 men were lost in the battle. John was wounded at the Battle of Atlanta. While recovering from his wound, relatives in Virginia came to visit him. They asked him why he was serving as a private and not as an officer. After he recovered, he transferred to the 4th Virginia Cavalry, where he was made an officer. He was noted as a brave and active leader in battle. While serving in the army, he once swam the Mississippi River to get a tow sack of roasting ears to bring back to the soldiers. After the war John apparently stayed in Virginia, where he met and married Mrs. Ella Adella Nuckols Puryear, a widow with one son, William Franklin Puryear, in 1865. After their marriage they returned to live in Arkansas and had nine children.



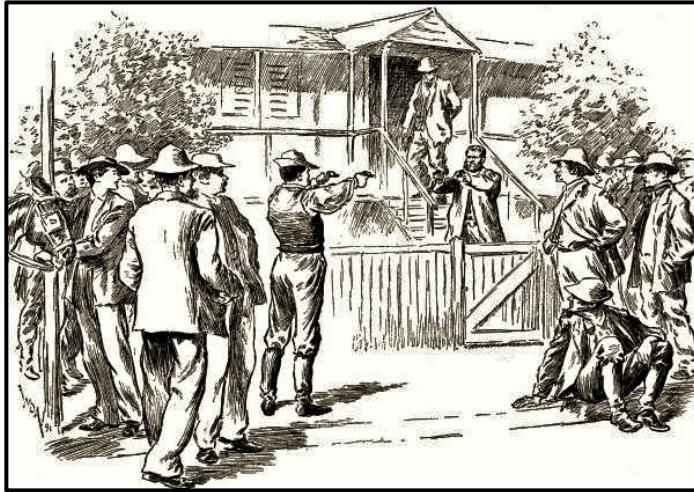
Above: **John J. Bowles** (Great-Granduncle; 1841-1899) in 1897. John lived in Reedville, Arkansas, most of his life. Left: John's gravestone in Tyro, Arkansas.

John was the key player in two tragic incidents. In 1892 John shot two men over a disagreement concerning payment for their work. The *Pine Bluff Graphic*, page 5, column 3, printed an account of the incident on July 29, 1892.

“From *Arkansas City Journal*:
MR. J. J. BOWLES, AT REEDVILLE, ARKANSAS KILLS TWO MEN IN SELF-DEFENSE.”

“Thursday morning about 10 o’clock—two men made threats, Wilcox and Ace. Reedville is 30 miles southwest of Pine Bluff. One had a Winchester rifle, the other a revolver. They had been making stoves for Mr. Bowles and the difficulty was over the settlement for their work. Both had families but were newcomers

to the community. Mr. Bowles is well known and has many army friends in this city. He is a quiet, inoffensive and peaceably inclined citizen, but as brave as a lion when thoroughly aroused.”



Above: A depiction of two men fighting with guns. John J. Bowles (Great-Granduncle; 1841-1899) and his nephew, Edgar Bowles (1877-1899; son of William Andrew Bowles, Great-Granduncle—that he raised from the time he was nine years old), shot and killed each other in a disagreement over a \$10 shed in 1899.

In 1899, because of an argument over the ownership of a shed, John shot his nephew, Edgar Bowles, the son of his brother, William Andrew Bowles (Great-Granduncle). Earlier the same year, Edgar Bowles had married Lizzie Fisher and “he and she and her folks felt that Edgar should handle his affairs as he was now of age and was married.” When Edgar was hit by the ball from his uncle’s gun, he fell and as he was falling Edgar’s rifle went off and hit John in the watch pocket of his pants—striking a nickel. The shot went upward into the groin and John died two hours later. This duel took place in front of John’s store at Reedville, Arkansas, and was witnessed by several Negro men. The full account was printed in the *Arkansas Gazette*, Friday October 6, 1899.

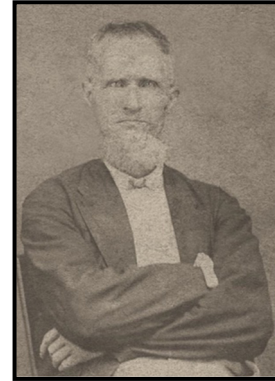
“JOHN J. BOWLES AND EDGAR BOWLES SHOOT EACH OTHER TO DEATH—UNCLE AGAINST NEPHEW”

“Fatal Duel Cause by a Dispute at Reedville—Known in Little Rock as Dumas, October 5th—News reached town about 10 a.m. today that J. J. Bowles, a well-known planter in this section had shot and killed his nephew, W. E. Bowles, also engaged in planting at Reedville, three miles north on the Iron Mountain railroad and that J. J. Bowles had received such injuries that his life was despaired of.”

“Your correspondent at once set out for the scene of the killing and reached the spot just as

the bodies of both men were being removed into the shed of the old Benedict sawmill, J. J. Bowles having meanwhile succumbed to his injuries.”

“An inquest was at once held by T. L. Pettius, a justice of the peace at the place and the facts were elicited as follows: After breakfast this morning, J. J. Bowles came upon the scene with ‘hands’ preparing to tear down and remove the Benedict mill shed which stands at the side of the railroad right of way, about 200 yards above the stove house. Just then W. E. Bowles came up to the shed and to where J. J. was standing with a Winchester rifle over his shoulder. There were witnesses to the occurrence and they corroborate one another that J. J. Bowles addressed his nephew saying in substance, ‘What did you come with your gun for?’ The reply was, ‘To stop you from moving this shed. I will kill any man who does move it.’ J. J. then asked if he meant what was said and upon being answered in the affirmative—he fired a shot from a 38 caliber Smith & Wesson pistol.”



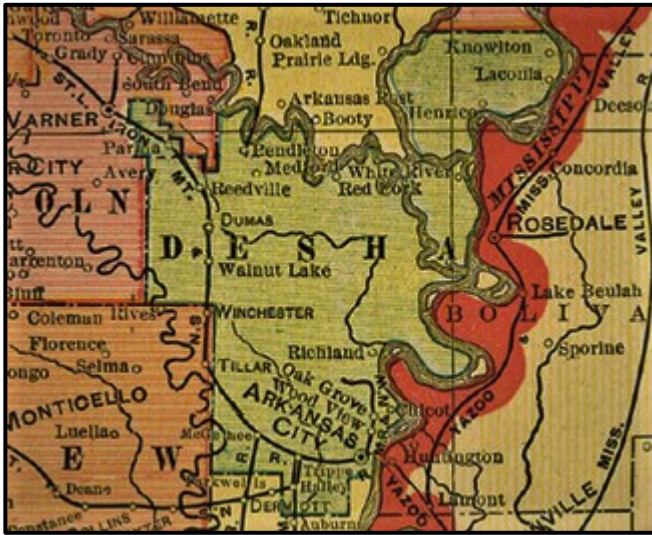
Above: Location of the home of William Jackson Bowles (2nd Great-Grandfather, 1819-1887; top right; photograph from Cerelle Douglas) in Reedville, Arkansas, which is located four miles north of Dumas off Highway 65. He was a well-to-do planter and owned thousands of acres of land. The duel took place near the spot where I stood to take the top photograph—railroad tracks are the foreground. **Middle:** Gravestone of Ann M. Rogers Bowles (2nd Great-Grandmother; 1814-1882). **Right:** Monument of William Edgar Bowles (1877-1899; son of William “Billie” Andrew Bowles, Great-Granduncle), who shot his uncle.



“Whether or not this was the shot that killed Edgar Bowles will never be known for there were five shots fired in all—four pistol and one rifle.”

“After the first shot, Bowles, Jr. stepped back to level his Winchester at his uncle’s breast.

At the same time the elder man pushed down the rifle barrel and presumably received the ball in the region of the groin. The combatants then clinched and struggled. J. J. Bowles at intervals was firing the pistol. As they got away from under the shed out upon the ground,



Above: Old Colorized map of Desha County, Arkansas, showing the location of Reedville, four miles north of Dumas, the largest city in the county. William Jackson Bowles (2nd Great-Grandfather; 1819-1887) moved with his family from Richmond, Virginia, to Reedville in 1857/1858. He was already well-to-do when he moved to Arkansas and he continued to prosper after the Civil War. He was able to leave a large inheritance to each of his children.

merchant at Reedville and ‘Uncle John’ as he was familiarly known, was a public character on the Iron Mountain Road from Little Rock south. He leaves a widow and several children, all grown, to mourn his untimely taking off.”

“W. E. Bowles was a promising young man, who had been married but a short while. He lived at Tyro in Lincoln County until about a year ago when he succeeded his uncle in the mercantile business at Reedville and came there to manage his farm property, which he had inherited. The entire community is shocked by this fearful catastrophe and feels the deepest sympathy for those left behind.”

Another account of the same incident was printed in the *Pine Bluff Graphic* on October 5, 1899.

“A fearful tragedy occurred at Reedville, Lincoln County, thirty-six miles from Pine Bluff on the Missouri Pacific railway. This morning John J. Bowles attempted to move a shed valued at \$10 from the premises of his nephew, W. Edgar Bowles, formerly John J.’s ward. Edgar had previously warned his uncle not to move the shed. This morning the old man with a gang of men went to the shed. Edgar remonstrated and was shot by the old man who carried a revolver. Edgar drew his revolver and shot John J. As the old man fell to his knees, Edgar fired again, both balls entering John J.’s groin. The old man grabbed frantically for

they fell—the older man on top. Just at this time the witnesses say, they separated and W. E. Bowles walked in the direction of the railroad track and fell dead. While J. J. Bowles never rose again from where he fell, but lived for several minutes before final dissolution, though he never spoke again.”

“These briefly told are the circumstances of one of the most sad and painful events that has transpired within the history of Desha County. The coroner’s jury found by their verdict that each had met death at the hands of the other. W. E. Bowles was shot twice, one right over the heart the other shot taking effect in the left thigh.”

“Both parties were prominent and well known. J. J. Bowles had until a year ago been both a planter and

a Winchester left on the ground by Edgar and as the latter turned to walk away secured a bead on him. His strength failed him as he pulled at the trigger, and he fell over dead without firing the third time.”

“Edgar suffering from the wound inflicted by the first shot walked twenty-eight steps and fell dead. The Bowles family was noted for its fearlessness and reckless daring. John J. Bowles already had killed two men. He was one of the best-known planters in Arkansas. His family resides in Little Rock.” (The first account appears to be the more accurate.)

“KNOWN IN LITTLE ROCK—John J. Bowles was not unknown in Little Rock; in fact he had been a familiar figure here for several years past. He came to the city frequently and being a man of easy manners and convivial habits formed a numerous circle of acquaintances. He was one of the most companionable of men, yet among his many acquaintances in this city, not one could be found to whom he had ever talked freely concerning his career, hence knowledge of his past is confirmed among them only to such bits of gossip as came to them casually. It was generally conceded that he was not a safe man to run against if one desired to avoid trouble. As the saying goes he had the reputation of fighting at the drop of the hat and it was probably this name that kept him from trouble in Little Rock, for everyone seemed to recognize that he was a man to be feared. Therefore, men did not cross his path. In the haunts of green haze devotees within a stone’s throw of Markham and Main, Bowles was best known. His associates do not speak of him as an obstreperous man even when drinking. At times he seemed bountifully supplied with a ‘roll,’ but he encountered the usual ups and downs and was not always ‘flush.’ His acquaintances say he had many good qualities. He was extremely generous. His wife and daughters have resided in this city several years.” (Bowles Family, pages 26-34; Worthy to Remember, pages 206-214.)

It is interesting to note how a tragic event that took place over 120 years ago can affect the future right up to the present. It is said that John’s brother, Walter Ivanhoe Bowles (Great-Grandfather; 1853-1937), moved from Tyro, Arkansas, to Hermitage, Arkansas, because of this event. At this time, Walter had \$100,000 dollars (equivalent to \$3,221,000 dollars in 2020 money). Walter started a St. Louis style store that eventually failed because he trusted people and gave out credit too freely. After this, Walter’s family was so desperate that my grandfather, Thomas Holland Bowles (1902-1993), had to quit school early and go to work. This limited his future job opportunities and led him to move to Little Rock a few years later where he met and married my grandmother.

Moved to Australia

John Preston Bowles (Great-Uncle; 1905-1974) was a purser on the Mariposa Shipping Line, which sailed between San Francisco and Sydney prior to the Second World War. While traveling to the United States on this line John met eighteen-year-old, Bette Hazel Matthews. He was thirty-one when they married in San Francisco (1936), and honeymooned in Monterey. She was the daughter of a wealthy farmer and horse owner.

“When the United States entered World War II, John Preston enlisted in the United States

Worthy to Remember an Abridgment

Army in Sydney, Australia, and served as a captain in the Western Pacific Region. He



served from June 21, 1943, to January 4, 1946, earning three campaign ribbons for New Guinea, Leyte and Luzon. After the War he settled in Sydney.”

Top left: Preston Bowles (age 9; right) with his brother, Tom Bowles (age 12), in 1914. Above: Two photographs of Preston as a young man. Top right and left: Preston with his wife, Bette Hazel Matthews, and their three children: David, Anna, and Sarah Bowles (baby). Preston met his wife on a ship going from San Francisco to Australia. They wed in 1936, and he lived in Australia for the rest of his life.

“John Preston and Bette owned and operated a number of businesses during the years. They

lived in the Sydney suburbs and operated businesses in and around Sydney, St. Ives, Dover Heights and Double Bay. Bette's father, Arthur James Matthews, died in 1952. He was well-known in the horse racing fraternity as a racehorse breeder, owner and bookmaker. Around the Peak Hill District, NSW, he was a well-known farmer. Bette's mother died many years earlier in 1936."

"In the early to mid-1960s, Preston bought land southwest of Sydney in a town called Bowral. They built, established and operated a motel called the *Oxley View*. It was named after the hill it faced called, *Mount Oxley*. The hill was named after John Oxley an early explorer of that area. It was here that Bette died in 1967. She was



Above: Nancy Bowles in her teen years. Right: Newspaper photograph from the *Arkansas Democrat* article, which announced Nancy's retirement in 1983. She was secretary for eight different mayors/city managers of Little Rock, Arkansas, for almost 30 years.



cremated and her ashes were scattered over the hill, as she had requested" (letter from Mr. Albert Daly, son-in-law of Preston Bowles, to Richard Martin, dated May 24, 1994).

John Preston Bowles and Bette Hazel Matthews (1918-1967) were the parents of three children, all born in Sydney, Australia: David Whitfield Morgan Bowles (born 1940), Anna Florence Bowles (1947-1987), and Sarah Jane Evelyn Bowles (born 1951). Anna died of skin cancer when she was only thirty-nine years old.

In 1971 Preston sold his hotel. While looking for a place to settle he lived with his daughter, Anna, and her husband, Albert Daly, in Cootamundra, Australia, and for periods of time toured around northern New South Wales resorts and the Queensland Gold Coast. It was during this time that he found a home unit in Tweed Heads (beautiful coastal location) and settled there in early 1973.

Preston came home to Arkansas in 1974. He visited his brother, Tom, in Little Rock and his brother, "Jay," in Monroe, Louisiana. His nieces, Patricia Bowles Crocker (my mother) and Mildred Bowles Brooks, accompanied him, visiting family sites and relatives. They

had a good time. Preston seemed to know that he was going to die soon and wanted to see his relatives and the places where he grew up one more time before he passed on. Preston



Top left: Nancy with her sisters; Pat Bowles (center) and Mildred Bowles (left).

returned to Australia, where he died a few months later. His ashes were buried in Coolangatta Gold Coast Cemetery, located in Tweed Heads, New South Wales, Australia. (The Bowles Family, pages 55-60; Worthy to Remember, pages 235-240.)

Assistant to Eight Mayors

Nancy Bowles (Aunt; 1930-2016) was secretary/assistant for eight Little Rock, Arkansas, mayors (later called city managers): Woodrow W. Mann, Dean I. Dauley, Ancil M. Douthit, Clifford O'Key, Jack Meriwether, Carleton McMullin, Mahlon Martin, and Susan Fleming. Nancy liked her job but had to quit when she was fifty-three to stay home and take care of her husband, Elton, when he got sick. She retired on July 31, 1983.

After his wife died, Jack Berryweather, who was a city manager, wanted to marry Nancy. Nancy told him, "I love you as a friend, but I don't want you!"

Nancy said, "I could write a book about my experiences, but it would take too long. I will say that it was interesting and at times enjoyable and at times stressful." When the national media began to report on President Bill Clinton's alleged infidelities, Nancy said, "That's no big deal. We all knew about that already." (Autobiography of Nancy Bowles, pages 5-6, 23-24.)

Oldest Home that has Always Been in One Family in America

Thomas Buckingham (9th Great-Grandfather; 1606-1657) was the founder of the Buckingham family in America. He was a Puritan of Hertfordshire, England, who sailed from England in 1636 on the *Hector*, arriving in Boston, June 26, 1637. Thereafter he sailed to New Haven, Connecticut, in March 1638. While in New Haven, he built a house on his lot at the corner of College and George Streets. The first worship service in New Haven was held on his lot in 1638.

Thomas and his wife, **Hannah** (9th Great-Grandmother; 1610-1646), removed to Milford, Connecticut, in 1639, where he became one of the town's founders and one of its leaders.

Milford was purchased from the Indians for “six coats, ten blankets, and one kettle, besides hoes, knives, hatchets and glasses.” The Indians were numerous and semi-hostile, so a “palisade” was built, and a “watch” established. The town was laid out with “house lots,” inside the palisade and “out lots on ye Indian side.”

Thomas built a house between 1639 and 1641 on a lot adjoining the east palisade with “Governors Avenue” on one side. The original house of 1639/1641 is still standing (2021) and owned by a direct de-



Above: Home of Thomas Buckingham (9th Great-Grandfather), built 1639-1641, in Milford, Connecticut, in 1995. This is one of the oldest houses in America and the oldest one that has been continuously owned by a descendant of the original owner. A Buckingham descendant has owned the home for twelve generations. It has never been sold.

scendant of Thomas Buckingham.

Today (1999), Tim and Elsie-Marie Clark own the Thomas Buckingham house, located at 61 North Street, Milford, Connecticut, 06460. Tim is the son of Merritt Clark, and has lived in the home all of his life. Tim is a tenth-generation direct descendant of Thomas Buckingham, and continues the special tradition of the home having never been bought or sold outside of the family. I met Tim and Elsie-Marie in April 1999. They were so friendly and hospitable that my brother and I were reluctant to leave. The local newspaper printed an interesting article about the house and the family in 1998.

The Ghost of Milford Past Lurks in North Street Home. “Halloween brings out the ghosts and goblins in most communities. But the ghost in the home of Timothy and Elsie-Marie Clark, doesn’t trick-or-treat.”

“The Clarks who reside at 61 North Street in the 345-year-old Thomas Buckingham House (give or take a year) maintain that they do indeed have a specter in their midst.”

“‘You don’t get the feeling it’s an evil ghost,’ Elsie-Marie said. ‘You get the feeling he’s part of this family, a part of this house. My theory is that it’s Thomas Buckingham, himself.’”

“‘It’s a comfortable ghost,’ Timothy, who teaches art and the academically talented in the Norwalk School System, agreed. ‘It’s not scary at all. He doesn’t rattle around in chains,’ he said with a grin.”



Above: Tim and Elsie-Marie Clark, owners of the Buckingham home in April 1999. Tim is a direct descendant of Thomas Buckingham (9th Great-Grandfather), who built the house in 1639/1641. They were interviewed about the ghost in their home in October 1998, which is presented here. Below: Creek and stone bridge across from their home in Milford, Connecticut, in 1995.

open and I hear the door close, and nobody is here.”

“The dog will go searching through the house and she will look too, just to assure herself that nothing human is lurking in the shadows. ‘It gives you a strange feeling,’ she said.”

‘Other times things will get moved,’ she continued. One time, she found clothes she’d left folded on the bureau scattered on the floor. ‘I’ve never had anything disappear,’ Elsie-Marie said. ‘Things will move and be ajar but never vanish entirely.’”

“The house, which is furnished with colonial antiques, will also creak, candles will go out, and the fire in the fireplace will occasionally swish.”

But according to Elsie-Marie, he does do a few other things. Doors in the house will mysteriously open and close by themselves, she said. One unlikely cupboard in the dining room manages to do that more than others. ‘At times I’d put scotch tape across it and it’d still do it,’ Elsie-Marie said.”

“Sometimes the back door to the house will open on its own as well, jingling the bells that are hanging on it. That’s when Major, the family’s Golden Retriever, will go nuts.”

“‘That happens a lot,’ Elsie-Marie said. ‘I hear the door



“‘When I first moved here, I had the distinct feeling of another presence being here,’ Isie-Marie recalled. ‘It was something I could feel.’ The New York City native moved into the large, two-story house when she married her husband in 1968. Timothy, on the other hand, has lived there all of his life; his father, Merritt Clark, first occupied the place in 1929.”

“‘The house has always remained in the family,’ Elsie-Marie explained. ‘It’s never been bought or sold, just handed down from family to family.’”

“‘Elsie-Marie said she believes the ghost is the original owner of the house returning periodically. ‘He’s not always here,’ Elsie-Marie said. ‘But, he does come back to visit.’”

“‘Up until 1970, Elsie-Marie said the ghost pretty much stayed put. A three-day Thanksgiving Day party, however, may have sent



Left: Gravestone of Hannah Buckingham (9th Great-Grandmother), who died in Milford, Connecticut, in 1646. The inscription reads: “H. B.” To appreciate how old this grave marker is, you only have to recall that the oldest identifiable gravestone in Connecticut is only two years older. Below: Another photograph of Thomas Buckingham’s home in Milford taken by James Robertson on February 4, 2014. Copyright, James Robertson.



him packing. ‘He really didn’t like all that, and he left,’ Elsie-Marie said.”

“‘According to Timothy, the roving spirit is just something the family has always been aware of. ‘I was always aware there was something that lived here,’ he said. ‘It was common knowledge.’”

“‘It’s common knowledge for the Clarks’ children. Charles, 17, a senior

at Joseph A. Foran High School, and Linsey-Ann, 13, an eighth grader at Central Grammar School—too.”

“‘There weren’t many slumber parties when the kids were young,’ Elsie Marie recalled. ‘Their friends used to be scared. Now they don’t mind.’”

“‘Actually, nobody minds. ‘He’s a friendly guy,’ Elsie-Marie said with a grin. It’s a comforting influence to have him around’” (*Milford Citizen*, “The Ghost of Milford Past Lurks in North Street Home,” by Sharon Almquist, 1998).

Hannah Buckingham’s 1646 gravestone still exists and is one of the oldest in America. The

oldest gravestone in Connecticut is only two years older. The inscription on the gravestone reads, "H. B." (Buckingham Family, pages 1-11; Worthy to Remember, pages 433-443.)

A Founder of Yale College

Thomas Buckingham (8th Great-Grandfather; 1646-1709) was a prominent Puritan



minister and a founder of Yale College. He studied for the ministry with the Rev. John Whiting of Hartford and preached for a short time in Wethersfield before becoming minister of the Saybrook meetinghouse in 1665. He married **Hester Hosmer** (8th Great-Grandmother; 1646-1702) in 1666, at Hartford, Connecticut. (Hester Hosmer Buckingham made a quilt about 1660 that still exists and is one of the oldest in America.)



Above: Fort at Old Saybrook, Connecticut. At this site, Rev. Thomas Buckingham (8th Great-Grandfather; 1646-1709) rallied the Saybrook colonists and inspired them to make a stout defense against Sir Edmund Andross (left) and those who were planning to take away the Connecticut Charter in 1675. Thomas was twenty-nine years old at the time.

At the beginning of King Phillips War in July 1675, Thomas Buckingham rallied the few citizens that had not left Saybrook to fight the Indians, to resist Edmund Andross, who had sailed from New York to gain control of Connecticut for the Duke of York. They manned the fort and raised the English flag. Andross, unwilling to proceed in a violent manner, could not fire on the King's colors and backed down. "It was a crisis successfully averted. Reverend Buckingham proved himself to be just the man for the situation. Had Andross been allowed to establish a hold upon the mouth of the Connecticut River, the history of the Colony itself might have been considerably and sadly altered."

Most historians believe that the quick and decisive action of Thomas Buckingham kept Andross from achieving his goal of acquiring the colony for the Duke of York (*Glimpses of Saybrook in Colonial Days*, pages 53-55, by Harriet Chapman Chesebrough).

Thomas Buckingham and Chief Obed of Saybrook. An Indian chief named Obed resided in "an aboriginal structure" on a hillside along the southern coast of Saybrook. "Contiguous to Obed's wigwam was an altar where he occasionally burned incense, birch and tobacco. He was the last of his people."

“Obed held tenaciously to the customs and race prejudices of his people. One only child, a daughter named the *Red Bird* was left of his royal blood. The rest had perished in their



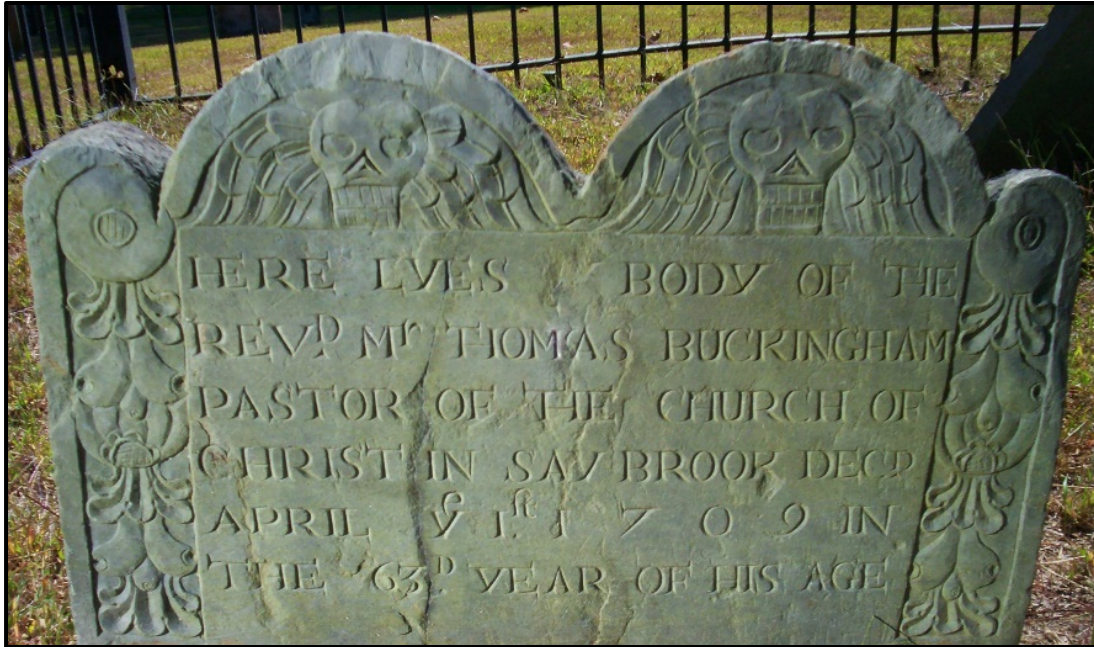
Right: Richard Martin (me) on the grounds of Yale University in New Haven, Connecticut (216-foot Harkness Tower in background) in March 2013. Thomas Buckingham (8th Great-Grandfather), was one of the school’s founders in 1701. The college was moved from Old Saybrook to New Haven in 1718. The third oldest institution of higher learning in the United States, it is consistently ranked among the top universities in the world.



flight toward the Mohawks after the Pequot war. When Buckingham became the minister at Saybrook, he had land in the immediate neighborhood of the wigwam. Frequent trips to this possession brought the kind-hearted pastor and Redman often together; in interviews which drew out the Indians’ better nature, and resulted in Christianizing the daughter, who was baptized under the name of ‘Adina.’ To Mrs. Buckingham the *Red Bird* was indebted for those civilizing influences, which led her to wash her face, comb her hair, and adopt a style of dress, comfortable and decent; and also attend upon the sanctuary services. As one born to the inheritance of a Princess, she was allowed to sit upon a stool in the minister’s pew, going reverently through the Sabbath devotions. With the catechism, obedience to her father was inculcated and with his superstitious requirements, such as walking seven times around the patch of maize to prevent worms from eating the crop, she was bidden cheerfully to comply.”

“Life passed harmoniously at the wigwam when Obed was sober. Both were adept in osierwork. The father’s baskets sold readily to farmers; while the *Red Bird’s* nimble fingers fashioned daintier ones, for Ladies. In any difficulty about the exchange of his baskets or game, the decision was left to Parson Buckingham, and his word was law. If Obed shot a deer, Parson Buckingham had the first choice of a joint and no offer of money or barter allowed another to choose till afterward. When under the influence of ‘firewater,’ an evil spirit possessed his nature. He reproached his child for abandoning the religion of her ancestors, dwelling bitterly on Christians, who had taken from the Redman all the forests

that were his, and slain him because he fought for his wives and children; sweeping the Indians off their hunting ground with fire-water and disease, faster than with guns.”

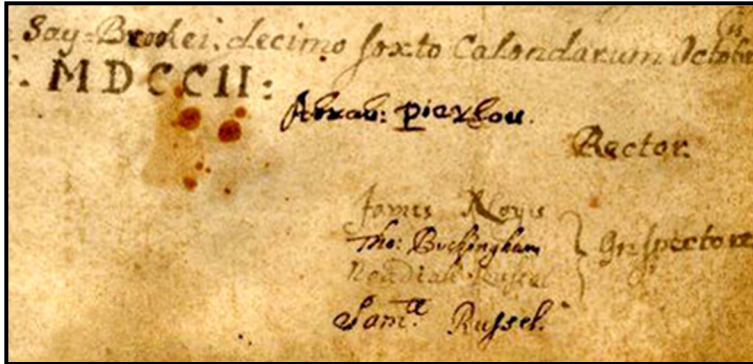


Top: Gravestone of Rev. Thomas Buckingham (8th Great-Grandfather; 1646-1709) in Cypress Cemetery, Old Saybrook, Connecticut. He was one of the foremost leaders in Connecticut during his age. **Above:** The Buckingham plot (the fenced area) in Cypress Cemetery, where Thomas and Hester Hosmer Buckingham (8th Great-Grandparents) are buried beside their children and relatives; 1999. **Right:** Sarah Martin (born 1985, age nine) on her first trip to New England in 1994 at the front gate to Cypress Cemetery. She is a 9th Great-Granddaughter of Thomas Buckingham.

“In one thing *Red Bird* and her father were ever at variance. A pale faced lover had won

her affections and in so doing the anger of Obed. His entire Pequot hatred centered itself on this attachment, with vows of vengeance on their union.”

“Coming home under the influence of firewater one night, he would have killed his daughter whom he found at work upon a pair of moccasins, but for the overpowering effect of the liquor which he drank from a gourdshell, without adding water to the burning fluid. Fleeing toward the River, which *Red Bird* knew her lover was to cross, the Legend is that both were carried by a strong tide into Long Island Sound and never heard of afterward.”



Above: First diploma awarded by Yale College, granted to Nathaniel Chauncey in 1702. Note that the third signature is that of Thomas Buckingham (8th Great-Grandfather; 1646-1709). As noted earlier, Yale’s first commencement was held in Thomas Buckingham’s home. Below: Home of Joseph Buckingham (6th Great-Granduncle; born 1707), son of Thomas Buckingham, in Old Saybrook. Bottom; Home of a Great-Grandson of Thomas Buckingham in Connecticut, Lower right: Quilt made by Hester Hosmer Buckingham (8th Great-Grandmother; 1646-1702) about 1660. It is one of the oldest in America.

“When Obed awoke to consciousness he found himself alone; and the *Red Bird* never came. Hours he would sit listening to the moaning



waves and the sea birds cry, which were interpreted as the wails of lost spirits. Parson Buckingham’s visits and instructions were frequent, pointing this benighted soul to an offering for sin better than the blood of beasts. His faithful labors seemed rewarded in Obed’s last wish, for the protection of the white man’s God, in Happy Hunting

warded in Obed’s last wish, for the protection of the white man’s God, in Happy Hunting

Grounds hereafter. The next day his lifeless body was found stretched upon his altar. Such is the story transmitted with little variation for more than 200 years” (*Glimpses of Saybrook in Colonial Days*, pages 92-94, by Harriet Chapman Chesebrough, 1819-1897).

“Attawanhook, son of Uncas, the Mohegan Sachem, had such confidence and respect for



Above: Signature of Thomas Buckingham (8th Great-Grandfather). After Hester died in 1702, he married as his second wife, Mary Willet, daughter of Capt. Thomas Willet, first mayor of New York City.

Rev. Buckingham that he named him as an executor of his Will and as one of the guardians of his children. He directed that his children should be educated in an English school and that, in the manner of the English, he be buried in Saybrook. These testimonies from the Indian community speak eloquently of Mr. Buckingham’s compassion, understanding and wisdom” (*The First*

Church of Christ in Saybrook, 1646-1996, page 11).

After Hester died in 1702, Thomas Buckingham married Mary Willet, widow of Rev. Samuel Hooker of Farmington, Connecticut, in 1703. She was the daughter of Captain Thomas Willet (merchant and sea captain), the first mayor of New York in 1665.

Thomas Buckingham’s parish included the present towns of Essex, Chester, Westbrook, and a part of Lyme. Thomas’ most famous work was the part he played in founding Yale University.

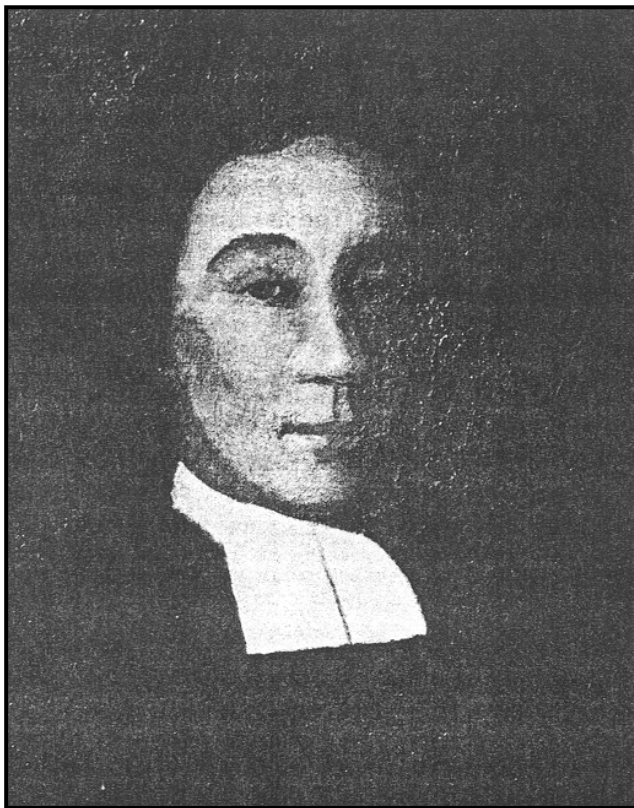
Yale. “Thomas Buckingham, minister of the Saybrook church, and Abraham Pierson of Killingworth were next oldest of these New London ministers, both being fifty-five in 1701, Moses Noyes being the eldest. Even though Thomas Buckingham took such an important role in the establishment of the College, we know but few of the details of his life. He was the only New London County minister, not a college graduate. He was of a pioneer Milford family and received what education he had at the Hopkins Grammar School in New Haven. As events will show, he was not only an able man, but also a stout believer in his own views. At this time, he was looked upon as one of the most capable men in the southern part of the Colony.”

“There was a rivalry between Hartford and New Haven to have the college located in their town. A compromise was reached to begin the college in Saybrook.”

“Four months after the organization at Saybrook, Rector Pierson took in his first scholar, the nineteen-year-old Jacob Hemingway of East Haven. Rector Pierson carried on this young man’s extensive classical study and instructed him in divinity. The young Hemingway finally prepared for the pulpit, Mr. Pierson rode over to Saybrook on September 16, 1702, and there in Rev. Thomas Buckingham’s house on Saybrook village Green, held the first Commencement in Yale history. The Buckingham, so tradition has it, prepared a

great dinner for this occasion. The Trustees and scholars and young ministers who were there for their M. A. degrees, sat down to a table laden with oysters and other shellfish, venison, succotash, and boiled Indian pudding.”

“Five young men, two of them Congregational ministers of the Colony and one a preacher, were given their second degrees of Master of Arts at this first Saybrook Commencement. The Trustees or friends of the new School introduced all of them, so that it might give a good account of itself to the Connecticut people at its beginning. Rev. Stephen Buckingham (1675-1746; 7th Great-Granduncle), son of the Saybrook Trustee, and at this time minister of the small settlement at Norwalk, was the best known of these young candidates. He was a Harvard graduate and later to become a Trustee, himself.”



Above: Rev. Stephen Buckingham (7th Great-Granduncle, 1674-1746; son of Thomas Buckingham). This rare portrait was made about 1700 and is part of the collection of the First Congregational Church in Norwalk, Connecticut. Stephen was part of the first commencement of Yale College and was later a trustee of Yale.

Thomas died at Saybrook on April 1, 1709, at the age of 62. In his will dated in March 1709, he left a sizable estate for the time, including two “Negro boys, Peter and Philip,” which he called his slave servants. Some people are surprised to discover that he owned slaves, especially being a reverend and living in New England, but many people viewed the world differently then and slavery for some could be justified by the Bible (Buckingham Family, pages 11-23; Worthy to Remember, pages 443-455).

Oldest Gravestone in Plymouth, Massachusetts

Hannah Griswold (7th Great-Grandaunt; 1658-1687) married William Clark as his second wife, at Saybrook, Connecticut, in 1677. William’s first family was residing in the garrison house in Plymouth, Massachusetts, by the Eel River, when Indians surprised them on Sunday, March 12, 1676, while he was at church. His wife, Sarah Wolcott, several of his children, and some other persons, eleven in all, were killed. His son, Thomas, left for dead, afterwards recovered and had a silver plate put over his exposed brain by the celebrated surgeon, Dr. John Clark, of Boston. He was known afterwards as “silver headed Tom.” In July 1676 two hundred Indians surrendered themselves to the Plymouth Governor and

were pardoned, with the exception of those who were concerned in the slaughter at Clark's. These were put to death by decapitation.



This page: Gravestone of Hannah Griswold Clark (7th Great-Grandaunt; 1658-1687) in 2013. Her monument is the oldest for a woman and the fifth oldest of all the ancient monuments in Plymouth, Massachusetts.

William Clark was active and enterprising, engaging in the making of tar and fishing. In 1697 he received a grant of land from the town of Plymouth. He was deputy and selectman for many years.

Hannah Griswold died at Plymouth in 1687, after having three children. Her gravestone still stands in good condition on top of Burial Hill in Plymouth, Massachusetts. In this historically famous town, Hannah's tombstone is the oldest of any woman and the fifth oldest overall. The inscription on her gravestone reads: "HERE LyES ye BODY OF / Mrs. HANNAH CLARK WIFE / TO Mr. WILLIAM CLARK /

DEC'D FEBRY ye 20th / 1687. IN THE 29th / YEAR OF HER AGE."

In May 1997 I visited the grave of Hannah Griswold Clark in Plymouth. Her grave was easy to find. She was buried next to her father-in-law, Thomas Clark, who was the son of John Clark, the pilot of the *Mayflower*, and possibly also a mate. He has a prominent,

commemorative monument next to his grave. I took photographs of her monument in a cold steady rain. My brother Ron and I visited her grave again on a beautiful day in 1999. The view of Plymouth harbor from the top of hill is impressive. My last visit was in 2013. (Buckingham Family, pages 46-48; Worthy to Remember, pages 478-480.)

Oldest Monument in Connecticut

Edward Griswold (9th Great-Grandfather; 1607-1690) was baptized on July 26, 1607, in St. Peter’s Church at Wootton Wawen, England, and lived in Kenilworth, England, where



Above: My wife, Lady Karen Martin, at Kenilworth Castle in 1991. Edward Griswold (9th Great-Grandfather; 1607-1690) emigrated from Kenilworth, England, to Connecticut in 1639. Left: Tomb of Rev. Ephraim Huit in Palisado Cemetery in Windsor, Hartford, Connecticut. This is the oldest readable monument in Connecticut. The inscription reads: “HEERE LYETH EPHRAIM HUIT SOMETIMES TEACHER / TO YE CHVRCH OF WINDSOR WHO DYED / SEPTEMBER 4, 1644.” Rev. Huit was Edward Griswold’s (9th Great-Grandfather) pastor in England, and they journeyed to New England together in 1639. (*Wikipedia.*)



he married **Margaret** (9th Great-Grandmother; 1620-1670). Edward and Margaret were members of the company of Rev. Ephraim Huit, pastor of Wroxall and Kenilworth Parish, Warwickshire, England, who was censured for his non-conformity and silenced by the Bishop of Worcester. This caused him to organize a company and move to New England in 1639. Huit was a writer of note upon religious subjects and a powerful preacher of the Puritan faith. (Rev. Huit’s grave has the oldest readable monument in Connecticut; see above.)

“Edward Griswold was an attorney for Mr. St. Nicholas, of Warwickshire, who had a house built for him at Windsor, Connecticut. He was of the ‘sturdy intellectual type and speedily became prominent in the affairs of the new community, exceedingly active, and was frequently mentioned in colonial records.’ He served as deputy to the General Court from 1658 until 1660 and 1662 until 1663. In 1659 he helped build the Old Fort at Springfield,

Massachusetts, for Mr. Pyncheon and served as Justice of the Peace. He was granted land at Poquonock, Connecticut, but he did not remove there until after the Indians' title had



Above: Gravestone of Margaret Griswold (9th Great-Grandmother; 1620-1670) in Clinton, Connecticut, in 2006. It is one of the oldest monuments in New England.

been fully extinguished in 1642. His home was the outpost of the colony, standing near the highway at the top of the hill, where he owned 29.5 acres bounded mostly south and west by Stony Brook and east by the Tunxis River.”

“In 1663 with his son, John, Edward moved to Killingworth, now called Clinton, Connecticut. Main Street is the identical ground where the first settlers took their home lots. Edward was one of the first settlers and may have suggested the name Kenilworth for the name of the new town, although corrupted later to Killingworth.”

“He was the most prominent man in the new settlement and must be given full credit for first organizing this community. He was its first deputy to the General Court. Edward was largely instrumental in organizing the first church and was its first deacon. He frequently served on important civil matters where his services, counsel and guidance were much sought and served on a committee to establish a Latin school at New London. He owned 300 acres in and around Clinton” (*The Griswold Family, England—America*, pages 16-18, compiled by Glenn Griswold, published 1935). (*Buckingham Family*, pages 52-57; *Worthy to Remember*, pages 484-488, 499-502.)

Carved Ancient Tomb—Founder of Lyme, Connecticut

“**Mathew Griswold** (9th Great-Granduncle; circa 1620-1698) was a typical Englishman—hardy, venturesome, energetic, and with all of an Englishman’s hunger for land, the number of a man’s acres, in England, being supposed to be the measure of his respectability. He was a lawyer, but a stone cutter by trade, and there is registered at Saybrook a receipt for seven pounds sterling, dated April 2, 1649, and signed by Matthew Griswold, in payment for the tombstone of Lady Fenwick” He furnished the stones for many of the graves of the early settlers, but he has no existing gravestone over his burial. (*Record of New London County*, pages 91 and 691-692).

“He had many views far in advance of his time and concerning the rights of women was one of them. An example of this is when he allowed his wife to keep an inheritance, she

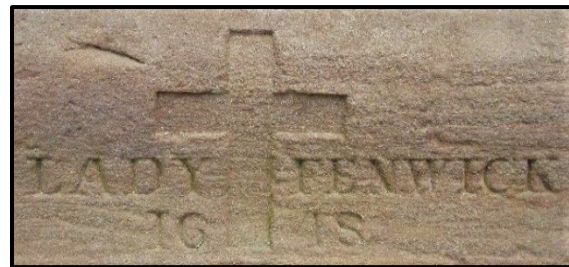
had received from her brother to be used as she saw fit. The account reads, ‘This parcel of meadow is allowed by her husband Matthew Griswold to be recorded and made over to Anna, his wife, to remain to her and to her children and her dispose forever’”

Matthew died in 1698 and was buried in Old Saybrook, Connecticut. His wife, Anna Wolcott, died five years earlier in 1693. They had five children.

Matthew Griswold, III (1688-1712; grandson of Matthew Griswold, 9th Great-Granduncle), was born in Lyme, Connecticut.

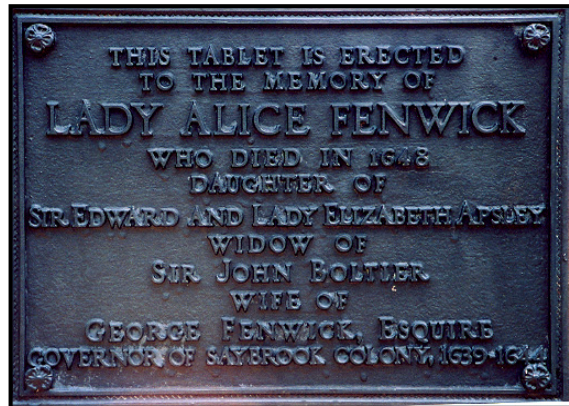


Right: Matthew Griswold (9th Great-Granduncle) cut the stone for Lady Fenwick’s tomb in 1648 at Old Saybrook, Connecticut; 2013. He was paid seven pounds sterling for his work. Until 1870 the tomb stood 120 feet above the shore, but the coming of a railroad forced its removal to its present location. When moved “her skeleton was found intact and some of her once auburn red hair.” He was the first settler of Lyme, Connecticut, in 1649, which lies east across the River from Old Saybrook. The town’s name became a household word because of Lyme disease, which was first diagnosed here in the 1980s.



The story of his short life reads more like something made up for a novel or a movie than of real life.

“Matthew, III ran away to sea. In Jamaica he was pressed into the naval service; then served on a privateer, where he narrowly escaped death when the man who stood next to him was cut to pieces by chain shot. He was then captured by the French and put ashore in the Bay of Honduras where he was taken by a party of Spanish Indians, carried 600 miles with his hands tied behind his back and cast into prison. After six months he was released and sent to Spain on a galleon. On the voyage he nearly died from tropical fever. From Cadiz he went to a port in Portugal where he found a ship for Newfoundland. Eventually he reached home and died age 24, a victim of his terrible experiences.” (*The Griswold Family, England—America*, page 120-124, compiled by Glenn Griswold, published 1935.) (Buckingham Family, pages 57-59, 79; Worthy to Remember, pages 489-491.)



A Founder of Hartford, Connecticut

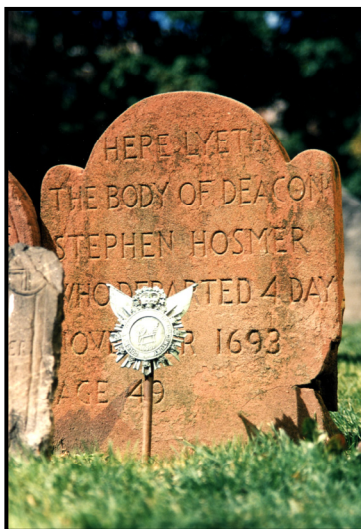
Thomas Hosmer (9th Great-Grandfather; 1602/1603-1687) left the parish of Hawkhurst in Kent County, England, for Massachusetts when he was twenty-nine years old. On

February 2, 1633, the colonial authorities granted Thomas three acres in Newtown, Mas-



Above: In 1994 I took my first major genealogical trip through New England. The Ancient Burying Ground in Hartford, Connecticut, where Frances Hosmer (9th Great-Grandmother; left) and her son, Stephen Hosmer (8th Great-Granduncle; below) are buried, was one of my favorite cemeteries. There are over 6,000 burials here, but only 415 gravestones exist today, showing how rare these ancient memorials are. (John Tinker, 9th Great-Grandfather, is also buried here.)

sachusetts. On May 6, 1635, he was admitted to being a freeman and became a member of the town's small influential elite. In November 1635 he was chosen as one of the town's nine selectmen.



Thomas was a prominent member of Rev. Thomas Hooker's congregation that wanted to settle in Connecticut. Thomas Hosmer was among the main body of the Hooker congregation that set off in June 1636 for the Connecticut River Valley. Numbering one hundred people, they drove their cattle in front of them as they made the entire journey on foot.

The colony established the town of Hartford, Connecticut.

Thomas traveled back to Newtown the following year and continued to have holdings in Newtown until 1642.

“Thomas’ years in Hartford proved to be the most prosperous and satisfying years of his life. In the distribution of land in January 1639, he received 60 acres. His home lot was

located on the edge of South Meadow, not far from the south end of Governor Street. He was a neighbor of Rev. Hooker and became one of the largest landholders along the Connecticut River. Thomas was also an active trader, with his business dealings touching communities as far south as Middletown, Connecticut.”

“As Thomas’ personal fortune increased so did his social and civic responsibilities. In 1643 and 1647, Thomas was elected as townsman for Hartford and he also served as a deputy to the General Court of Connecticut. Sixteen times between 1641 and 1662, he served on juries. In addition to these offices, he was chosen Hartford constable in 1639 and 1663. While serving as constable in 1639, there was a land dispute. Land distributed to an English settler was also claimed by Dutch settlers. Pursuing their rights to the property, the Dutch, proceeded to plough the land. This brought a quick response from the English settlers in Hartford.”

“Thereupon the English Constable, who was most likely Thomas Hosmer, living near, came with a dozen men armed with sticks. With blows and shouts, they frightened the horses, so they ran away. An hour later the Dutch resumed their ploughing without hindrance. That night however, the English sowed corn in the field. Written protests were exchanged and finally a truce was arranged.” (*The Colonial History of Hartford*, page 108, by Rev. Love).

By the late 1670s, Thomas Hosmer’s land holdings totaled 691 acres. In a “bold move” Thomas sold it all, and in 1679 bought 90 acres in the undeveloped “West Division” of Hartford. This west division parcel consisted of a narrow strip of land running from the Commons, Quaker Lane, to Farmington Bounds, Mountain Road. As time went on, Thomas added to his West Hartford holdings until they totaled over 300 acres.

“Stephen Hosmer (8th Great-Granduncle), Thomas’ son, is credited with being West Hartford’s first white settler. This is true, although much of the town’s early development came as a direct result of Thomas’ own entrepreneurial initiatives. It was Thomas Hosmer, for example, who built the dam across Trout Brook at the point where it meets North Main



Above: The names of Thomas Hosmer (9th Great-Grandfather) and his son, Stephen Hosmer (8th Great-Granduncle), are on Hartford’s Founders Monument. Thomas Selden (1617-1655; son of John Selden, 10th Great-Granduncle) is also on the Founder’s Monument.

Street. It was also Thomas Hosmer who erected the first house, where his son lived, and constructed the first sawmill. Built for his son, Stephen, the sawmill was the town's first business. Both Stephen's house and the sawmill were built on what is now North Main Street, slightly north of Wyndwood Road."



Thomas and his wife, **Frances Bushnell** (9th Great-Grandmother; 1602-1675), had four children. (Buckingham Family, pages 27-34; Worthy to Remember, pages 459-466.)

Henry Wadsworth Longfellow

Henry Wadsworth Longfellow (1807-1882; son of Zilpha Wadsworth, daughter of Elizabeth Bartlett, daughter of Samuel Bartlett, son of Lydia Griswold,

Above: Above: Gravestone of Thomas Hosmer (9th Great-Grandfather; 1602-1687) in Northampton, Massachusetts. Thomas lived most of his adult life in Hartford, Connecticut, before moving to Northampton. Right: Gravestone of Frances Hosmer (9th Great-Grandmother; 1602-1675) in downtown Hartford, Connecticut, in 1994. Frances' maiden name was probably Bushnell, but her ancestry is unknown.



7th Great-Grandaunt) was born February 27, 1807, in Portland, Cumberland County, Maine, and died March 24, 1882, in Cambridge, Massachusetts. He married Mary Storer Potter (1812-1835); married second, Frances Elizabeth Appleton (1819-1861); married third, Elizabeth Lohnes (died 1919). He and Frances Appleton had six children.

“**Poet.** Among his most famous works are ‘Evangeline’ (1847), ‘The Song of Hiawatha’ (1855) and ‘The Courtship of Miles Standish’ (1858). Henry Wadsworth Longfellow was born on February 27, 1807, in Portland, Maine. His father, Stephen Longfellow, was a Portland lawyer and congressman. His mother Zilpah Wadsworth Longfellow was descended from Priscilla and John Alden of Mayflower fame. Young Henry was a bookish lad, who wrote his first poem, ‘The Battle of Lovell’s Pond,’ and had it published in the *Portland Gazette* when he was thirteen. Longfellow’s translation of Horace earned him a

scholarship at Bowdoin College in Brunswick, Maine. When Henry was a senior at Bowdoin he became intrigued by the chair of modern languages just established by the college. Longfellow asked if he could become the first professor, with the understanding that he should be given a period of time after graduation in which to travel and study in Europe before assuming the professorship. His request was granted. So after graduating, he traveled in Italy, France and Spain from 1826 to 1829, and returned home to work as a professor of modern languages and librarian at Bowdoin. As was common practice at the time, he had to prepare his own texts for his classes, because no suitable books were otherwise available. He translated a French grammar for his students to use, and edited a collection of French



Above: Henry Wadsworth Longfellow (1807-1882; son of Zilpha Wadsworth, daughter of Elizabeth Bartlett, daughter of Samuel Bartlett, son of Lydia Griswold, 7th Great-Grandaunt) with his wife, Frances Appleton (1819-1861), and sons: Charles and Ernest. Henry and Frances had a happy marriage. Right: Henry Longfellow's home in Cambridge, Massachusetts, where he lived for 52 years. This house was also George Washington's headquarters during the Siege of Boston in 1775-1776.



proverbs and a small Spanish reader. In 1831 he married Mary Storer Potter, a former school-

mate. In 1834, he was appointed to a professorship at Harvard in Cambridge, Massachusetts, and once more set out for Europe by way of preparation, traveling with his young wife. The journey ended in tragedy. In Rotterdam, his wife died in 1835, and Longfellow came alone to Cambridge and the new professorship. In 1836 Longfellow began teaching at Harvard, taking lodgings at the historic Craigie House overlooking the Charles River, where General Washington had lived during the Revolutionary War, not knowing at the time that it would be his home for the rest of his life. In time, it passed into the possession of Nathan Appleton. In 1843 Longfellow married Frances Appleton, daughter

of Nathan Appleton, and Craigie House was given to the couple as a wedding gift. The marriage was a happy one, and the Longfellow house became a popular place for young-



In this sacred soil are buried the founders of the City of Norwich, their wives, and other family members: Rev. James Fitch, Major John Mason, Thomas Adgate, Robert Allyn, William Backus, John Baldwin, John Birchard, Thomas Bliss, Morgan Bowers, Richard Edgerton; Francis Griswold, Christopher Huntington, Simon Huntington, William Hyde, Samuel Hyde, Thomas Leffingwell, John Olmstead, John Pease, John Post, Thomas Post, John Reynolds, Jonathan Royce, Nehemiah Smith, Thomas Tracy, Thomas Bingham, John Bradford, John Gager, Thomas Howard, Thomas Waterman, John Tracy, John Calkins, Stephen Gifford, Josiah Reed, Richard Wallis, Stephen Backus, Richard Hendys and Robert Wade.

Top: The name of Francis Griswold (8th Great-Grandfather; 1635-1671) is listed on the Founder's Monument (left) in Norwich, Connecticut. Above: A list of those buried in the Founder's Burying Ground, now called Mason Cemetery, which has no gravestones, in Norwich, Connecticut.

ters to visit and play with the five Longfellow children—two boys and the three girls whom the poet describes in ‘The Children's Hour’ as ‘grave Alice and laughing Allegra and Edith with golden hair.’ ‘Evangeline’ was published in 1847 and was widely acclaimed. To devote more time to his writing, he resigned from his professorship in 1854, and the next year published his best-known narrative poem, ‘The Song of Hiawatha,’ which gained immediate success. ‘Hiawatha’ caused such great excitement because for the first time in American literature, Native American themes gained recognition as sources of imagination, power, and originality. The appeal of ‘Hiawatha’ for generations of children and young people gives it an enduring place in world literature. Longfellow’s happy family life came to an end in 1861, when his second wife Frances died tragically from burns received when her dress caught fire from a lighted match. The following years were filled with honors. He received honorary degrees at the great universities of Oxford and Cambridge, was invited to Windsor by Queen Victoria, and called by request upon the Prince of Wales. He was chosen a member of the Russian Academy of Sciences and of the Spanish Academy. The poet’s 70th birthday in 1877 was celebrated nationwide. When it became necessary to remove ‘the spreading chestnut tree’ of Brattle Street, which Longfellow had written about in his ‘The Village Blacksmith,’ the children of Cambridge gave their pennies to build a chair out of wood from the tree and presented it to Longfellow. Longfellow died in Cambridge on March 24, 1882. In London, his marble image is seen in Westminster Abbey, in the Poet’s Corner.” Biography by Edward Parsons. (Buckingham Family, pages 133-135; Worthy to Remember, pages 565-567.)

A Founder of Norwich, Connecticut

Francis Griswold (8th Great-Grandfather; 1635-1671) was born in England and married

Mary (some have thought her maiden name to be Tracy, but this has never been proven; 8th Great-Grandmother) in 1652 and had nine children. He first settled in Windsor and Poquonoc, Connecticut, thence to Saybrook, Connecticut, and later to Norwich, where he made his permanent home. He was one of the first proprietors of Norwich where he was an active citizen. He was deputy for 11 years (1660-1671) and Lieutenant of the trainband. Francis died young at the age of 36. He is listed on the Founder's Monument in Norwich. (Buckingham Family, pages 113-117; Worthy to Remember, pages 545-549.)

Rare Mid-18th Century Portrait

Margaret Huntington (5th Great-Grandaunt) was born April 8, 1730, in Old Saybrook, Connecticut, and died in 1798 in Windham, Guilford County, Vermont. She married Jeremiah Tracy (born April 19, 1719, in Preston, Connecticut; died March 17, 1757; son of Jeremiah Tracy and Mary Whitter) on May 17, 1755, as his third wife in Norwich, Connecticut, and had one son: Solomon



Above: Portrait of Margaret Huntington (5th Great-Grandaunt, born 1730; daughter of Solomon Huntington and Mary Buckingham, 6th Great-Grandparents). This is a rare picture from circa 1750. The miniature of her son, Ebenezer Williams, and his wife on the next page are exceedingly fine.

Tracy (born May 1, 1756, in Windham, Connecticut; died August 17, 1819, in Brandon, Rutland County, Vermont; buried in Congregational Church Cemetery in Brandon, Vermont—has monument; he was a Revolutionary War soldier; married Phebe Trace). After Jeremiah Tracy died on March 17, 1757, Margaret married second Samuel Williams (born June 10, 1711, in Groton, New London, Connecticut; “one of the early settlers of Groton, Connecticut”) on May 28, 1758, in Windham, Windham, Connecticut, and had seven children, among which were Jeremiah Williams (born May 2, 1759, in Groton, Connecticut; died 1780 at sea, Sulawesi Tengah, Indonesia) and Ebenezer Williams (born June 6, 1769, in Groton, Connecticut), who had an outstanding miniature portrait made of he and

his wife, Martha Porter. The images were so well done that they are on display in the Smithsonian Institution in Washington D.C. (Buckingham Family, pages 140-143; Worthy to Remember, pages 572-575).



Above: Outstanding miniature portraits of Ebenezer Williams (1769-1844; son of Margaret Huntington, 5th Great-Grandaunt) and his wife, Martha Porter (1774-1851), which are on display in the Smithsonian Institution, in Washington D.C.

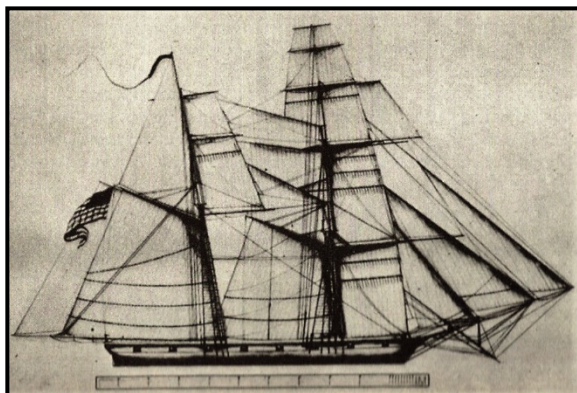
Officer on USS Constitution in War of 1812

Commodore Alexander Scammel Wadsworth (1790-1851; son of Elizabeth Bartlett, daughter of Samuel Bartlett, son of Lydia Griswold, 7th Great-Grandaunt) was born in 1790 in Portland, Cumberland County, Maine, and died April 5, 1851, in Washington District of Columbia. He is buried in the Congressional Cemetery in Washington D.C.—has tall monument.

“Alexander Scammel Wadsworth was born in 1790 at Portland, Maine. He was appointed a Midshipman on April 2, 1804 and was promoted to Lieutenant on April 21, 1810. Lieut. Wadsworth was the First Lieutenant on board the *Constitution* during that famous frigate’s successful engagement with *Guerriere* in the War of 1812. For this action he received a silver medal and was included in the vote of thanks received by the Commanding Officer, Isaac Hull and his officers. Wadsworth later served as First Lieutenant of the corvette *Adams* during that ship’s cruise in 1814 when she captured 10 prizes.”

“Promoted to Master Commandant on April 27, 1816, for his services during the war, Wadsworth commanded the brig *Prometheus* (see drawing of ship on next page) in the

Mediterranean Squadron after the Second Barbary War in 1816 and 1817 and later commanded the sloop *John Adams*. Under Wadsworth *John Adams* conducted cruises in



Right: Portrait of Commodore Alexander Scammel Wadsworth (1790-1851; son of Elizabeth Bartlett, daughter of Samuel Bartlett, son of Lydia Griswold, 7th Great-Grandaunt), who was the 1st Lieutenant on board the *Constitution* during the successful engagement with the *Guerriere* in the War of 1812. **Above:** Drawing of the brig *Prometheus*, which Alexander Wadsworth commanded in 1816. Since his death, three Navy ships have been named USS Wadsworth in his honor.



the West Indies in 1818–1819 and 1821–1822 for the suppression of piracy.”

“Promoted to Captain on March 3, 1825, he commanded the frigate *Constellation* in the Mediterranean Squadron from 1829 to 1832. Wadsworth was Commodore commanding the Pacific Squadron from 1834 to 1836, a member of the Board of Navy Commissioners from 1837 to 1840 and Inspector of Ordnance from 1841 to 1850. Commodore Wadsworth died at Washington, D.C. on April 5, 1851.”

He was the son of Peleg Wadsworth, the uncle of author Henry Wadsworth Longfellow. (*Officers of the Continental and United States Navy and Marine Corps, 1775-1900.*) (Buckingham Family, pages 132-133; Worthy to Remember, pages 564-565.)

Rich Ship Owner and Patriot

General William Hart (1746-1817; husband of Esther Buckingham, daughter of Joseph Buckingham, 6th Great-Granduncle) was born June 24, 1746, in Old Saybrook, Connecticut, and died August 29, 1817; buried in Cypress Cemetery in Old Saybrook—has two monuments. “The son of Rev. William & Mary (Blague) Hart, he married first, Esther Buckingham about 1767, and second, Lucy Buckingham. He and his brother, Joseph of Hartford, were engaged in the West India trade and Old Saybrook served as the fleet’s port of origin. He built the ‘Hart House’ for his family which is now the home of the Old Saybrook Historical Society.” During the Revolutionary War he wrote a letter to George Washington and received a reply that can be seen on the Internet. “Several times he was a candidate for governor of the state of Connecticut.”

Part of the inscription on one of his monuments reads: “In youth active & enterprising early



Above: Home of Major William Hart (1746-1817; husband of Esther Buckingham, daughter of Joseph Buckingham, 6th Great-Granduncle). The house at 350 Main Street, next to First Church of Christ Congregational in Old Saybrook, Connecticut, was built in 1767. He owned a fleet of ships and could see them when at port from the second floor of his home. The house is on the National Register of Historic Places and today serves as home to the Old Saybrook Historical Society. It is open to the public. Photograph courtesy of Old Saybrook Historical Society. Left: Gravestone of Major William Hart in Cypress Cemetery in Old Saybrook, Connecticut. He was later made a General.

entered on mercantile and commercial pursuits and sustained a character of unquestionable integrity and extensive respectability.

By his talents he rose to some of the first civil & military honors of this state.”

The Hart House is located at 350 Main Street in Old Saybrook, Connecticut, and, as mentioned above, is now the home of the Old Saybrook Historical Society. It is listed on the National Register of Historic Places. “Built more than two centuries ago in 1767 for his bride, Esther Buckingham, the General William Hart house is one of the earliest houses in Saybrook, the first settlement on the southern shore of Connecticut.”

An article about the Hart House by the Old Saybrook Historical Society reads: “William Hart was a prosperous merchant engaged in the West Indies trade. The Harts were noted for entertaining frequently and quite lavishly. During the Revolution, he led the First Regiment of Connecticut Light Horse Militia to Danbury to oppose Tryon’s raid. Hart and his brothers armed their merchant ships and served this country in numerous privateering forays against the British. From a second-floor chamber in his house he could have seen the Hart fleet of ships when in port, off the Hart dock at the entrance to the North Cove. The house has two end chimneys and eight corner fireplaces.” (Buckingham Family, pages 138-140; Worthy to Remember, pages 570-572.)

Founder of a Prominent Virginia Family

Lieutenant Colonel Richard Cocke (9th Great-Grandfather; 1597-1665) emigrated from



Above: Holy Trinity Church in Sidbury, Shropshire, England, where Richard Cocke (9th Great-Grandfather; 1597-1665) was baptized on December 13, 1597. Top right: Portrait of Richard Cocke IV (1707-1772; son of Richard “the younger” Cocke, 1657-1720, half 8th Great-Granduncle, son of Lt. Col. Richard Cocke, 9th Great-Grandfather) by John Durand. Right: Broken gravestone of Richard Cocke (8th Great-Granduncle) at Bremono, Virginia. The inscription reads: “Here Lyes Interred the Body / of RICHARD COCKE the / son of RICHARD COCKE of Bremono. / He was Born the 10th of / DECEMBER 1639 and departed this / life the 20th of NOVEMBER / 1706.”



England to Virginia before 1628. He eventually owned 10,916 acres of land spread over three sites named “Bremono” (his home site), “Malvern Hill” and “Curles.” He was a member of the House of Burgesses in 1632 and in sessions from 1644 to 1654. “In addition to his service in the House of Burgesses he was also a Colonel of the local militia and a justice of the court.”

(New information not recorded in *The Cocke Family*, but published in the *Magazine of Virginia Genealogy*, page 45, in 2007, by Steven R. Day, shows evidence that Richard Cocke was baptized on December 13, 1597, in Holy Trinity Church in Sidbury, Shropshire, England, the son of Thomas Cocke, who was the son of William and Elizabeth Cocke. Richard had an older sister Eleanor born in 1691. His family was only one of several families with the name Cocke living about Shropshire at this time. Richard’s early education is not known but he was both literate and educated enough to act as an attorney in court as well as Justice.)

Richard Cocke “established a political and social dynasty that firmly seated itself as among the most prominent in Virginia. Among his more prominent descendants are General Robert E. Lee and U.S. presidents George Washington, Thomas Jefferson, George H. W.

Bush, and George W. Bush.” (Wikipedia) (Cocke Family, pages 1, 5; Worthy to Remember, pages 621, 625.)

Civil War Battle named after His Home

Thomas Cocke (8th Great-Grandfather; 1639-1697) was given the plantation of Malvern



Above: Malvern Hill during the Civil War in June 1862. The Battle of Malvern Hill was fought a mile away and the house was used as a hospital. Soldiers that died in the conflict were buried all around the house. Watercolor by eyewitness Robert Knox Sneden, a Union soldier, in *Images from the Storm*, page 96.

Hill, located in the hills above Brems. In 1663 he began construction of a brick home, which was constructed of the best materials of the day. It stood until it was burnt down in a fire in 1905. Only a couple of walls remained when I first saw the home in 1997.

During the Revolutionary War, Lafayette and his American troops camped near the house and soon marched to Yorktown and victory over Cornwallis. In 1862 a great Civil War battle took place just a mile from the house. The home was used as a hospital after the battle and bodies were buried around the dwelling.

Thomas Cocke served as sheriff of Henrico County, Virginia, and a member of the House of Burgesses.

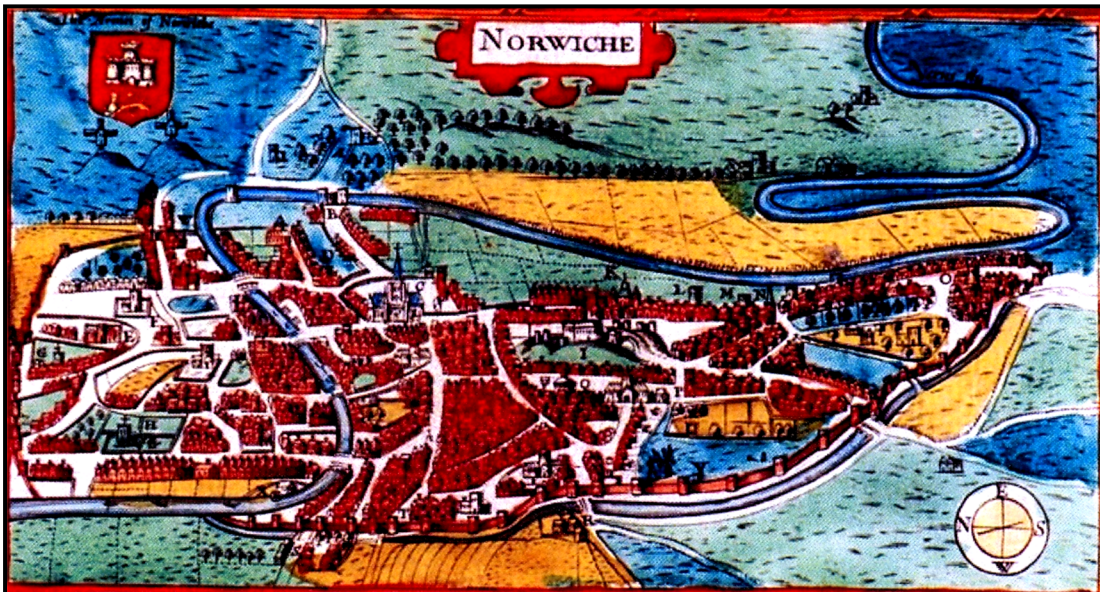
“His will probated on April 1, 1697, in Henrico County, Virginia, is evidence that Thomas Cocke amassed a considerable fortune. In addition to serving as a sheriff, coroner and burgess, colonial records show that he was an enterprising man of wide interest. He owned, with his brother Richard, an ‘ordinary’ and a ferry at Varina (the courthouse). It was still called Cocke’s Ferry in 1810. He had looms for weaving both linen and woolen cloth. In 1695 he received the reward of 800 pounds of tobacco, which the Assembly had offered in 1693 for specimens of linen cloth of first quality of home manufacture. He also had a

flourmill and two tanneries. Toward the purchase of a bell for the Church, he left a legacy of 1,000 pounds of tobacco” (*Cocks and Cousins*, Volume II, page 671).

Thomas also mentioned by name one of his tanners whom he bequeathed to his son James. He owned another mechanic (Jack Long) at the mill, who he left, ‘with all his tools’ to his son, Stephen (probably a cooper). He bequeathed to his daughter, Agnes Harwood, a mulatto girl (whom he enjoined was to be tenderly treated, she having waited on him in his sickness), with a weaver’s loom ‘and all the stages and harness’ thereunto belonging. Among his slaves were some four or five Indian girls. He made several legacies of horses. The will is sealed with red wax, as was the will of his father, Richard Cocke, implying arms” (*Genealogies of Virginia Families*, page 106-107, by James C. Southall). (Cocke Family, pages 7-13; Worthy to Remember, pages 627-633.)

Became a Quaker

John Pleasants (8th Great-Grandfather; 1644/1645-1698) emigrated from Norwich, Nor-



Above: Norwich, Norfolk, England, by John Speed about 1611. The city was once surrounded by a medieval wall (*Wikipedia*). John Pleasants (8th Great-Grandfather; 1644-1698) emigrated from Norwich, England, to Virginia in 1665, where he soon converted to the beliefs as held by the Society of Friends, better known as Quakers. He was one of the largest landowners in Virginia, highly respected and chosen to represent Henrico County.

folk, England, to Virginia, when he was twenty-one years old in 1665. He was sent to America as a factor for a merchant, and after some time, took up his abode at *Curles* in Henrico County, Virginia.

“His education had been in the established church, but he was convinced of the truth as held by Friends and became an honest, humble walker therein, and suffered in support of the Truth he professed. About the year 1670, he was married to **Jane Larcome** (8th Great-Grandmother; born about 1645), the widow of Captain Samuel Tucker, from Bristol,

England. There was at that time no Monthly Meeting of Friends in the neighborhood of *Curles*, and probably not in Virginia. Being unable therefore to lay their intentions before a meeting of that sort, they convened a company of Friends and others in his own storehouse before whom they made public that they intended marriage with each other. Sometime after they went to a public meeting of Friends held in York County, where the marriage was solemnized. By this connection John obtained a valuable helpmeet as respects time and eternity. She was an earnest advocate for the Truth, a practical living example thereof in her own conduct and conversation and was endowed with a gift in the ministry of the gospel of Christ. A testimony concerning him says, ‘They lived together many years in a comfortable and exemplary manner agreeable to the principles of Truth and were diligent in attending meetings as well those at a distance as that at *Curles*, in the settlement whereof they were the principal instruments in the hand of Providence. He was a man so greatly respected amongst his neighbors that without his solicitation he was twice chosen representative for the county.’ The office, however, he never filled as he was conscientiously restrained from taking the customary oaths. After a life of usefulness in the community and of faithful dedication in the church militant, he was called to the recompense of reward about the year 1698. His memorial adds, ‘As he was much beloved, so he was much missed by his neighbors, friends and family.’”

“Of his widow, a memorial says, she ‘was zealous for the cause of Truth, and had a gift in the ministry which was very acceptable to Friends and particularly serviceable at that early time in a wilderness country, the good effect whereof was very visible in the place where she lived for a long time.’ She survived her beloved husband and although advanced in age, was very diligent in the attendance of religious meetings and earnest in fulfilling her social duties. As long as her bodily strength enabled her, she rode on horseback by herself; but becoming feeble, several years before her death, she rode behind one of her servants, ‘and so,’ adds her memorial, ‘continued to visit Friends, and attend meetings, to near the last period of her time.’ She departed this life in a good old age in the year 1708” (*Quaker Biographical Sketches*, 1682-1800, pages 264-265).

Pleasants converted to Quakerism after he came to Virginia. The earliest land patent to John Pleasants, dated October 1, 1679, was for “548 acres lying in Henrico County, north side of James River and Four Mile Creek adjoining land of Capt. Matthews.” In February 1682, a complaint was entered against “John Pleasants and Jane Tucker als Larcome als Pleasants (Quakers). Defend’ts have shewed that the said two persons do unlawfully accompany themselves together as man and wife without legal marriage, and also that they have made a breach of three penal laws of this County, Viz’t...absence from the Church...refusing to have their children baptized...for having and suffering a Conventicle at or near their house...and as being present and members of the said Conventicle.” Judgment in their favor was entered on the first charge of not being legally married, but they were found guilty of the last three charges and fined. An appeal was entered and we learn later that the question was carried to England and brought before the Lords of Trade and Plantations. In the *Calendar of State Papers, America and West Indies*, 1681-1685, page 497, a letter from Lord Culpeper, dated September 20, 1683, states that “Pursuant to instructions for liberty of conscience I stopped execution against a Quaker, John Plaisance, who was indicted for not attending church, pending signification of the King’s pleasure.”

“It is unnecessary to add that persecution of the Quakers in Virginia was at its height about this time. The Quaker marriage ceremony was an especial object of attack, but even the



Left: St. John's Episcopal Church in Richmond, Virginia. James Cocke (6th Great-Grandfather; 1691-1775) was one of the founders of this church in 1741. Above: Patrick Henry who made his famous “Give Me Liberty or Give Me Death” speech in St. John’s.

refused to countenance these attempts to upset its validity.”

“John Pleasants died in 1698. In his lengthy will filed in Henrico County bequests are made to ‘my Brother Samuel Pleasants...Brother Benjamin Pleasants and Brother Thomas Pleasants.’ Further references are made to ‘my Brothers and Sisters in England,’ and a bequest of twenty pounds is given to ‘my Dear and Loving mother—if living’” (*Genealogies of Virginia Families*, Volume 4, page 815, “The English Descent of John Pleasants [1645-1698] of Henrico County, Virginia,” published 1981).

John and Jane were the parents of four children: John Pleasants (1671-1713), Joseph Pleasants, who married Martha Cocke in 1699 in Henrico County, Virginia; **Elizabeth Pleasants** (7th Great-Grandmother; about 1676-1721), who married James Cocke (7th Great-Grandfather; 1666-1721), and Dorothy Pleasants. All four children were born at Curles in Henrico County, Virginia (Cocke Family, pages 18-21, *Worthy to Remember*, pages 638-641).

A Founder of St. John’s Church in Richmond, Virginia

Captain James Cocke (6th Great-Grandfather; born about 1691; died about 1775) was born at *Curles* in Henrico County, Virginia. He was one of the founders of St. John’s Church in Richmond, Virginia. This is the same church where Patrick Henry made his

prejudiced provincial courts re-

famous “Give Me Liberty or Give Me Death” speech. James was a member of the Vestry of Henrico Parish from 1735 to 1750. He was one of the first lot owners in Richmond, which was established in 1737.

In a deed dated October 19, 1751, James conveyed property in Richmond for the County Seat of Henrico. The Henrico County Courthouse was built on this lot. The deed contained a clause providing that the property should revert to his heirs if the courthouse was ever removed. In a 1971 referendum, the voters of Henrico County authorized the removal of the Courthouse to a new site. When county officials became aware of the clause, they left a county office on the site in order to keep possession of the property. The county eventually paid \$300,000 to the descendants of James Cocke, but the majority of his heirs never knew that a settlement had been reached and therefore received none of the money, including me.

James Cocke and his wife, **Sarah Lewis** (6th Great-Grandmother; born 1696), were the parents of six children, including **James Cocke** (5th Great-Grandfather; died 1772). (Cocke Family, pages 22-25, Worthy to Remember, pages 642-645.)

Killed in Indian Massacre of 1644

Doctor John Woodson (9th Great-Grandfather; 1586-1644), son of “Mr. Woodson, Gentleman, of Bristol,” England, was a student at St. John’s College, Oxford, in 1604. He married **Sarah** (9th Great-Grandmother) (one account says that she was a Quaker) in Devonshire, England, and together they immigrated to Jamestown, Virginia, aboard the ship *George*. Dr. John Woodson came in the capacity of surgeon to a company of soldiers who were sent from England for the better protection of the colonists, with Sir George Yeardley, the new Governor, in 1619. In 1623 he was registered as the owner of six Negro slaves, which were evidently part of the first cargo of African slaves brought to this country in 1620. The Dutch skipper had kidnapped about twenty Negroes somewhere off the coast of Africa. These captives were sold as slaves to the colonists.

For a number of years after 1624, John Woodson lived at Flowerdew Hundred on the south side of the James River in what is now Prince George County. His home was approximately thirty miles above Jamestown. Flowerdew Hundred’s seventeenth century spelling was Flowerdieu Hundred. He later moved to Cules on the north side of the James River. On April 18, 1644, Indians attacked the settlements and killed three hundred colonists, including Dr. Woodson, who was returning from a visit to a patient. His wife and a man named Ligon defended his home. “Ligon killed seven Indians with an old-time muzzle-loading gun, eight feet long, now one of the prized relics of the Virginia Historical Society. Sarah Woodson killed two Indians who came down the chimney, one with boiling water and the other with a roasting spit.”

At the first alarm, Sarah had hidden her two boys, John Woodson (1632-1684) and **Robert Woodson** (8th Great-Grandfather; 1634-1707/1711), one under a large washtub, and the other in a hole where they kept potatoes during the winter. In this way she hoped to save them if the Indians succeeded in entering their cabin. From this circumstance, for several

generations, the descendants of John Woodson were called “Tub Woodsons” and those of Robert Woodson designated as “Potato Hole Woodsons.”



Above: Woodcut of the Indian massacre of 1622 as depicted in 1628. Dr. John Woodson was killed while returning from visiting a patient at or near Curles, Virginia, in the Indian attack of 1644 (500 colonists were killed). Christopher Branch (11th Great-Grandfather; 1600-1681), see later, survived the attack.

I visited Flowerdew Hundred with my wife and four children in November 1997. The site is located northeast of Highway 10 on Route 639 (Flowerdew Hundred Road). An archeological dig took place a few years ago and Governor Yearly’s home was Flowerdew Hundred was one of the earliest and most important of the *particular plantations* or *hundreds*. Sir George Yearly had acquired the 1,000-acre tract of land by 1619, and it was represented in the First General Assembly. The Indian massacre in March 1622 devastated most of the colony, but Flowerdew Hundred was well defended and only six people were killed during the uprising. By 1624 there was a population of over sixty people living on a thriving plantation raising livestock and producing corn and a yearly tobacco crop of about 10,000 pounds. In 1624 Yearly sold the plantation to Abraham Piersey, a merchant-planter who, after Yearly, ranked second wealthiest in Virginia. Both men invested heavily in developing the property” (*Flowerdew Hundred, 1619*, a brochure published by the Flowerdew Hundred Foundation).

“Dr. John Woodson (9th Great-Grandfather) is the progenitor of the Woodson family in America. Among his descendants are Dolly Todd Madison, wife of President James

Madison, and the famous outlaw, Jesse Woodson James.” John Woodson was “the fourth son” of his father, “who died in Bristol, England” (Cocke Family, pages 31-33, Worthy to Remember, pages 651-653).

Made Three Trips from England to America between 1620 and 1635

Gabriel Holland (9th Great-Grandfather; born 1600) sailed from England on the ship



Above: Drawing of London, England, about 1612, by John Speed. Between 1620 and 1635, Gabriel Holland (9th Great-Grandfather) made three trips between London and Jamestown (below), two on behalf of the colony.

Supply on September 18, 1620, arriving at Berkeley, Virginia, February 8, 1621. The certificate for sailing on the ship *Supply* still exists as recorded in *Records of London Company*, page 405.

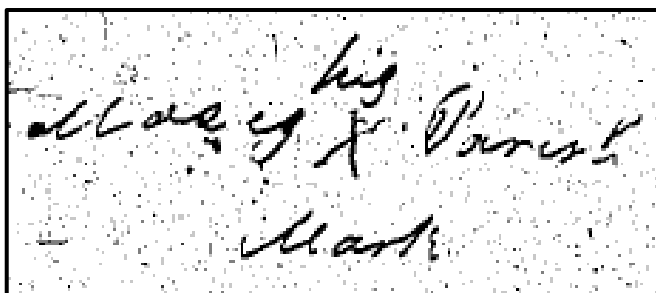
“To the Treasurer Counsell and Company of Adventurers and Planters of the City of London for the first Colony in Virginia—This is to certify that in the good ship called the



Supply this present XVIII of September, 1620 were shipped from our port of Bristol for plantation in Virginia at the charge of Richard Berkeley, George Thorpe, William Tracy and John Smythe, Esq. Under the conduct of the said William Tracy appointed Captayne and Governor over them this 56 persons whose names ensue who forthwith proceeded in their voyage accordingly: **Gabriel Holland**...Richard Holland...Thomas Parker, Mayor.”

Before 1624 Gabriel Holland settled at *Shirley Hundred*, and he was a member of the House of Burgess in 1623-1624. He was a member of the London Company and a yeoman of James City, Virginia. As yeoman he settled on the estate of a widow in 1629.

The House of Burgesses decided to petition the King in a document called, *Tragical Relations of the General Assembly*. Gabriel and twenty-nine other men signed the document and Gabriel Holland carried this petition and offered to present it to King Charles I of England in 1625.



Above: Mark of Moses Parish (5th Great-Granduncle; born in 1742) on his Revolutionary War pension application dated July 20, 1818. Moses stated that he served “in the Company commanded by Capt. Nath’l Cocke of the 7th Virginia Reg’t. That he continued to serve in the said corps for nearly four years, when he was discharged from service in Alexandria; that he was in the Battles of Brandywine (September 11, 1777) and Monmouth (June 28, 1778).”

The King would not hear the petition, so Gabriel returned to America on the *John and Francis* in 1626.

In 1629 the King relented and agreed to hear the petition. Again, Gabriel made the long voyage to England, and this time was able to present the petition to the King. He returned to Virginia on the ship *Assurance* in 1635, with Robert Holland and William Holland (The Cocke Family pages 39-42; Worthy to Remember, pages 659-662).

Fought in Battles of Brandywine and Monmouth

Moses Parish (5th Great-Granduncle; born in 1742) “enlisted in Halifax County in the State of Virginia in the company commanded by Capt. Nath’l Cocke [Nathaniel Cocke] of the 7th Virginia Reg’t.” He stated “that he continued to serve in the said corps for nearly four years, when he was discharged from service in Alexandria; that he was in the battles of Brandywine [September 11, 1777] and Mounmouth [sic: Monmouth, N.J., June 28, 1778]; and that he is in reduced circumstances, and stands in need of the assistance of his Country for support; and that he has no other evidence now in his power of his said services.”

His application also stated: “That the said Parish has only one in family his Wife aged 80 years infirm and nearly blind” (The Cocke Family, pages 51-54; Worthy to Remember, pages 671-674).

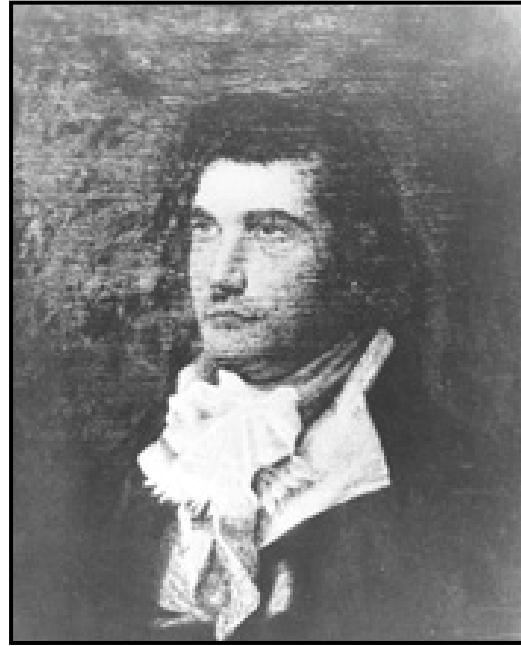
Died in the Richmond Theatre Fire

Abraham B. Venable (1758-1811; son of Nathaniel and Elizabeth Woodson Venable, Granddaughter of Richard Woodson, 7th Great-Granduncle) was a U.S. Congressman and U.S. Senator. “Elected to represent Virginia’s 6th and 7th Districts and as At-Large in the United States House of Representatives, serving from 1791 to 1799. Also served as a United States Senator from Virginia from 1803 to 1804. He died on December 26, 1811, in a theater fire in Richmond, Virginia.”

“Located at 1224 E. Broad Street, the Richmond Theatre fire occurred in Richmond,



Top right: Abraham B. Venable (son of Elizabeth Woodson Venable, granddaughter of Richard Woodson, 7th Great-Granduncle), who was a U.S. Senator and president of the Bank of Virginia. He died on December 26, 1811, in the Richmond Theatre fire (depiction above) along with 71 other victims. Their ashes are now in the Monumental Church (bottom) built on the original site of the Richmond Theatre. **Below:** Gilbert Hunt (1780-1863), a slave blacksmith, who saved many people from the fire. In 1829 Gilbert purchased his freedom for \$800, went to Africa for 8 months, returned to Richmond, where he prospered by operating his own blacksmith shop. **Right:** Depiction of the burning of Bishop Farrar at the Stake in 1555 (date of drawing unknown; see next page).



Virginia, on December 26, 1811. The fire, which killed 72 people, including many government officials, was at the time the worst urban disaster in American history.” Monumental Church was erected on the site as a memorial to the disaster and it is here that the ashes of those that died are buried, including those of Abraham Venable. It was designed by Robert Mills, America’s first native born architect. (Gilbert Hunt, a slave blacksmith, helped save numerous lives on the night of the fire.) (The Cocke Family, pages 58-59; Worthy to Remember, pages 678-679.)



Burned at the Stake

Bishop Robert Ferrar (probably 13th Great-Granduncle; 1500-1555) was born in 1500 in Ewood, an estate in Halifax Parish, England, and “possibly a son of the first Ferror owner of Ewood (14th Great-Grandfather).” He owned lands four miles from Halifax called *Threaphead*. There is a monument to him in Halifax Minster in Halifax, England.



Right: Portrait of Bishop Robert Ferrar (probably 13th Great-Granduncle) from a contemporary sketch, who died as a martyr to his faith in front of Carmarthen Castle in Wales (above; drawing by John Speed in 1610) in 1555. Below: His signature. The inscription on his monument in Church reads: “In Memory of / the Holy Bishop / ROBERT FERRAR / Born at Ewood in the / Parish of Halifax / in the Reign of King Henry the Seventh. / Not less distinguished by integrity firmness and courage than by / piety learning and zeal. / He was preferred under King Henry to the / Priory of St. Oswald’s at Nostel; / and under King Edward the Sixth to the See of St. David’s. / In the same reign for resisting the spoiling of the Church he suffered / persecution and imprisonment; and under Queen Mary / for rejecting Doctrines not taught by the Apostles, / He endured the Martyrdom of Fire at Carmarthen Cross / on the 30 Day of March A.D., 1555 / forgiving his enemies and glorifying his Lord and Redeemer.”



Robt Ferrar

Robert was educated at Cambridge and Oxford, where he received a Bachelor of Divinity degree in 1533, and later a Doctor of Divinity. In 1547/1548, King Edward VII appointed him Bishop of St. David’s. He was influenced by Lutheran writers and became a devout Anglican. After being ap-

pointed to a committee to consider reforms in the church, he preached change and was accused of heresy during the Marion persecutions. He was sentenced to be burned at the stake because he refused to recant. On March 30, 1555, in the town of Carmarthen, Wales, on the south side of the Market Cross, across from the castle entrance, he was burned at the stake. Although in terrible agony, “he never moved until he was struck down.”

Robert was the first bishop in England to marry. His son Samuel took holy orders, and his daughter Abigail married Lewis Williams, rector of Narbeth (The Farrar Family, pages 4-5).

Stabbed to Death

Henry Ferror (11th Great-Granduncle; 1537-1610) as the oldest son received most of his



Above: St. Margaret's Church, which is across the street from Parliament in downtown London. Henri Ferror (11th Great-Granduncle), while acting as a judge, was stabbed to death in Westminster Hall in 1610, and buried in St. Margaret's Church; 2003.

father's large estate, including *Ewood*. In his lifetime he added many estates, manors, and mills in Yorkshire and Lancashire to his possessions. In 1598 he purchased of John Lacy of Brearley the lordship of the Manor of Midgley. He and his two brothers, John and Hugh, were principal founders of Heath Grammar School in Skircoat.

“As a justice of peace, he was very active in legal affairs, taking part in many lawsuits. He and John Lacy, also a justice, defied the Council of the North defending their rights as justices. In 1610 while in Westminster Hall, London, where he had been trying cases, he became involved in an argument with Thomas Oldfield of Warley, another

justice, was stabbed and died two days later. He was buried July 6, 1610, at St. Margaret's in London. Oldfield was promptly tried and sentenced for the crime.”

Leaving no children, his brother **John Farrer** (11th Great-Grandfather), inherited all of his estates, including *Ewood* and the lordship of the Manor of Midgley (The Farrar Family, pages 7-8).

Early Settler of Virginia

The entire Wikipedia article about William Farrar is recorded here because of his importance in the history of my relatives. Through him comes most of the ancient, known European lines of my family. It also verifies that William Farrar was a direct descendant of Edward III, which has been well-documented.

William Farrar (10th Great-Grandfather; christened April 28, 1594, in Croxton, Lincolnshire, England; died circa 1637 in Virginia) “was an early settler, landholder, and legislator of the Colony of Virginia. He was a subscriber to the third charter of the Virginia Company who immigrated to the colony in 1618. After surviving the Powhatan attack of 1622, he moved to Jordan's Journey. In the following year, Farrar became involved in North America's first breach of promise suit when he proposed to Cecily Jordan. In 1626, Farrar was appointed to the Council of Virginia where he served as an advisor to the royal governor, a judge of the highest court in the colony, and a member of the Virginia General Assembly

of Colonial Jamestown. He was also appointed magistrate of the upper James River community. In both of these roles, he served as a voice of the early planters' interest as the colony transitioned from being managed by the Virginia Company and becoming a royal colony under Charles I of England. Farrar was also on the Council when it arrested Governor John Harvey for misgovernance and forced his temporary return to England. By the time of his death around 1637, Farrar had sold off his remaining assets in England and established rights to a 2000-acre patent on Farrar's Island, located on a curl of the James River."



Above: Church of St. John the Evangelist, in Croxton, North Lincolnshire, England, where William Farrar (10th Great-Grandfather) was baptized on April 28, 1583. It dates from the 13th century. Left: The arms of William Farrar's father, John Farrar of Croxton and London, Esquire. Through his mother, Cecily Kelke, an heiress, William was a direct descendant of King Edward III of England.

Background. "William Farrar was born before April 28, 1583, the date of his christening, in Croxton, Lin-



colnshire, England. He was the 3rd son of John Farrar of Croxton and London, Esquire, a wealthy merchant and landowner with various holdings in West Yorkshire, Lincolnshire, and Hertfordshire, and Cecily Kelke, an heiress and direct-descendant of Edward III of England. The nineteenth century historian of Virginia, Alexander Brown, states that while in England, William Farrar received an education in law."

Relation to the Virginia Company and immigration to the New World.

"When Farrar went to Virginia, it was still part of the Virginia Company of London, a joint-stock company, sanctioned by Royal Charter. Farrar was a subscriber to the Third Charter of the Virginia Company, where his name appears as 'William Ferrers.' His subscription consisted of three shares that were bought for a total of £37 10s (equivalent to about \$11,200 today). Farrar also had family interests in the Virginia Company as two of his second cousins, the brothers John Ferrar and Nicholas Ferrar, played key roles in the managing the company's interests."

"Farrar left London on the *Neptune* on March 16, 1617/18, along with Virginia's governor, Thomas West, Baron De La Warr. De La Warr had been commissioned by the Virginia Company to return to the colony with fresh people and supplies to help it achieve political

and economic stability, but he died en route. When Farrar arrived in August 1618, news of the governor's death threw Jamestown into turmoil, Deputy Governor Samuel Argall, who



Above: Depiction of Jamestown, Virginia, about 1623. Right: U.S. Postage stamp from 1907 commemorating the 300-year anniversary of the founding of Jamestown.

was already unpopular with many colonists, was accused of mismanagement and the unauthorized misappropriation of *Neptune's* passengers and cargo. After a prolonged series of accusations from both the Virginia Company and colonists against Argall's governing, he finally stepped down in April 1619."

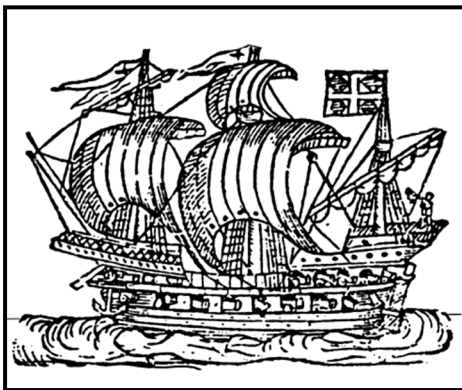


"In June 1619, the Virginia Company instructed that 40 indentured servants be put at the disposal of Farrar when they arrived in Virginia. The payment for the cost of transporting these colonists would have resulted in a 2000 acre headright at 50 acres a head. However, *Garland* never arrived in Jamestown because it was damaged in a hurricane while en route. Instead of proceeding to Virginia, the *Garland's* captain, William Wye, left the remaining passengers in Bermuda and sailed the repaired ship directly back to England."

"As his personal headright, Farrar did receive a land patent for 100 acres on the Appomattox River close to where it flows into the James River, near what is now known as Hopewell, Virginia. In the meantime, the resultant legal suits between Wye and the Virginia Company regarding the financial responsibility for the *Garland* fiasco were

not resolved until the end of 1622, when Farrar had already quit residence at his patent as a result of the Powhatan surprise attack of 1621/1622.”

Move to Jordan’s Journey and marriage. “During the Powhatan surprise attack, ten settlers on Farrar’s land on the Appomattox River were killed. However, Farrar survived and got to Samuel Jordan’s settlement at Beggars Bush, part of the plantation known as Jordan’s Journey. After the attack, William Farrar stayed at Jordan’s Journey as



Top and middle: Jamestown church. The church tower is the only above ground seventeenth-century structure remaining at Jamestown. Above: Location of the original Jamestown fort, which was discovered in 1995. It was thought that the fort was in the James River but was discovered adjacent to the original church. William Farrar immigrated to Virginia on the *Neptune* (woodcut left) in 1618.

it had become a relatively safe fortified rallying place for the survivors.”

“Samuel Jordan died before June 1623. Sometime afterward, Farrar proposed marriage to Jordan’s pregnant widow, Cecily, which involved him in the first breach of promise suit filed in North America. Reverend Greville Pooley claimed he had first proposed marriage three or four days after Samuel Jordan had died and Cecily had accepted. However, Cecily denied his proposal and accepted Farrar’s, which resulted in Pooley filing the suit. The case

Worthy to Remember an Abridgment

continued for almost two years. During the suit, Alexander Brown suggests that Farrar may have acted as Cecily's legal representative. Eventually, Pooley signed an agreement in January 1624/5 that acquitted Cecily Jordan of her alleged former promises."



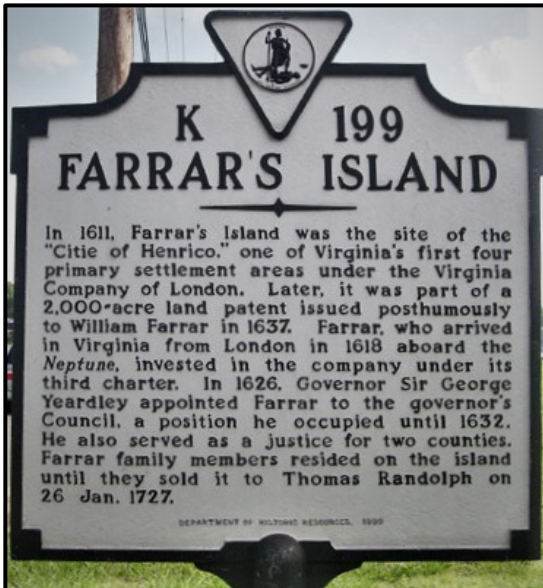
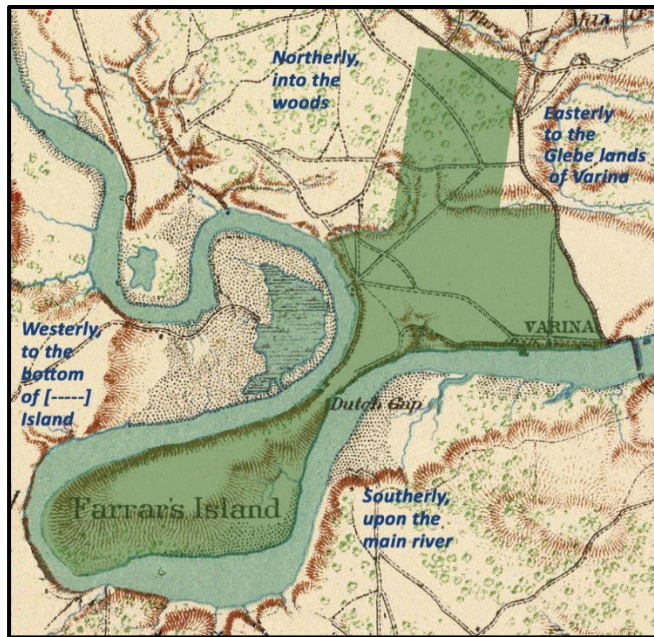
Above: View of the James River as it bends around Farrar's Island. Drawing made in early 1860s Left: Farrar's Island in Chesterfield County, Virginia. The chimney is all that remains of an old lighthouse that once stood on the site. William Farrar (9th Great-Grandfather, son of William Farrar the immigrant) and his son, William Farrar (8th Great-Grandfather), lived at or near this spot. The land was later sold out of the family, but the name of the property remained the same.

"Even as the case was ongoing, William Farrar and Cecily Jordan continued to work together at Jordan's Journey. In November 1623, Farrar was bonded to execute Samuel Jordan's will regarding the management of his estate and Cecily Jordan was warranted to put down the security to guarantee Farrar's bondage. During this time, 'Farrar assumed the role of plantation 'commander' or 'head of hundred' for Jordan's Journey. A year later, the Jamestown muster of 1624/25 lists 'fferrar William mr & Mrs. Jordan'[sic] as sharing the head of a Jordan's Journey household with three daughters and ten manservants. During this time, Jordan's Journey prospered. By May 1625 Farrar and Jordan were finally married, as it was then that Farrar was released from his bond to Jordan's estate. They had three children together: Cecily (born 1625), **William** (birth year uncertain), and John (born around 1632)."

Roles in the royal colony. "On March 14, 1625/6, William Farrar was appointed councilor to the Council of Virginia by Charles I of England. Farrar held this position, which entitled

him as an *esquire* of Virginia, until at least 1635 when Governor John Harvey was deported.”

“Farrar became a councilor during a period of uncertainty for the colonists. The 1619 Great Charter of the Virginia Company had established self-governance through the Virginia Assembly, but James I dissolved the charter in 1624 and put the colony under direct royal authority. Just before James I died in March 1625, Charles I announced his intention to be the sole factor of his royal colonies. To this end, he commissioned a new structure, consisting of a governor, Sir George Yeardley, and 13 councilors, including William Farrar, to govern the royal colony on behalf of the Crown’s interest. Because



Above: Approximate extent of William Farrar's (10th Great-Grandfather) 2000-acre 1637 land grant in green with boundary descriptions from patent in blue. Left: Virginia historical sign for Farrar’s Island. William’s son, William Farrar, and grandson, William Farrar, lived here.

the assembly was not included in the commission, the Council was the only legal body representing the interests of the Virginia planters. This state of affairs continued until the petitions of the colonists allowed the continuance of the House of Burgesses and the reconvention of the Virginia Assembly in 1628. The Council also functioned as the highest court in Virginia and as the advisory board to the

governor regarding the creation of legislative acts. Just as importantly, the members of the Council could determine the fate of the governor. Farrar was on the Council when it elected John Pott as governor in 1628. He was also on the Council when it temporarily deported Governor Harvey in 1635. Harvey’s silencing of Farrar when he questioned the governor’s proceedings with the council initiated the protest that eventually led to the governor’s arrest and expulsion.”

“In August 1626, Farrar was also appointed by Yeardley as commissioner (i.e., magistrate) of the ‘Upper Partes’[sic] which lies along the James River west of Piersey’s Hundred

having jurisdiction over Charles City and the City of Henrico. Farrar was the head commissioner of six commissioners appointed: he was the one given the right of final judgment when present and allowed the discretion to hold monthly courts at either Jordan's Journey or Shirley Hundred. When his commission was renewed by Governor Sir John Harvey in 1632, it also mandated that the court could only be in session when Farrar was present."

"After 1619, settlers could purchase the cost of transporting white indentured servants from England to the new world as a contract that could be redeemed as a headright, and these headright contracts could be used for speculation by being sold, bought, or bartered. William Farrar was one of the settlers involved in this activity. For example, he is listed in patents as selling headrights to the settlers William Andrewes around 1628 and Nathan Martin around 1636."

Sale of inheritance. "When William Farrar's father, John the elder, died sometime before May 1628, he willed his various landholdings in Hertfordshire to William. In addition, John Farrar also stipulated that William and his family receive a £20 annuity from his older brother from rents in Halifax Parish, Yorkshire and that William receive £50 upon his return to England. In 1631, William Farrar returned to England to claim his inheritance. He then sold the assets from his inheritance to his brothers, including his annuity for £240 and his landholdings for £200, for a total of £440 (equivalent to about \$132,000 today) and returned to Virginia."

Farrar's Island. "At the time of his death sometime before June 11, 1637, Farrar was described as being 'of Henrico,' one of eight shires established in Virginia three years previously. By the time of his death, he had established his headright to a 2000-acre land patent at a site that included Dutch Gap and the former settlement of Henrico. This headright was given for forty indentured servants, who were named in the patent. After Farrar's death, the headright was repatented to his oldest son, his namesake, who was twelve years old at the time, by John Harvey, who had returned from England and resumed his role as governor of the colony."

"The patent was issued for land that included a peninsula formed by meander loop, or curl, of the James River subsequently known as Farrar's Island. It is described in the patent as abutting the glebe lands of Varina in the east, and extending to the James River in the south, the end of the island (i.e., peninsula) in the west, and 'to the woods' in the north. Farrar's Island remained with the Farrar family until it was sold in 1727." (Wikipedia)

Great Scottish Castle

Robert Boyd (7th Great-Grandfather; 1688-1766) was certainly a descendant of the Lords and Earls of Kilmarnock, but the records don't exist to prove this fact. If his ancestry was known it would include "**Robert**, who being of a fair complexion was called Boyt or Boyd, from the Galic or Celtic word Boidh, which signifies fair or yellow, from which he assumed his surname, and from him all the Boyds in Scotland are descended."

“This Robert Boyd is designed nephew to Walter son of Alan, lord high steward of Scotland, in the charters to the monastery of Paisley. The same Robert, designed *dominus*



Above: Dean Castle, the former stronghold of the Boyds of Kilmarnock. From before 1400 to 1750 the Boyds were lords and barons of Kilmarnock. The castle was known as Kilmarnock Castle for most of its history; 2003. Right: Earliest known depiction (circa 1440) of the Battle of Bannockburn, which took place in 1314. Sir Robert Boyd (distant Great-Grandfather) fought with Robert the Bruce and was rewarded after the battle for his loyalty with many lands including Kilmarnock.

Robertus Boyd, is witness to a contract betwixt Bryce de Eglington, and the village of Irvine, *anno* 1205. (It may here be observed that the Boyds have always carried the same armorial bearings of the lord high stewards, which denotes their descent from that illustrious house.) Robert died before the year 1240. His son and successor was Sir Robert Boyd.”

“**Sir Robert Boyd** (distant Great-Grandfather) was a man of great courage and resolution, and remarkably distinguished himself at the Battle of Largis, where King Alexander III obtained a glorious victory over Haco King of Norway, *anno* 1263, for which good service, King Alexander rewarded him with a grant of several lands in Cunninghame, &c. He died about the year 1270, leaving a son, Sir Robert Boyd.”



“**Sir Robert Boyd** (distant Great-Grandfather) was one of the Scotch barons that swore fealty to King Edward I. when he overran Scotland, *anno* 1296, and was designed *Robertus*



Left: Ellen Frances “Ella” Farrar (1841-1906; daughter of Bernard Gaines Farrar, son of Joseph Royall Farrar, son of Thomas Farrar, 8th Great-Granduncle). She was married to Samuel T. Houser (1833-1914; above) in 1871, who was Governor of Montana from 1885 to 1887. The Hauser Dam in Montana is named after him. (Picture of Ellen courtesy of Chuck Wilber.) Above right: Mansion built by Samuel T. Houser in Helena, Montana, in 1913.

de Boyt miles, yet he soon showed that it was force and not inclination that

made him do so, for he joined the great Sir William Wallace, *anno* 1297, and did everything that a brave man could do, to free his country from foreign servitude. He died about the year 1300 and was succeeded by his son, Sir Robert Boyd.”

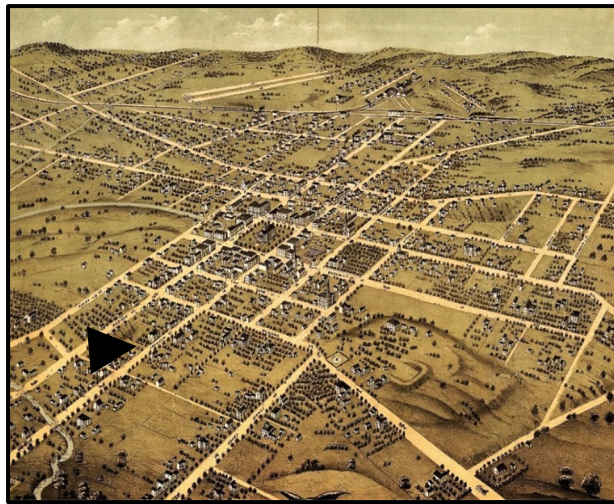
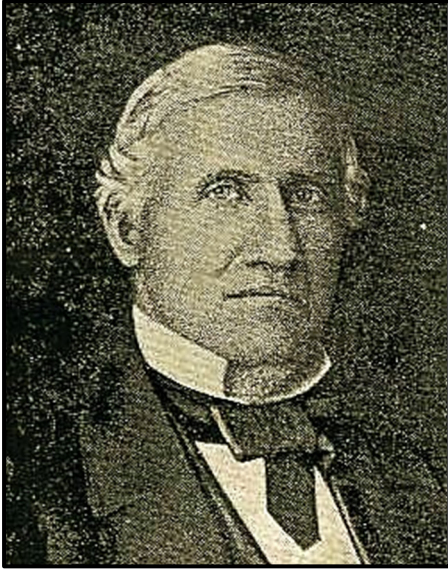
“**Sir Robert Boyd** (distant Great-Grandfather) was a great and worthy patriot who, according to Doctor Abercrombie, was one of the first of the Scotch nobles to join King Robert Bruce as soon as he began to assert his title to the crown. The same author says afterwards that he was one of the firmest and fastest friends that great monarch had. That King Robert had a high esteem and value for him; appears by the many lands and baronies he conferred upon him. He got no less than three charters under the great seal from him, of the lands and baronies of Kilmarnock, Bondington, Hertshaw, Kilbrid, Ardneil, Dalry, and many others, then in the crown by the forfeiture of John Baliol, the first dated *anno* 1308, and the last in 1316. Sir Robert Boyd was one of the guarantees of a treaty with the English, *anno* 1323. This great man died in the beginning of the reign of King David Bruce, and left issue three sons: Sir Thomas Boyd (his heir), Sir Alan Boyd (a brave soldier, and steady friend to King David Bruce—he was killed at the Siege of Perth in 1339), and James de Boyd (witnessed a charter in 1342)” (The Farrar Family, pages 107-109; Worthy to Remember, pages 820-821).

Governor of Montana

Ellen Frances “Ella” Farrar (1841-1906; daughter of Bernard Gaines Farrar, son of Joseph Royall Farrar, son of Thomas Farrar, 8th Great-Granduncle) married in 1871, Samuel T. Houser (1833-1914), Governor of Montana from 1885 to 1887. He became very rich, eventually owning six silver mines, Montana’s first silver smelter, and coal mines. He also established several banks, including one in Virginia City, Montana. He built the Hauser Mansion in Helena, Montana, after Ellen died, which is now listed on the National Register of Historic Places (The Farrar Family, pages 166-167).

Rich Early Leader of Huntsville, Alabama

Dr. Thomas Fearn, Jr. (1789-1863; son of Mary Burton Fearn, daughter of Robert Burton III, son of Priscilla Farrar, 7th Great-Grandaunt) was born November 15, 1789, in



Top right: The Fearn Home at 517 Franklin Street in Huntsville, Alabama, was built by Dr. Thomas Fearn (above) (1789-1863; son of Mary Burton Fearn, daughter of Robert Burton III, son of Priscilla Farrar, 7th Great-Grandaunt) in 1820 and remained in the family until 1964. “Dr. Fearn was a physician, planter, state legislator, and elected to the board of the first trustees of the University of Alabama. He was famous for his pioneering work in the medicinal use of quinine. Along with his brother, he owned and improved the Huntsville water system and was active in building the canal from town to the Tennessee River.” He was elected as a delegate from Alabama to the Confederate Provisional Congress after that state seceded from the Union and served until 1861. He was a signer of the Confederate Constitution, even though he opposed slavery and succession. Right: Bird’s eye view of Huntsville, Alabama, in 1871. The arrow points to the location of Dr. Fearn’s house at 517 Franklin Street. He helped establish Huntsville as a viable community.

Pittsylvania County, Virginia, and died January 16, 1863, in Huntsville, Alabama, where he was buried in Maple Hill Cemetery. He was a United States Army veteran of the War of 1812.

Dr. Fearn was a physician, planter, state legislator, and elected to the board of the first trustees of the University of Alabama. He was famous for his pioneering work in the medicinal use of quinine. Along with his brother, he owned and improved the Huntsville water system and was active in building the canal from the town to the Tennessee River. He was elected as a delegate from Alabama to the

Confederate Provisional Congress after that state seceded from the Union and served until

1861. He was a signer of the Confederate Constitution, even though he opposed slavery and succession. Dr. Thomas Fearn wrote Clement Clay in July 1818 suggesting the need for a library: “How pleasing it would be to see the hours lost at the card table, with the dice box, or even those more innocently thrown away in idle chitchat, exchanged for profitable employment.” In 1819 he wrote a friend in England about his dreams for Huntsville, but then wrote about one of his deepest concerns, slavery: “That foulest blot in our national character, that damning curse entailed on us by our forefathers, that glaring inconsistency between republican principles and despotic practice.” That “glaring inconsistency haunted him: ‘To plead equal rights of man and at the same time make the heavenly principle bend and yield to convenience or even necessity is too great an absurdity.’”—“Fearn based his attack on reason, not morality, on absurdity, not sin. He was a true son of the Enlightenment.” In 1860 he had \$175,000, 1100 acres of land, a mansion, and 82 slaves—“Unfortunately, reality and



Top: Robert Fearn (1795-1865; son of Mary Burton Fearn, daughter of Robert Burton III, son of Priscilla Farrar, 7th Great-Grandaunt), brother of Dr. Thomas Fearn. He was wealthy, a large plantation owner, an alderman for many years, and Treasurer of the Huntsville Public Library, the first in Alabama. Right: Portrait of Leonard Henderson (1772-1833; husband of Frances Farrar, daughter of William Farrar, 6th Great-Granduncle), who was Chief Justice of the North Carolina Supreme Court from 1829 to 1833.



necessity won out.” \$175,000 converts to \$4,800,000 in today’s dollars (2016) (The Farrar Family, pages 187-193).

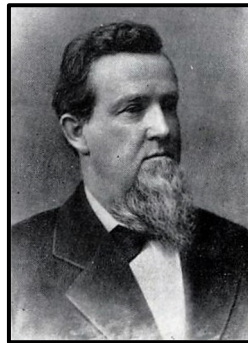
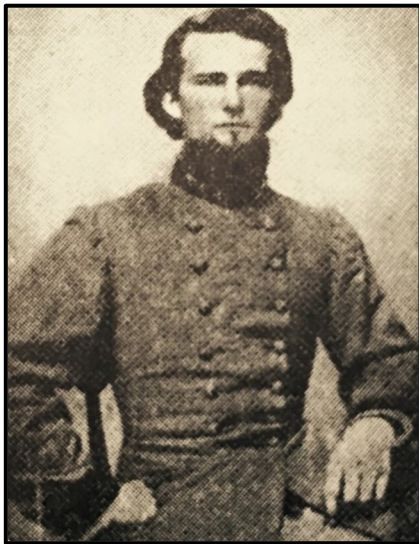
Chief Justice North Carolina Supreme Court

Leonard Henderson (1772-1833; husband of Frances Farrar, daughter of William Farrar, 6th Great-Granduncle) was a member of the first North Carolina Supreme Court and Chief Justice of the North Carolina Supreme Court from 1829 to 1833 (The Farrar Family, page 199).

Governor of North Carolina

General Alfred Moore Scales (1827-1892; husband of Katherine “Kate” Henderson, daughter of Archibald Henderson, son of Frances Farrar, daughter of William Farrar, 6th Great-Granduncle), who was governor of North Carolina, 1885-1889. During the Civil

War he and his regiment were held up as a model of “duty, courage, and daring” (The Farrar Family, pages 200).



Died at Battle of Pea Ridge

Albert Gallatin Farrar (1828-1862: son of John Howard Farrar, son of Abel Farrar, son of William Farrar, 6th Great-Granduncle) died from wounds received in the Battle of Pea Ridge in northwest Arkansas on October 25, 1862 (The Farrar Family, page 211).

Created a Manufacturing Empire



Fuller Earle Callaway (1870-1928; son of Sarah Jane Howard, daughter of Abel Howard, son of Priscilla Farrar, 6th Great-Grand-aunt). Fuller turned \$500 into a manufacturing empire in the early 1900s. He was recognized for putting people first and business second. After he died, his son, Carson Jewell Callaway, continued the successful operation of his father’s mills. “Thanks to his careful stewardship, Callaway



Top left: General Alfred Moore Scales (1827-1892; husband of Katherine “Kate” Henderson, daughter of Archibald Henderson, son of Frances Farrar, daughter of William Farrar, 6th Great-Granduncle), who was governor of North Carolina, 1885-1889, in his Confederate uniform, and when governor (top right). Above: Depiction of the Battle of Pea Ridge, where Albert Gallatin Farrar (1828-1862: son of John Howard Farrar, son of Abel Farrar, son of William Farrar, 6th Great-Granduncle) died on October 25, 1862. Left: Fuller Earle Callaway (1870-1928; son of Sarah Jane Howard, daughter of Abel Howard, son of Priscilla Farrar, 6th Grand-aunt). He turned \$500 into a manufacturing empire. Above: The Callaway Memorial Tower in La Grange, Georgia, was built to honor Fuller Callaway in 1929.

Mills survived the Great Depression without closing any plants and kept at least one member of every mill family fully employed.” The Callaway Memorial Tower

in La Grange, Georgia, was built to honor Fuller Callaway in 1929 (The Farrar Family, pages 234-235).

Founder of the Coca-Cola Company

Asa Griggs Chandler, Sr. (1851-1929; husband of Lucy Elizabeth Howard, daughter of



Above: Lucy Elizabeth Howard (1859-1919; daughter of George Jefferson Howard, son of William Henry Howard Jr., son of William Henry Howard Sr., son of Priscilla Farrar, 6th Great-Grandaunt), on the far right, with her family in 1895. Left to right: William Candler (1890-1936), Asa Griggs Candler Sr. (1851-1929; husband and father), Charles Howard Candler (1878-1957; standing), Walter Candler (1885-1967), Lucy Candler (1883-1962), Asa G. Candler Jr. (1880-1953; standing) and Lucy Elizabeth Howard (mother and wife). She married Asa Griggs Candler in 1878, and he became the founder of the Coca Cola Company in 1887. Their son, William Candler, was president of Coca-Cola.

George Jefferson Howard, son of William Henry Howard Jr., son of William Henry Howard Sr., son of Priscilla Farrar, 6th Great-Grandaunt) founded the Coca-Cola Company in 1892, which became one of the most famous companies ever created. In 1889 he purchased the Coca-Cola recipe for \$2,300 from chemist John Stith Pemberton in Atlanta, Georgia. By 1895, Coca-Cola was being sold in every state. “Chandler was one of the first businessmen to use merchandising in his advertising strategy. The first Coca-Cola ad read, ‘Coca Cola. Delicious! Refreshing! Exhilarating! Invigorating!’” By 1948, Coca-Cola claimed about 60% of its market share. (The image of a red cheeked, over-weight, Santa Claus wearing a red suit and drinking a Coke was created by Haddon Sundblom for the Coca-Cola Company starting in 1931. His “Claus firmly established the larger-than-life, grandfatherly Claus as a key figure in American Christmas imagery” and by that Coca-Cola has affected most children in the Western World.)

Asa Chandler became fabulously rich, but was generous with his money, donating



millions of dollars. He was mayor of Atlanta from 1917-1919 and built several skyscrapers, including the tallest building in Atlanta in 1906 and the Chandler Building on Times Square in New York City in 1912 that is still open (The Farrar Family, pages 238-240; Worthy to Remember, pages 950-952).

Owned Huge Southern Mansion



Martha Evelina McCaleb (1840-1899; daughter of Judge Theodore Howard Mc-

Top: Asa Griggs Chandler (1851-1929), founder of the Coca Cola Company, made so much money that he built skyscrapers, including the Chandler Building on Times Square in New York City that is still standing. Coca-Cola has touched the lives of almost everyone in the world, including the image they have of Santa Claus. Middle: Ellerslie, located near Saint Francisville, West Feliciana, Louisiana, which was owned by Martha Evelina McCaleb (1840-1899; daughter of Judge Theodore Howard McCaleb, son of Matilda Farrar, daughter of Thomas Farrar, 5th Great-Granduncle) and her husband, Dr. Joseph John Wade (1833-1906). It is considered "one of the finest Greek Revival antebellum mansions ever built" (1828-1832). Left: Portraits of Richard Norton, Sr. (1886-1940) and his wife, Corinne "Anna" Miles (1886-1975; Great-Great-Granddaughter of Thomas Farrar, 5th Great-Granduncle). Richard discovered oil and became rich.



Caleb, son of Matilda Farrar, daughter of Thomas Farrar, 5th Great-Granduncle) and her husband, Dr. Joseph John Wade (1833-1906) owned *Ellerslie*, located near Saint Francisville, West Feliciana, Louisiana. It is considered "one of the finest Greek Revival antebellum mansions ever built." William Wade contracted the home, which took four years, 1828-1832, to complete. (The Farrar Family, page 272; Worthy to Remember, page 984)

Struck it Rich

Richard William Norton, Sr. (1886-1940; husband of Corinne "Anna" Miles, 1886-

1975, daughter of Margaret Voorhies, daughter of Margaret Prince Farrar, daughter of Field Farrar, son of Thomas Farrar, 5th Great-Granduncle) became incredibly rich when his R. W. Norton No. 1 well struck oil in the Rodessa oil field north of Shreveport, Louisiana,



Above: Jack William Swilling (1830-1878; son of Margaret Prince Farrar, daughter of Thomas Farrar, 5th Great-Granduncle) in 1868. Some histories list him as one of the founders of Phoenix, Arizona, but he was actually “the” founder of Phoenix.

on August 3, 1930. Previous wells had been drilled, but none had discovered oil because they hadn’t gone deep enough. He reached oil at a depth of 5,505 feet. The field produced over 12 million barrels of oil in 1937. The R. W. Norton Art Gallery in Shreveport, Louisiana, is named in his honor (The Farrar Family, pages 280-281; Worthy to Remember, pages 992-993).

Founder of Phoenix, Arizona

Jack William Swilling (1830-1878; son of Margaret Prince Farrar, daughter of Thomas Farrar, 5th Great-Granduncle) “was an early pioneer in the Arizona Territory. He is commonly credited as one of the original founders of the city of Phoenix, Arizona. Swilling also played an important role in the opening of the central Arizona highlands to white settlement. His discoveries resulted in a gold rush to the region, and this in turn led to

the establishment of Arizona's first territorial capital at the mining town of Prescott.”

“Swilling was both a Confederate States Army minuteman and a civilian aid to the United States Army during the American Civil War. He worked in a variety of disciplines throughout his life, including as a teamster, prospector, mine and mill owner, and saloon and dance hall owner, as well as a canal builder, farmer, rancher, and public servant. All of this was accomplished while he suffered from periods of excruciating pain resulting from major injuries he suffered in 1854. He took morphine to assuage the pain, which led to dependency problems for the rest of his life.”

Early life. “John William ‘Jack’ Swilling was born on April 1, 1830, at Red House Plantation, Anderson, South Carolina, to George Swilling and Margaret Farrar Swilling, the eighth of their 10 children. George Swilling was the son of the plantation manager, while Margaret Farrar’s father, Thomas Farrar, was the owner. (Incidentally, Thomas Farrar’s mother was Judith Jefferson, the sister of Peter Jefferson and aunt to the third president, Thomas Jefferson.) Farrar’s parents did not approve of the marriage, so the young couple eloped. It took three years for her parents to accept the match. In time, George Swilling became owner of the plantation. When Jack Swilling was 14, the family moved from South Carolina to Georgia. Three years later he and an older brother enlisted in a mounted battalion of Georgia volunteers for service during the Mexican American War. After the war, the two young men returned to Georgia. Jack Swilling’s whereabouts are unknown for a brief time afterwards, although he was reported in Georgia for the Christmas of 1849.”

“The next recorded events in his life are his marriage at Wetumpka, Alabama, in 1852 to Mary Jane Gray and the birth of their daughter Elizabeth a year later. Swilling wrote in 1854 that he suffered serious injuries—a broken skull and a bullet lodged in his back—in unstated circumstances. Those injuries plagued him for the rest of his life and led to a dependency on drugs and alcohol. In 1856, on his 26th birthday, something happened to cause him to leave permanently for the West. There is more than a year’s break in the historical record, but Swilling apparently joined the Leach Wagon Road Company at Fort Smith, Arkansas, as a teamster in the summer of 1857, probably staying with the slow-moving oxen-drawn wagon train until its arrival a year later at Mesilla, in Traditional Arizona, which was then part of the New Mexico Territory.”

“The years between Swilling’s arrival in Arizona in 1858 and the founding of Phoenix almost a decade later were active and varied ones. After his arrival in Arizona, Swilling moved to southern California, where he joined in a gold rush near Los Angeles. A few months later he was drawn back to Arizona by the gold rush at Gila City, where he also worked for the Butterfield Overland Mail Company.”

Apache wars and the American Civil War. “He was elected captain of the Gila Rangers militia company that was formed to provide protection from Apache stock raids on the miners and the stage company. The Gila Rangers, with the support of warriors from the friendly Maricopa tribe, made a January 1860 expedition to the unexplored Bradshaw Mountains of central Arizona in pursuit of Apache raiders. The expedition resulted in some noteworthy discoveries: the existence of the Hassayampa River and traces of mineral riches, including gold, in an area that appeared well-suited for ranching and farming. However, the area was too remote and dangerous for settlers at the time.”

“Soon afterwards, the Gila City gold deposits ran out and Swilling followed his friend, Colonel Jacob Snively, to Pinos Altos, where he both mined and ran a saloon and dance hall. When the Union Army withdrew from the New Mexico Territory at the beginning of the Civil War, the men of Pinos Altos formed a militia company they named the Arizona Guards for defense against Apache attack. The secession of Confederate Arizona from the Union was officially declared in 1861, a territory which included all of the New Mexico Territory south of the 34th parallel. Swilling was elected second-in-command of the

company, or First Lieutenant, and retained that rank when the Arizona Guards were



Top: Bird's eye view of Phoenix, Arizona, in 1880. Jack Swilling became the founder of Phoenix by building an irrigation system that channeled water into the otherwise dry settlement. Above: Phoenix today. It is the sixth largest city in United States, and the metropolitan area had 4.3 million people in 2010. Left: Ruins of Jack Swilling's "Dos Casa Castle," circa 1920. It was located approximately one half mile east of 3rd Street in Phoenix, Arizona. The adobe dwelling was built in 1868 and at 4,700 square feet was the largest building in early Phoenix. The home is no longer standing.

absorbed into the Confederate Army. Swilling likely fought at the Battle of Pinos Altos, a Confederate victory and a battle which killed his commander, Captain Thomas J. Mastin (1839-1861).”

“After a time spent defending against Apaches and acting as the *de facto* police force for the area around Pinos Altos, Swilling led a portion of the Arizona Guards that reinforced the garrison of Tucson in 1862. He is believed to have commanded a party of rebels who burned Stanwix Station and skirmished with the Union Army's California Column there in March. He was also involved in the noted incident at White's Mill at Casa Blanca, Arizona, when Union Captain James McCleave was captured.”

“Following the Union's capture of Tucson in May 1862, Swilling's company retreated and he became a civilian employee of the United States Army, first as a dispatch rider between General James Carleton's California Column and Union forces up the Rio Grande, and later as a scout in an anti-Apache campaign. He was involved in the campaign to take

Mesilla which ended with a Union takeover of Confederate Arizona's capital. Near the end of that employment, he encountered the Joseph R. Walker exploratory party near Pinos



This page: Two modern views of Phoenix, Arizona. Little did Jack Swilling (1830-1878; Grandson of Thomas Farrar, 5th Great-Granduncle) know when he founded Phoenix in 1868 that he would be affecting the lives of millions of people for generations to come.

Altos when Swilling led the capture of the famous Apache chief Mangas Coloradas.”



Further prospecting and marriage. “Swilling’s war ended there, and he convinced Joseph Walker and his group that there was gold in the central highlands of the new Arizona Territory. He then guided them to where the first Yavapai County mining district was formed, just a few miles south of present-day Prescott, on May 10, 1863. The expedition called it the Pioneer Mining District, and the rules they adopted were the area’s first recorded laws.”

“Swilling left the Walker party shortly after the formation of the Pioneer Mining District and joined up with the exploratory party of Pauline Weaver and Abraham Harlow Peeples (1842-1892), which arrived in the area shortly after the Walker group. He made a small fortune from the unusual surface gold mine at Rich Hill between Wickenburg and Prescott. News of his successes spread eastward when two gold samples from Swilling’s claim sent to General James Henry Carleton were forwarded for presentation to President Abraham Lincoln.”

“Next, Swilling was briefly part owner of a flour mill in Tucson, apparently in partnership with his neighbor Charles T. Hayden. Quickly tiring of Tucson, he returned to Yavapai County where he prospected, owned gold mines and gold milling operations, and farmed. In addition, he also was the mail contractor between Prescott and the Pima villages below the Salt River Valley on the Gila River. In the midst of all this activity, Jack Swilling married a young Mexican woman of Spanish heritage named Trinidad Mejia Escalante (1847-1925). They were married on April 11, 1864, at Tucson’s San Agustin Cathedral when Trinidad was about seventeen. Over the next fourteen years they had seven biological children, five girls and two boys, and adopted two Apache orphans, a boy and a girl.”

Swilling Irrigation and Canal Company. “Jack Swilling had the inspiration to form a canal company which would open the Salt River Valley to farming. On November 16, 1867, he formed the Swilling Irrigating and Canal Company at Wickenburg. Soon after, a small group of men headed by Jack Swilling started con-

Right: Stone cabin built by John William “Jack” Swilling (1830-1878; son of Margaret Prince Farrar, daughter of Thomas Farrar, 5th Great-Granduncle) in Black Canyon City, Yavapai County, Arizona (located 45 miles due north of Phoenix off I-17). After selling his interest in Phoenix, Jack Swilling began a mining career in the Bradshaw Mountains in the early 1870s. He established a ranch in what is today Black Canyon City and this cabin served as his residence. Later he moved to nearby Gillett, Arizona, but kept the cabin until his death in 1878. His home is the oldest building in the community. “Black Canyon village, at the time, was but a motley crew of roughly 50 miners who worked claims in the Bradshaw Mountains. Trinidad was the first non-native woman to arrive in the community. They planted crops such as watermelon and pumpkin, Jack began a vineyard, and they ran over a hundred cattle as well as maintaining horses and mules. There, they often sheltered the travelers who made their way down what was called ‘Swilling’s Road.’” I took these photographs on October 13, 2016.



struction of the first modern-era irrigation canals in the Salt River Valley; other pioneers and travelers had seen and commented on ancient Hohokam canals in the area, but it was Swilling who organized the first successful modern irrigation project. The following summer, the first crops of wheat, barley and corn were harvested. He promoted the irrigation system, which was in part inspired by the ruins of the Hohokam canals. Swilling Irrigating and Canal Company started the small farming community of Phoenix that has since grown into one of the United States’ largest metropolitan areas. Swilling claimed a quarter section south of what became Van Buren Street between 32nd and 36th Streets for his own farm. He built a nine-room, 4,700-square-foot home there. His farm was a local showplace, featuring an artificial pond with tame ducks, a vineyard and an orchard with a variety of fruit trees.”

“In the early days, Jack Swilling was one of the most prominent leaders of the Phoenix settlement. The first post office was established on June 15, 1868, in Swilling's homestead, with Swilling serving as the postmaster. He was also the first justice of the peace. He was involved in the planning and construction of additional canals, including the first ditch south of the Salt River in partnership with an old acquaintance and business partner, Charles T. Hayden, the founder of Tempe, Arizona and father of long-time Arizona Senator Carl T. Hayden.”

Death. “Once Phoenix was well-established and the so-called ‘original townsite’ was located over three miles to the west of his holdings, he lost interest and moved his growing family back to central Arizona. There he mined, farmed and ranched until he became a suspect in a stagecoach robbery near Wickenburg.”

“By the spring of 1878, he and his family were living in the small mining community of Gillett, around the area of Black Canyon City. His health was failing, and his drinking had become a problem. Trinidad Swilling suggested that he go on a trip to recover and rebury the remains of their old friend, Colonel Jacob Snively, who had been killed by Apaches in the Wickenburg Mountains near the peak called White Picacho. While Swilling and two companions were on this journey, three hooded men—one tall, one medium-size, and one short—robbed a stagecoach near Wickenburg. This description matched that of Swilling and his companions, and they became suspects in the robbery.”

“Pima County Sheriff Wiley W. Standefer arrested Swilling and Andrew Kirby but dropped the state charges so the federal courts could prosecute them and absorb the prosecution costs. Deputy U.S. Marshal Joseph W. Evans brought warrants for the two men to Prescott, where they were turned over to him, and Evans escorted them to the federal jail in Yuma. The sanitary conditions inside the prison at Yuma were very poor and, combined with the August heat plus the fact of his usage of a combination of narcotics and liquor to relieve the pain caused by old injuries ruined Jack Swilling's health further and eventually led to his death. He was released to the Hodges family, friends of the Swillings, and died in their home. The real culprits of the massacre were caught proving his innocence too late. The real robbers—led by a man Swilling and others had publicly accused—were identified only after Swilling's death.”

“After his death, Swilling's reputation as a badman grew so fast that by the end of the 19th century a prominent Arizona historian described him as a ‘typical desperado.’ By many accounts he was a joker and yarn spinner and while drinking he spread tall tales about his exploits to all who would listen. Friends remembered Jack Swilling as an honest, hard-working, and generous man always ready to help those in need of a meal or a place to sleep. He was known to put his own life at risk for others, literally riding to the rescue when help was needed in the face of an Apache attack.”

“On Thursday afternoon, February 19, 1931, the Maricopa Chapter of the Daughters of the American Revolution, in a simple ceremony with the presence of Arizona Governor George W. P. Hunt, unveiled and dedicated to the memory of Jack and Trinidad Swilling, a fountain which stands in the park directly in front of the courthouse building in Phoenix.

The fountain has a small bronze plaque with the following inscription: ‘In memory of Lieut. Jack W. Swilling, 1831-1878, who built the first modern irrigation ditch, and



Trinidad, his wife, 1850-1925, who established in 1868 the first pioneer home in the Salt River Valley.” (The Farrar Family, pages 298-317; Worthy to Remember, pages 1010-1029.) (This entire account of Jack Swilling’s life is taken from Wikipedia—Jack Swilling.)

Breached the Wall at Gettysburg

Waller Massie Boyd (1843-1917; son of Henry Curran Boyd, son of David Boyd, son of Alexander Boyd, 6th Great-Granduncle) rose in the ranks from a private to captain. On the third day of the Battle of Gettysburg he and his men attacked the Union



Top: Waller Massie Boyd (1843-1917; son of Henry Curran Boyd, son of David Boyd, son of Alexander Boyd, 6th Great-Granduncle—and Juliet Anna Massie) on right (taller) with his first cousin, Edward B. Goode (1839-1920), son of Sarah Marie Massie—their mothers were sisters—in cadet uniforms while attending the Virginia Military Institute. Waller held the rank of captain when he fought at Gettysburg. He was in Pickett’s Charge (above) and reached the Union lines first but was wounded and captured. Right: Thomas Massie Boyd (1837-1894: brother of Waller Massie Boyd), who was Captain of Company G, 19th Virginia Infantry, Confederate Army, until he resigned in March 1862.



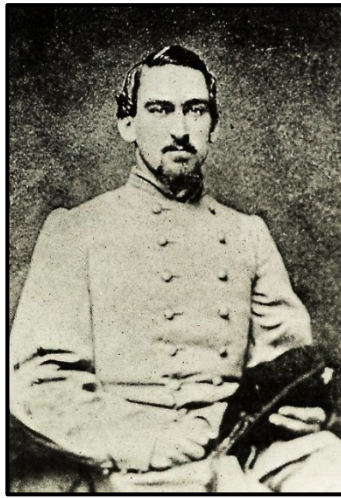
line in what came to be later called, “Pickett’s Charge.” He reached the Union lines first but was wounded and captured. Very few other soldiers reached the wall. He was later exchanged and promoted to major in

1864 but was later captured again on April 6, 1865. At the Battle of Gaines Mill he was

cited for bravery. He probably would have been awarded a Medal of Honor if the South had given such recognition. Before the Civil War began, he attended the Virginia Military Institute, where he didn't do well. His brother, Thomas Massie Boyd (1837-1894), served as Captain of Company G, 19th Virginia Infantry until he resigned in March 1862. Waller began his service under his brother. (The Farrar Family, pages 366-370; Worthy to Remember, pages 1076-1082.)

Powerful Railroad Leader in North Carolina

Alexander Boyd Andrews (1841-1915; son of Virginia Boyd Hawkins, daughter of Jane Anderson Boyd, daughter of Alexander Boyd, 6th Great-Granduncle) served as a lieutenant and a captain during the Civil War. He was wounded at Jack's Shop, Virginia, on September 22, 1863 (shot through the left lung) and paroled in Greensboro, North Carolina, on May 1, 1865, as a patient (Captain of Company B, 1st North Carolina Calvary). His portrait hangs in the North Carolina Museum of History in Raleigh. He was a chief officer of several major railroad companies and "played a key role in North Carolina's railroad industry" (The Farrar Family, pages 372-377; Worthy to Remember, pages 1082-1087).



Above: Alexander Boyd Andrews (1841-1915; son of Virginia Boyd Hawkins, daughter of Jane Anderson Boyd, daughter of Alexander Boyd, 6th Great-Granduncle) in Confederate officer's uniform during the Civil War. Alexander served as a lieutenant and a captain during the war. He was seriously wounded at Jack's Shop, Virginia, on September 22, 1863, but remained in service until the end of the war (Captain of Company B, 1st North Carolina Calvary, C.S.A.). His portrait (above right) hangs in the North Carolina Museum of History in Raleigh, Alexander was a chief officer of several major railroad companies and "played a key role in North Carolina's railroad industry."

Governor of North Carolina

Governor William Hawkins (husband of Ann Swepson Boyd, daughter of Alexander Boyd, 6th Great-Granduncle) "was born at his family plantation, called Pleasant Hill, in what is today Vance County, North Carolina; he was one of twelve children born by his mother Lucy Davis Hawkins. His father, Philemon Hawkins III, was a planter and member of the North Carolina General Assembly.

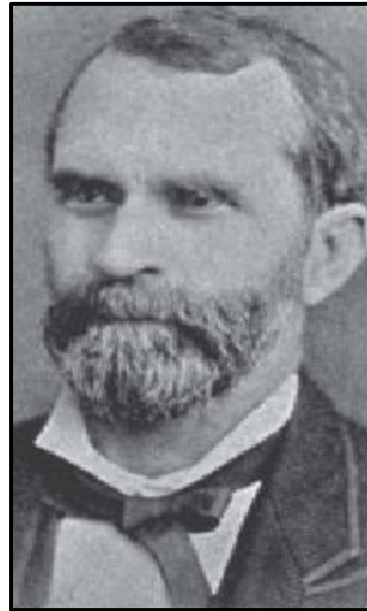
"As a young man, Hawkins studied law in North Carolina under Judge John Williams and at Princeton University. Hawkins worked for two years in Georgia with the Creek people as an Indian agent under his uncle, Benjamin Hawkins, U.S. Supervisor of Southeast Indian tribes. After that, he returned to North Carolina to practice law. In 1801, he was assigned by Gov. James Turner to settle a dispute and arrange a settlement with those Tuscarora

Indians remaining in Bertie County, North Carolina.” (The great majority of the tribe had migrated to New York State by 1722, where they settled with the Oneida people of the Iroquois Confederacy.)



“In 1804, Hawkins was elected to the North Carolina House of Commons from Warren County and served a single term. In 1809, he was elected as a representative from Granville County; he served until 1811. From 1810 to 1811, he was Speaker of the House.”

“In December 1811, Hawkins was elected as Governor of North Carolina by the General Assembly. He served the constitutional limit of three terms, which coincided with the duration of the War of 1812 through 1814. During the war, he supported the military efforts of the federal government and assisted in raising a volunteer militia of 7,000 troops.”



Above: William Hawkins (husband of Ann Swepson Boyd, daughter of Alexander Boyd, 6th Great-Granduncle), who was governor of North Carolina during the War of 1812, from 1812 to 1814. **Right: Fletcher Summerfield Stockdale** (1823-1890; husband of Elizabeth Anne Pryor, 1822-1865, daughter of Virginia Boyd, daughter of David Boyd, son of Alexander Boyd, 6th Great-Granduncle), Lt. Governor of Texas from 1863 to 1865. He was Governor of Texas for three months in 1865, when the elected Governor fled to Mexico.

“Hawkins retired from politics after the end of his term as governor, except for one term in the House of Commons in 1817. He died in 1819 and is buried in Sparta, Georgia.”

“After getting started at work, Hawkins in 1803 married Anne Swepson Boyd of Mecklenburg County, Virginia. They had six children together.” (Wikipedia) (The Farrar Family, page 356.)

Governor of Texas

Governor Fletcher Summerfield Stockdale (1823-1890; husband of Elizabeth Anne Pryor Stockdale, 1822-1865, daughter of Virginia Boyd, daughter of David Boyd, son of Alexander Boyd, 6th Great-Granduncle) served as Lt. Governor of Texas and became Governor of Texas for three months in 1865 when the elected governor fled to Mexico. (Farrar Family, page 361)

Fought in Battle of Agincourt (1415)

Thomas de Morley (18th Great-Grandfather; 1393-1435, a commander at Agincourt under

Humphrey, Duke of Gloucester, who was brother of King Henry V—Humphrey was wounded in the battle), **John Clifford, 7th Baron de Clifford** (17th Great-Grandfather; 1389-1422; served Henry V “with

Top: Depiction of the Battle of Agincourt. Thomas de Morley (18th Great-Grandfather; 1393-1435), John Clifford, 7th Baron de Clifford (17th Great-Grandfather; 1389-1422), Thomas de Camoys, 1st Baron Camoys, (second husband of Lady Elizabeth Percy, 17th Great-Grandmother), Michael de la Pole, 3rd Earl of Suffolk (17th Great-Granduncle; 1394-1415; died in the Battle of Agincourt), and Ralph de Bostock (19th Great-Grandfather; 1392-1421) all fought the French Army on October 25, 1415, Right: Depiction of the Battle of Crecy, made 80 years after this major English victory. Henry Percy, 3rd Baron Percy (1321-1368; 20th Great-Grandfather), William de Ros, 3rd Baron de Ros of Helms-ley (18th Great-Granduncle; 1329-1352), John de Wingfield (20th Great-Grandfather; died circa 1361; two of his brothers also fought with him at Crecy), Thomas de Beauchamp, 11th Earl of Warwick (20th Great-Grandfather; 1313-1369, “many of his relatives were killed in this battle”), Sir Hugh Hastings (20th Great-Grandfather; 1307-1347), Ralph de Stafford (20th Great-Grandfather; 1301-1372), Alan la Zouche de Mortimer (19th Great-Granduncle) and John de Beauchamp (20th Great-Granduncle) fought in this major battle on August 26, 1346.



three archers”), Thomas de Camoys, 1st Baron Camoys, (second husband of **Lady Elizabeth Percy**, 17th Great-Grandmother; commanded the rear-guard of the English Army), **Michael de la Pole, 3rd Earl of Suffolk** (17th Great-Granduncle; 1394-1415, died in the Battle of Agincourt), and **Ralph de Bostock** (19th Great-Grandfather; 1392-1421, knighted after the battle) all fought the French Army on October 25, 1415, in Northern France. Although the English Army was greatly outnumbered it had a complete victory thanks to the effectiveness of the English longbow.

“Agincourt is one of England’s most celebrated victories and was one of the most important English triumphs in the Hundred Years’ War, along with the Battle of Crécy (1346) and the Battle of Poitiers (1356).” Approximately 6,000 to 8,100 soldiers in the English Army (up to 600 killed) fought against 14,000 to 25,000 soldiers (if counting armed servants) in the French Army (6,000 killed, most of whom were of the French

nobility, and 700-2,200 captured). (Wikipedia) (The Farrar Family, pages 382, 638, 774-775; The Jefferson Family, page 175.)

Fought in Battle of Crécy (1346)

Henry Percy, 3rd Baron Percy (20th Great-Grandfather; 1321-1368), **William de Ros, 3rd**



Above: Depiction of the French and English armies engaged in a battle in the 14th century by Jean Froissart.

Baron de Ros of Helmsley

(18th Great-Granduncle; 1329–1352; led the second division in the Battle of Crécy), **Sir**

John de Wingfield (20th Great-Grandfather; died circa 1361; two of his brothers also fought with him at Crécy),

Thomas de Beauchamp, 11th Earl of Warwick, KG

(20th Great-Grandfather; 1313–1369 commanded the center at the Battle of Crécy; “many of his relatives were killed in this battle”),

Sir Hugh Hastings (20th Great-Grandfather;

1307-1347), **Ralph de Staf-**

ford, 2nd Baron Stafford,

1st Earl of Stafford, KG

(20th Great-Grandfather; 1301-1372), **Alan la Zouche de**

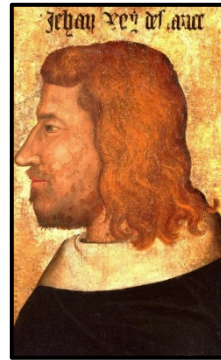
Mortimer (19th Great-Granduncle; younger half-brother of Thomas de Beauchamp), **John de Beauchamp** (20th Great-Granduncle; carried the royal standard at the Battle of Crécy), and **Sir Adam de Bostock** (21st Great-Grandfather; 1330-1374) all fought in this great victory of the English Army over the French Army on August 26, 1346, in Northern France. (The Farrar Family, pages 655-656, 689-690, 701-706, 740, 785-787, 800-803, and 886-891; The Jefferson Family, pages 170-171; Worthy to Remember, pages 655-656, 689-690, 701-706, 740, 785-787, 800-803, and 886-891.)

The “Battle of Crécy, which was fought on August 26, 1346, resulted in a victory for the English in the first decade of the Hundred Years’ War against the French. The battle at Crécy shocked European leaders because a small but disciplined English force fighting on foot had overwhelmed the finest cavalry in Europe.” 10,000 to 15,000 soldiers in the English Army (40 to 300 killed) fought against 20,000 to 30,000 soldiers in the French Army (at least 4,000 killed, including 1,542 nobles). (Wikipedia)

Fought in Battle of Poitiers (1356)

Sir Adam de Bostock (21st Great-Grandfather; 1330-1374), **Edward le Despencer, 1st Baron le Despencer** (19th Great-Grandfather; 1335-1375; famous keeling knight of

Tewkesbury Abbey), **Sir John de Wingfield** (20th Great-Grandfather; died circa 1361; chief administrator to Edward the Black Prince; captured Sire D’Aubigny, the head of the



French King John II’s bodyguard—Edward III purchased this captive from Wingfield for £833), and **Thomas de Beauchamp, 11th Earl of Warwick** (20th Great-Grandfather;

Above left: Battle of Poitiers (image from a 15th-century, illuminated manuscript by Jean Froissart), which took place September 19, 1356, near Poitiers, France. Adam de Bostock (22nd Great-Grandfather), Edward le Despencer, 1st Baron le Despencer (19th Great-Grandfather; 1335-1375), Sir John de Wingfield (20th Great-Grandfather; died circa 1361), and Thomas de Beauchamp, 11th Earl of Warwick (20th Great-Grandfather; 1313–1369) fought in this battle, which was a decisive victory for the English with the French king, Jean II (John II), being captured. Top right: Jean II (John II), the Good, King of France, painted on a wooden panel around 1350; now in the Louvre Museum. Right: Contemporary picture from 1349/1350 depicting the Black Death in London. It is interesting to note that the Battle of Poitiers was fought just six years after the Black Death had killed at least a third, and perhaps half, of the population of France and England. Destruction even on this scale didn’t keep the countries from fighting a terrible war.



1313–1369; commanded a flank of the longbowmen at Poitiers; he was earlier at the Siege of Calais in 1346-1347). (The Farrar Family, pages; 727, 785-786, 886-887; The Jefferson Family, pages 170-171; Worthy to Remember, pages 655-656.)

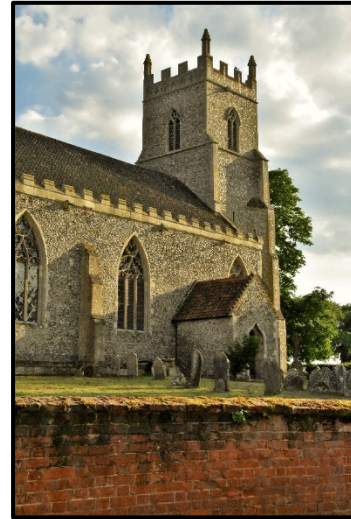
“The Battle of Poitiers was a major English victory in the Hundred Years’ War. It was fought on September

19, 1356, in Nouaillé, near the city of Poitiers in Aquitaine, western France. Edward, the Black Prince, led an army of English, Welsh, Breton and Gascon troops, many of them veterans of the Battle of Crécy. They were attacked by a larger French force led by King John II of France, which included allied Scottish forces. The French were heavily defeated; an English counterattack captured King John, along with his youngest son, and much of the French nobility who were present.” 6,000 soldiers in the English Army (344 killed) fought against 11,000 (2,500 killed and 1,900 captured) soldiers in the French Army. (Wikipedia)

Finest and Largest Brass Grave Slab in England

Sir Hugh Hastings (20th Great-Grandfather; 1307-1347) fought in the Battle of Crecy with his friend, King Edward III, who attended his funeral. “The largest of all English brasses”

was placed over his burial in St. Mary the Virgin Church in Elsing, Norfolk, England,



Above: Close-up of brass of Sir Hugh Hastings (20th Great-Grandfather). His brass is considered one of the finest ever made and is “the largest of all English church brasses.” Depicted on the mourner’s panels are his friends who were some of the greatest men of their age and five of the eight are also close relatives: Almaric St Amand, King Edward III, Henry Plantagenet Earl of Leicester, Ralph de Stafford 1st Earl of Stafford (20th Great-Grandfather), Sir Roger Grey (20th Great-Granduncle), Thomas Beauchamp 11th Earl of Warwick (20th Great-Grandfather), Edward le Despencer (20th Great-Grandfather), and Laurence Hastings, 1st Earl of Pembroke (20th Great-Granduncle). Most had served together in the French wars. Right: St. Mary the Virgin Church in Elsing, Norfolk, England, which Sir Hugh Hastings built and where he is buried. I visited the church and saw his brass in May 2017.

which he built. It features eight images of his friends who were some of the greatest men of their age and five of them are close relatives: Almaric St Amand, King Edward III, Henry Plantagenet Earl of Leicester, Ralph de Stafford 1st Earl of Stafford (20th Great-Grandfather), Sir Roger Grey (20th Great-Granduncle), Thomas Beauchamp

11th Earl of Warwick (20th Great-Grandfather), Edward le Despencer (20th Great-Grandfather), and Laurence Hastings, 1st Earl of Pembroke (20th Great-Granduncle). Most had served together in the French wars. (The Farrar Family, pages 701-706; Worthy to Remember, pages 1413-1417.)

Constable of York and Scarborough Castles

Sir John Deville, Knight (23rd Great-Grandfather; died before October 1291) was ap-



Above: A panorama of 15th century York, England, by E. Ridsdale Tate. Right: York Castle and Scarborough Castle (lower right). Sir John Deville (23rd Great-Grandfather) was appointed constable of York Castle in 1261, and constable of Scarborough Castle in 1264.

pointed constable of York Castle in 1261, and constable of Scarborough Castle in 1264 (The Farrar Family, pages 710-711).



Excellent Effigies

Sir Adam de Everingham, 1st Baron Everingham, K.B. (22nd Great-Grandfather; 1279-1341), of Laxton and Everingham, in Nottinghamshire, England, was the son and heir of **Sir Robert de Everingham** and his wife **Alice De La Hyde**. He was married twice, first to **Clarice de La Warre** (born 1285 in Isfield, East Sussex, England; died August 25, 1321, in Compton Martin, Somerset, England; buried in St. Michael's Church in Laxton, Nottinghamshire, England—has effigy; daughter of Roger de la Warre, 1st Baron la Ware and Clarice de Tregoz, the daughter of John de Tregoz and Mabel FitzWarin) on January 2, 1306, and second to Margaret the widow of Sir John de Eville. Sir Adam de Everingham had five known sons: **Adam**, his eldest and heir, Robert, Edmund, Alexander, and Nicholas de Everingham. Sir Adam de Everingham died by May 8, 1341, and was buried in a tomb in Laxton Church. His effigy and those of his two wives are next to him. Margaret, carved in oak, is in the foreground. The tomb and effigy of his father, Sir Robert de Everingham, is also found in St. Michael Laxton Church.” (Find a grave)



“Sir Adam de Everingham, 1st Baron Everingham took part in the Invasion of Scotland in



Top: Effigies of Sir Adam de Everingham (22nd Great-Grandfather; 1249-1341), 1st Lord Everingham, and his wife: Clarice de la Warre (22nd Great-Grandmother; 1285-1321) in St. Michael's Church (above) in Laxton, England (left). **Middle:** Rebecca Martin next to the effigies of her 23rd Great-Grandparents in May 2017. A castle once stood near the church.

1296 and was at the Siege of Carlaverock in 1300. He was made Knight of the Bath at the Knighting of Edward II at the Feast of the Swans in 1306. Summoned to Parliament by Writ in 1309. He fought in the Anglo-Scottish Wars from 1295 to 1319 and taken prisoner

at the Battle of Boroughbridge in 1322, where he was forced to pay 400 marks for his re-



Left: Effigy of Sir Robert de Everingham (23rd Great-Grandfather; 1256-1287), in St. Michael's Church in Laxton, England, in May 2017. Sir Robert was visited by King Edward I and his much-beloved Queen, Eleanor (above, their likenesses carved in stone on the exterior of St. Michael's), just four days before she died on November 28, 1290. She was 49. Below: Conisbrough Castle in Yorkshire, England (2017), which was built of stone by Hamelin de Warren (27th Great-Granduncle; circa 1129-1202) and his son, William de Warren (26th Great-Grandfather), It is famous for its huge cylindrical keep. King John stayed at the castle in 1201.

lease”(Wikipedia) (The Farrar Family, pages; 712-719; Worthy to Remember, pages 1424-1431.)

Built a Great Castle

Hamelin de Warren (27th Great-Granduncle; circa 1129—1202), a half-brother of King Henry II of England, was prominent at the courts of the

Plantagenet kings of England, Henry II and his sons Richard I and John.” (He was an uncle of King Richard I and of King John.)

Hamelin de Warren acquired Conisbrough Castle by marriage in the 12th century, a medieval fortification in Conisbrough, South Yorkshire, England. The castle was initially built in the 11th century by **William de Warenne** 1st Earl of Surrey (30th Great-Grandfather; died 1088) after the Norman conquest of England in 1066. Hamelin and his son, **William de Warren** (26th Great-Grandfather), rebuilt the castle in high quality stone, including its prominent 92 foot-high keep. The castle remained in the family line into the 14th century, despite being seized several times by the Crown. The fortification was then given to Edmund of Langley, passing back into royal ownership in 1461 (The Farrar Family, pages 719-722; Worthy to Remember, pages 1431-1434).



Died in Second Crusade

William de Warenne, 3rd Earl of Surrey (1119–1148; 28th Great-Grandfather) “was an Anglo-Norman nobleman who fought in England during the Anarchy and generally remained loyal to King Stephen.”



“He was one of the nobles who, along with his second cousin, King Louis VII of France, took crusading vows at Vezelay in 1146, and he accompanied the initial army of the Second Crusade the

Left: *Salisbury Cathedral* by John Constable, circa 1825. William de Warenne, 5th Earl of Surrey (26th Great-Granduncle; died 1240) “was responsible for the establishment of Salisbury Cathedral.” The cathedral has the tallest church spire, the largest cloister, and the largest cathedral close in the United Kingdom. It also contains the world’s oldest working clock (from 1386 A.D.). Middle: Tomb and effigy of William Longespee, 3rd Earl of Salisbury (25th Great-Granduncle; 1176–1226) in Salisbury Cathedral. His shield, displaying his coat of arms, is one of the best preserved from any medieval tomb in England. His death at the age of fifty was certainly caused by an enemy poisoning him in 1226. This was proven when his tomb was opened in 1791 and a rat was discovered in his skull with traces of arsenic.



next year. He was killed at the Battle of Mount Cadmus while the crusader army was marching across Anatolia on their way to the Holy Land.” (William was consider the most important noble killed in this battle. King Louis VII barely escaped with his life.) (The Farrar Family, pages 723-725; Worthy to Remember, pages 1435-1437.)

Established Salisbury Cathedral—Poisoned, then First Burial in Church

William de Warenne, 5th Earl of Surrey (26th Great-Granduncle; died May 27, 1240) “was responsible for the establishment of Salisbury Cathedral.”

“The foundation stones were laid on April 28, 1220, by **William Longespee** (25th Great-Granduncle; 1176-1226; first burial in Salisbury Cathedral) and by his wife, Ela of Salis-



Above: “Detail of a miniature (1332-1350) of King Philip Augustus of France awaiting his fleet.” In 1213, the English knew that King Philip II of France was planning to invade England. So while the French fleet was in Flanders, he sent 500 ships under the command of William Longespee, 3rd Earl of Salisbury (25th Great-Granduncle; circa 1176–1226) to make a preemptive strike. Longespee found a huge French armada of 1700 ships heavily laden with supplies and personal goods of the French barons. “Most of the French army was away besieging Ghent, and so the fleet was only lightly guarded. The English immediately attacked, seizing 300 ships which were anchored or beached outside the harbor of Damme, and pillaging and burning a hundred more. The next day they attacked the rest of the ships as well as the town itself. They returned to England with the seized ships and a huge amount of treasure. Not only was a good portion of the French fleet gone, but the harbor of Damme was blocked by debris, so King Philip had the rest of his fleet burned.” It was a total English victory, owed, at least in part, to the leadership of Longespee. Below: Rebecca Martin at the effigy of William Longespee, her 26th Great-Granduncle, in 2002.

bury, 3rd Countess of Salisbury (1187-1261).” William Longespee was an illegitimate son of Henry II, King of England.

“In 1213, Salisbury led a large fleet to Flanders, where he seized or destroyed a good part of a French invasion fleet anchored at or near Damme. This ended the invasion threat but not the conflicts between England and France. In 1214, Salisbury was sent to help Otto IV of Germany, an English ally, who was invading France. Salisbury commanded the right wing of the army at their disastrous defeat in that year at the Battle of Bouvines, where he was captured.”



“By the time he returned to England, revolt was brewing amongst the barons. Salisbury was one of the few who remained loyal to John, except for a few months in 1216. In the civil war that took place the year after the signing of the Magna Carta, Salisbury was one

of the leaders of the king's army in the south. He was made High Sheriff of Wiltshire again, this time for life. After raising the siege of Lincoln with William Marshal he was also



Above: Magnificent representation of Edward le Despenser (19th Great-Grandfather; 1335-1375) looking towards the altar in an attitude of prayer, Tewkesbury Abbey, England; June 2016. He was described as “the most honorable, gallant, and valiant knight in all England.”

his return to England at Salisbury Castle. Roger of Wendover alleged that he was poisoned by Hubert de Burgh. Salisbury's tomb was opened in 1791. Bizarrely, the well-preserved corpse of a rat which carried traces of arsenic, was found inside his skull. The rat is now on display in Salisbury Cathedral Chapter House.” (Wikipedia) (The Farrar Family, pages 758-764; Worthy to Remember, pages 1470-1476.)

Famous Kneeling Knight of Tewkesbury

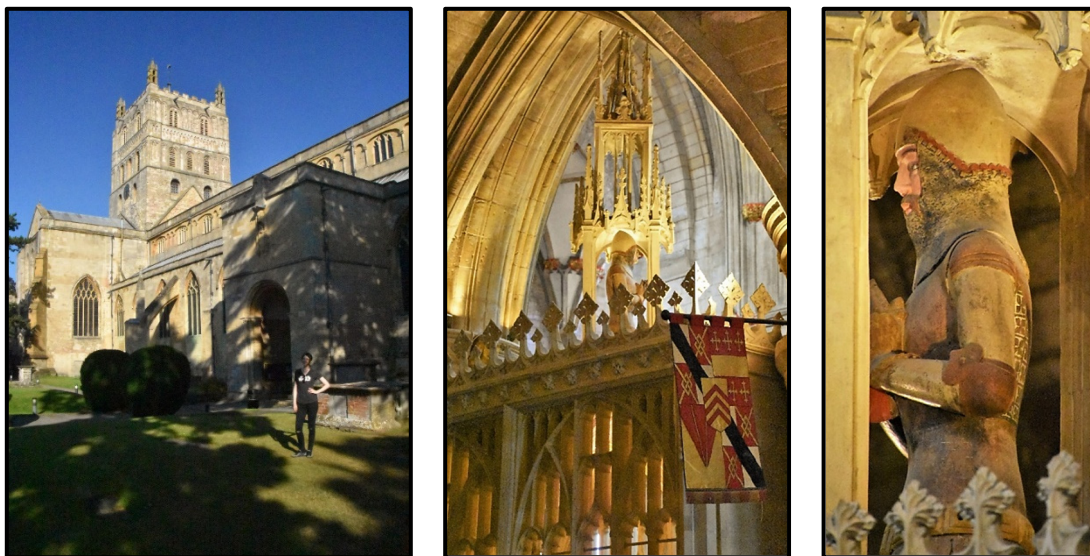
Edward le Despenser, 1st Baron le Despencer, KG (also called Despenser) (19th Great-

appointed High Sheriff of Lincolnshire (in addition to his current post as High Sheriff of Somerset) and governor of Lincoln Castle. However, after the French prince Louis (later Louis VIII) landed as an ally of the rebels, Salisbury went over to his side. Presumably, he thought John's cause was lost.”

“After John's death and the departure of Louis, Salisbury, along with many other barons, joined the cause of John's young son, now Henry III of England. He held an influential place in the government during the king's minority and fought in Gascony to help secure the remaining part of the English continental possessions. He was appointed High Sheriff of Devon in 1217 and High Sheriff of Staffordshire and Shropshire in 1224. Salisbury's ship was nearly lost in a storm while returning to England in 1225, and he spent some months in refuge at a monastery on the French island of Ré.”

“Salisbury died not long after

Grandfather; 1335-1375) went with Edward the Black Prince to France and held high



Above: The chantry of Lord Edward le Despenser (19th Great-Grandfather; 1335-1375) in Tewkesbury Abbey (above left) in 2016. Right: Stained-glass depiction of Hugh Despenser the Younger (21st Great-Grandfather; 1286-1326) in Tewkesbury Abbey. He was a Favorite of King Edward II and a victim of his downfall. He was the founder of the Despenser dynasty at Tewkesbury, which lasted until the early fifteenth century.

command at the Battle of Poitiers. In recognition of his conduct in the French wars, he was summoned to Parliament as a baron in 1357. At the same time, he also became a Knight of the Garter.”

“There is a kneeling statue of him on the top of the Holy Trinity Chantry Chapel in Tewkesbury Abbey. He is the famous Kneeling Knight of Tewkesbury—The attitude and position of the figure make it unique, and it is probably the finest monument of its period and type in existence” (The Farrar Family, pages 727-730; Worthy to Remember, pages 1439-1441).

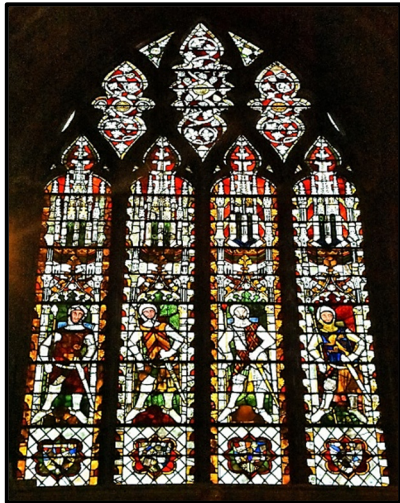
Hanged, Drawn, and Quartered

Hugh le Despenser, 1st Lord Despenser

(21st Great-Grandfather; also 20th Great-Granduncle through another line; born circa 1286; died November 24, 1326), “also referred to as ‘the younger Despenser,’ was the son and



heir of **Hugh le Despenser**, Earl of Winchester (the elder Despenser), and **Isabella** daugh-



ter of **William de Beauchamp, 9th Earl of Warwick**. He rose to national prominence as royal chamberlain and a favorite of Edward II of England. A series of subsequent controversies eventually led to his being hanged, drawn and quartered.”



Above: The execution of Hugh le Despenser the younger (21st Great-Grandfather; 1286-1326) from a manuscript of Jean Froissart (1337-1405). He had his genitals sliced off and burned in his still-conscious sight, then his entrails slowly pulled out, and, finally, his heart cut out and thrown into the fire, and/or some combination of the above and quartered, hanged, and beheaded. “Finally, his corpse was beheaded, his body cut into four pieces, and his head mounted on the gates of London.” His wife was able to get his head and a few parts back to bury in Tewkesbury Abbey (interior, left). In spite of everything, his wife loved him and buried him in one of the finest tombs ever created (partly destroyed) and depicted him in a stained-glass window (top left, third knight from left).

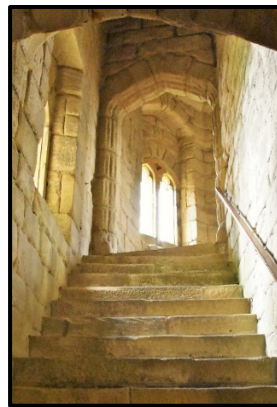
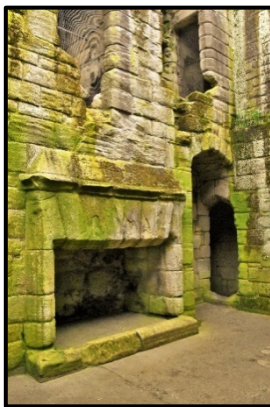
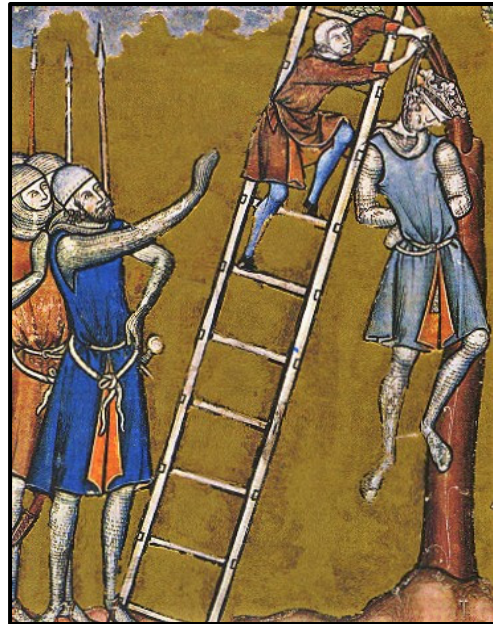
Hugh le Despenser the younger and his rich wife, **Eleanor de Clare** (1292-1337; 21st Great-Grandmother), niece of King Edward II, and daughter of **Gilbert de Clare**, 9th Lord of Clare and 7th Earl of Hertford, and **Joan of Acre**, had nine children to survive infancy. Eleanor commissioned the stained-glass windows in the choir of Tewkesbury Abbey, which include the armor-clad figures of Eleanor’s ancestors, brother, and two husbands. Her ancestors include the great William Marshal, King Edward I, King Henry III, and Ferdinand III, King of Castile (who was canonized in 1671), among many other great ones.

Hugh is listed as the worse Briton to live from 1300 A.D. to 1400 A.D. according to historians for *BBC History Magazine* in an article dated December 27, 2005. “He became one of the richest men in the kingdom by ruthlessly eliminating his enemies and greedily seizing land in South Wales.” Others on the list were Jack the Ripper from 1800-1900, King John from 1200-1300 (“Captured and apparently murdered his nephew, Arthur of

Brittany, who was his rival for the throne after the death of Richard the Lionheart in 1199”) and, surprise, Thomas Becket, Archbishop of Canterbury from 1100-1200 (“He divided England by quarrelling with King Henry II over the rights of the church.”). (The Farrar Family, pages 731-740; Worthy to Remember, pages 1443-1453.)

Hanged

Hugh le Despenser (22nd Great-Grandfather; born March 1, 1261; died October 27, 1326),



“sometimes referred to as ‘the Elder Despenser,’ was for a time the chief adviser to King Edward II of England.”

“He served Edward I on numerous occasions in battle and in diplomacy and was created a baron by writ of summons to Parliament in 1295.”

“Despenser was hanged in his armor at Bristol on October 27, 1326. He was then beheaded and his body cut into pieces for the dogs. His head was sent for display to Winchester, which had supported the king” (The Farrar Family, pages 748-749; Worthy to Remember, pages 1460-1461).

Top; Medieval depiction of a hanging. Hugh le Despenser the elder (22nd Great-Grandfather; 1261-1326) was hanged at Bristol in his armor on October 26, 1326. Above: Warkworth Castle, the home of Henry Percy “Hotspur” (18th Great-Grandfather; 1364-1403) in Northumberland, England, and the main fireplace and stairway inside the keep of the castle (left); 2016. Top left: Alnwick Castle, the seat of the Percy family. Now it’s a major tourist attraction with over 800,000 people visiting each year. Hotspur was one of the most dynamic leaders of his age and is one of the best-known characters in Shakespeare’s *Henry IV*.

Mighty Leader of Northern England

Sir Henry Percy KG (18th Great-Grandfather; May 20, 1364—July 21, 1403), “commonly known as *Sir Harry Hotspur*, or simply *Hotspur*, was a late medieval English nobleman. He was a significant captain during the Anglo-Scottish



Above: Signature of Henry Percy (18th Great-Grandfather; 1364–1403) of Northumberland, aka Harry Hotspur. Left: Arms of Henry Hotspur Percy. Lower left: The Pennon or banner flown by Hotspur and taken from him in combat by James Douglas, Earl of Douglas.

wars. He later led successive rebellions against Henry IV of England and was slain at the Battle of Shrewsbury in 1403 at the height of his career.”



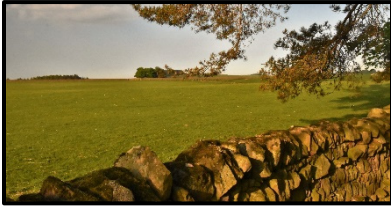
Career: “Henry Percy was born May 20, 1364, at either Alnwick Castle or Warkworth Castle in Northumberland, the eldest son of **Henry Percy**, 1st Earl of Northumberland, and **Margaret Neville** (19th Great-Grandparents), daughter of **Ralph de Neville** (20th Great-Grandfather), 2nd Lord Neville of Raby, and **Alice de Audley**. He was knighted by King Edward III in April 1377, together with the future kings, Richard II and Henry IV. In 1380, he was in Ireland with the Earl of March, and in 1383, he travelled in Prussia. He was appointed warden of the east march on July 30, 1384, and in 1385, accompanied Richard II on an expedition into Scotland. ‘As a tribute to his speed in advance and readiness

to attack’ on the Scottish borders, the Scots bestowed on him the name ‘Haatspore.’ In April 1386, he was sent to France to reinforce the garrison at Calais and led raids into Picardy. Between August and October 1387, he was in command of a naval force in an attempt to relieve the siege of Brest. In appreciation of these military endeavors, he was made a Knight of the Garter in 1388. Reappointed as warden of the east march, he commanded the English forces against James Douglas, 2nd Earl of Douglas, at the Battle of Otterburn on August 10, 1388, where he was captured, but soon ransomed for a fee of 7,000 marks.”

During the next few years Percy’s reputation continued to grow. He was sent on a diplomatic mission to Cyprus in June 1393 and appointed Governor of Bordeaux, deputy to John of Gaunt, 1st Duke of Lancaster, in the Duchy of Aquitaine. He returned to England in January 1395, taking part in Richard II’s expedition to Ireland, and was back in Aquitaine the following autumn. In the summer of 1396, he was again in Calais.”

“Percy’s military and diplomatic service brought him substantial marks of royal favor in

the form of grants and appointments, but despite this, the Percy family decided to support



Right: I'm standing next to an ancient monument called Percy's Cross, marking the site of the Battle of Otterburn (above) in May 2017. The battle was fought a mile from Otterburn, Northumberland, England, 31 miles northwest of Newcastle-Upon-Tyne on August 19, 1388. Harry "Hotspur" Percy (18th Great-Grandfather; 1364-1403) lost the battle because he impetuously attacked without letting his men rest after their long march north. He was captured and soon ransomed for 7,000 marks. The great Scottish commander, James Douglas, 2nd Earl of Douglas (1358-1388), was killed.



Henry Bolingbroke, the future Henry IV, in his rebellion against Richard II. On Henry's return from exile in June 1399, Percy and his father joined his forces at Doncaster and marched south with them. After King Richard's deposition, Percy and his father were 'lavishly rewarded' with lands and offices."

"Under the new king, Percy had extensive civil and military responsibility in both the east march towards Scotland and in north Wales, where he was appointed High Sheriff of Flintshire in 1399. In north Wales, he was under increasing pressure as a result of the rebellion of Owain Glyn Dŵr. In March 1402, Henry IV appointed Percy royal lieutenant in north Wales, and on September 14, 1402, Percy, his father, and the Earl of Dunbar and March were victorious against a Scottish force at the Battle of Homildon Hill. Among others, they made a prisoner of Archibald Douglas, 4th Earl of Douglas."

Rebellion and death: "In spite of the favor that Henry IV showed the Percys in many respects, they became increasingly discontented with him. Among their grievances was the king's failure to pay the wages due to them for defending the Scottish border; his favor towards Dunbar; his demand that the Percys hand over their Scottish prisoners; his failure to put an end to Owain Glyn Dŵr's rebellion through a negotiated settlement; his increasing

promotion of his son, Prince Henry's military authority in Wales; and his failure to ransom



Henry Percy's brother-in-law, Sir Edmund Mortimer, whom the Welsh had captured in June 1402."

"Spurred on by these grievances, the Percys rebelled in the summer of 1403 and took up arms against the king. According to J. M. W. Bean, it is clear that the



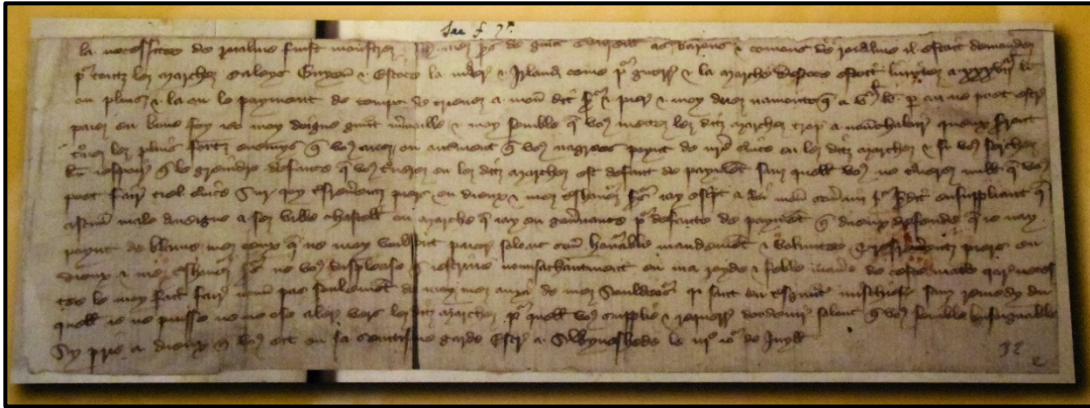
arrived at Shrewsbury on July 21, 1403, where they encountered the king with a large army. The ensuing Battle of Shrewsbury was fierce, with heavy casualties on both sides, but when Henry Percy himself was struck down and killed, his own forces fled."

"Shortly after Henry died in battle, his uncle was executed. An attainder was issued and the family's property, including Wressle Castle in Yorkshire, was confiscated by the Crown. The Earl of Worcester was executed two days later."



Above: Statue of Henry Hotspur Percy (18th Great-Grandfather) on horseback in Alnwick Castle in June 2016. Hotspur is still honored today in Northumberland and other parts of England. Even a professional soccer team is named in his honor. The Tottenham Hotspur Football Team (located in north London) plays in the Premier League, the country's highest level of competition. Above: Shrewsbury Battle Church and grounds where the Battle of Shrewsbury was fought on July 21, 1403. "Harry Hotspur" lost his life in this fight, probably from an arrow to the head. It is said that King Henry IV (1367-1413; left from an illumination made in 1402) wept when he saw his body.

“King Henry, upon being brought Percy’s body after the battle, is said to have wept. The



There are five letters known to have been written by Henry Hotspur Percy (18th Great-Grandfather; 1364-1403). Above is a copy of his final letter written in 1402. “In this letter he has lost all patience and makes some thinly veiled threats. The Lords of the Council had convinced Parliament that during the time of the war the Marches and other troubled areas such as Calais and Ireland should have an allowance of 37,000 pounds per annum, and yet the truce time payment of 5,000 pounds owing to him and his father could not be paid. Hotspur has this to say: ‘In good faith it is a great marvel to me, and it appears to me that you are too neglectful of the said Marches, which will be found the most powerful enemies that you have, or otherwise that you are not satisfied with our service in the said Marches...I have written to the king, my sovereign Lord aforesaid, in supplication that if anything bad should happen to his towns, castles or the March, which I have in governance, because of the default of payment (God prevent!), that no blame will attach to me, according to his honourable mandate and will.’ Hotspur signs off by half apologising for the abrupt and forthright nature of his letter: ‘Very reverend fathers in God and my very honoured Lords, be not displeased that I have written ignorantly in my rude and inferior manner on these matters, because necessity made me do it, not only for me, but also on behalf of my souldiers, who are in very great mischief, without remedy for which I neither can nor dare to go to the Marches, for which you supply and require to be ordered such measures as you deem fit. Pray God that you may be in his most holy keeping.’” Henry IV’s lack of appreciation for Hotspur’s recent victory over the Scots at Homildon Hill and other sacrifices in defending the realm, led to his rebellion against the king in 1403.

body was taken by Thomas Neville, 5th Baron Furnivall, to Whitchurch, Shropshire, for burial. However, when rumors circulated that Percy was still alive, the king ‘had the corpse exhumed and displayed it, propped upright between two millstones, in the market-place at Shrewsbury.’ That done, the king dispatched Percy’s head to York, where it was impaled on the Micklegate Bar (one of the city’s gates), whereas his four-quarters were sent to London, Newcastle upon Tyne, Bristol, and Chester before they were finally delivered to his widow. She had him buried in York Minster in November of that year. In January 1404, Percy was posthumously declared a traitor, and his lands were forfeited to the Crown.” (Wikipedia) (The Farrar Family, pages 639-647.)

Rebelled Against the King and Died in Battle

Henry Percy, 1st Earl of Northumberland, 4th Baron Percy, titular King of Mann KG, Lord Marshal (19th Grandfather; 1341-1408) was the son of Henry de Percy, 3rd Baron Percy, and a descendant of Henry III of England. His mother was Mary of Lancaster, daughter of Henry, 3rd Earl of Lancaster, son of Edmund, Earl of Leicester and Lancaster, who was the son of King Henry III.

“In 1408, Percy invaded England and was killed at the Battle of Bramham Moor. Percy’s severed head was subsequently put on display at London Bridge” (The Farrar Family, pages 652-655.)

Effigies in Westminster Abbey

Prince Edmond “Crouchback,” Earl of Lancaster (22nd Great-Grandfather; 1245-1296)



Above: Effigy of Prince Edmond “Crouchback” (22nd Great-Grandfather; 1245-1296) in Westminster Abbey. Right: Contemporary depiction of the “meeting of Henry Percy (19th Great-Grandfather; 1341-1408), 1st Earl of Northumberland, and King Richard II.”



“and his first wife Aveline de Forz (died childless in 1274) were the first royal couple to be married

in the newly built Westminster Abbey in April 1269. His father, **King Henry III** (23rd Great-Grandfather), had begun to rebuild the old Abbey of St Edward the Confessor in 1245 in the newest architectural style and the eastern section had been completed and richly decorated by the time of the marriage.” Both have effigies in Westminster Abbey in London, England.

Edmond married second, **Blanche of Artois** (22nd Grandmother; 1248-1302), who was the granddaughter of **Louis VIII** (24th Grandfather; 1187-1226; King of France from 1223 to 1226—this line goes back through the kings of France to Robert the Strong, 34th Great-Grandfather, 830-866 A.D.). Their son, Henry, 3rd Earl of Lancaster, was the father of Mary of Lancaster, the mother of Henry Percy, 1st Earl of Northumberland (see above). (Wikipedia)

Led the English Army to Victory at the Battle of Neville Cross

Ralph Neville, 2nd Baron Nevill de Raby (1291-1367) led the English forces to victory against the Scottish king David II of Scotland at the Battle of Neville’s Cross on October 17, 1346” (The Farrar Family, pages 656-657).

Granddaughter of Geoffrey Chaucer

Alice de la Pole, Duchess of Suffolk (1404–1475) “was a granddaughter of the English poet Geoffrey Chaucer (daughter of Thomas Chaucer, 1367-1434). Married three times, she eventually became a Lady of the Most Noble Order of the Garter, a rare honor for a woman.” She married third, **William de la Pole** (17th Great-Granduncle; 1396-1450), Earl and later Duke of Suffolk, by whom she had a son John in 1442 (who became 2nd Duke

of Suffolk in 1463). They had a friendship with King Henry VI and his wife, Margaret of Anjou. Margaret “held Suffolk in great esteem.”



Above: Effigy of Alice Chaucer (1404-1475; wife of William de la Pole, 1st Duke of Suffolk; 17th Great-Granduncle) in St. Mary’s Church, Ewelme, Oxfordshire, England, in June 2016. Alice was granddaughter of Geoffrey Chaucer, English poet and author of the *Canterbury Tales*. “He is widely considered the greatest English poet of the Middle Ages.” Left: A true likeness of Geoffrey Chaucer as a pilgrim in the Ellesmere Manuscript (an early 15th-century illuminated manuscript of the *Canterbury Tales*) and a portrait made of him by an unknown British artist in the 17th century.

“William de la Pole became a favorite of the weak king Henry VI of England, and consequently a leading figure in the English government where he became associated with many of the royal government’s failures of the time, particularly on the war in France. Suffolk also appears prominently in Shakespeare’s *Henry VI*, parts 1 and 2.”

“He fought in the Hundred Years’ War and participated in campaigns of Henry V, and then continued to serve in France for King Henry VI. He was one of the English commanders at the failed Siege of Orléans. He favored a diplomatic rather than military solution to the deteriorating situation in France, a stance which would later resonate well with King Henry VI.”

“Suffolk became a dominant figure in the government and was at the forefront of the main policies conducted during the period. He played a central role in organizing the Treaty of Tours (1444) and arranged the king’s marriage to Margaret of Anjou. At the end of Suffolk’s political career, he was accused of maladministration by many and forced into exile. At sea on his way out, he was caught by an angry mob, subjected to a mock trial, and beheaded.”

“His estates were forfeited to the crown but later restored to his only son, John. His political

successor was the Duke of Somerset.” (Wikipedia) (The Farrar Family, pages 778-783; Worthy to Remember, pages 1490-1495.)

Built the Second Largest Castle in Great Britain

Gilbert de Clare, 6th Earl of Hertford, 7th Earl of Gloucester, 3rd Lord of Glamorgan,



This page: Caerphilly Castle in Wales, which was built by Gilbert de Clare (22nd Great-Grandfather; 1243-1295). Construction began on the second largest castle in Great Britain in 1268, “with the majority of the construction occurring over the next three years at a considerable cost.”

9th Lord of Clare (22nd Great-Grandfather; born September 2, 1243; died December 7, 1295) “was a powerful Eng-

lish noble. Also known as ‘Red’ Gilbert de Clare or ‘The red earl,’ probably because of his hair color or fiery temper in battle. He held the Lordship of Glamorgan which was one of the most powerful and wealthy of the Welsh Marcher Lordships as well as over 200 English manors.”

In April 1264, Gilbert led the massacre of the Jews at Canterbury, which Simon de Montfort had encouraged his supporters to do “for the good of my soul, and the souls of

my ancestors and successors.” In some places they expelled the Jews and in others killed them. For this act Gilbert and his associates were excommunicated by the Pope.

He commanded the central division of the Montfort’s Baronial army at the Battle of Lewes and help lead them to victory over the king but changed sides the next year and “commanded the second division and contributed largely to the king’s victory” at the Battle of Eversham.

Caerphilly Castle “was constructed by Gilbert de Clare in the 13th century as part of his campaign to maintain control of Glamorgan, and saw extensive fighting between Gilbert, his descendants, and the native Welsh rulers. Surrounded by extensive artificial lakes—considered by historian Allen Brown to be ‘the most elaborate water defenses in all Britain’—it occupies around 30 acres and is the second largest castle in the United Kingdom. It is famous for having introduced concentric castle defenses to Britain and for its large gatehouses. Gilbert began work on the castle in 1268 following his occupation of the north of Glamorgan, with most of the construction occurring over the next three years at a considerable cost. The project was opposed by Gilbert’s Welsh rival Llywelyn ap Gruffudd, leading to the site being burnt in 1270 and taken over by royal officials in 1271. Despite these interruptions, Gilbert successfully completed the castle and took control of the region. The core of Caerphilly Castle, including the castle’s luxurious accommodation, was built on what became a central island, surrounded by several artificial lakes, a design Gilbert probably derived from that at Kenilworth. The dams for these lakes were further fortified, and an island to the west provided additional protection. The concentric rings of walls inspired Edward I’s castles in North Wales, and proved what historian Norman Pounds has termed ‘a turning point in the history of the castle in Britain.’” (Wikipedia) (The Farrar Family, pages 807-812) (Worthy to Remember, pages 1519-1524.)



Above: Depiction of Gilbert de Clare (22nd Great-Grandfather; 1243-1295) from the 1300’s on a stained-glass window in Tewkesbury Abbey, England, where he was buried; 2017.

Built a Famous Castle in Ireland

Thomas de Clare, 1st Lord of Thomond, 1st Lord of Inchiquin and Youghal (22nd Great-Granduncle; 1245-1287) “was a close friend and intimate advisor of Prince Edward of England, who in 1272 ascended to the throne as King Edward I. Together they took part in the Ninth Crusade. He held many important posts such as Governor of Colchester

Castle (1266) and Governor of the City of London (1273). He was made Commander of the



This page: Bunratty Castle (left in July 2018), one of the best-known castles in Ireland. In 1277 Thomas de Clare (22nd Great-Granduncle; circa 1245-1287) reconstructed Bunratty Castle in stone, replacing the earlier one made of wood. This building was destroyed and eventually replaced by the present castle in 1425. Thomas was a close friend and intimate advisor of Prince Edward of England, who ascended to the throne as King Edward I in 1272. Together they took part in the Ninth Crusade.

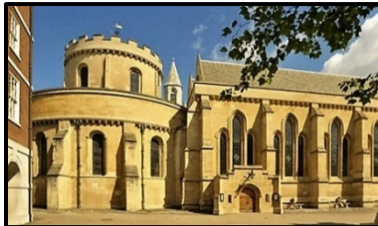
English forces in Munster, Ireland, and created Lord of Inchiquin and Youghal. On January 26, 1276, he was granted the entire lordship of Thomond by King Edward.”

He married the 12-year-old Juliana FitzGerald in 1275 and had four children, including Richard de Clare. “According to legend, the day before his death, Richard de Clare, son of Thomas de Clare, beheld a woman dressed in white on the river’s edge washing bloody clothing and armor. When he asked whose clothes they were, she replied, ‘yours,’ and then vanished. This woman was believed to be a banshee foretelling his death the next day when he lay dead with his clothes caked in blood on the battlefield of Dysert O’Dea.”

In 1277 Thomas de Clare reconstructed Bunratty Castle in stone, replacing the earlier one made of wood. This building was destroyed and eventually replaced by the present castle in 1425. Today it is one of the most visited castles in Ireland. (The Farrar Family, pages 820-822)

The Best Knight that Ever Lived

William Marshal, 1st Earl of Pembroke (25th Great-Grandfather; 1146/1147–May 14,



Above: Original effigy of William Marshal, 1st Earl of Pembroke (25th Great-Grandfather; 1146/1147–1219) in June 2016 in the Temple Church in downtown London (left), which was consecrated on February 10, 1185, with King Edward II (1154–1189) in attendance. The round church, 55 feet in diameter, is the original Temple Church and this is where William Marshal is buried. Top left: Arms of William Marshal by Matthew Paris, circa 1240. Left: Richard Martin (me) with my youngest daughter, Rebecca Martin (born 1995), standing next to the effigy of William Marshal, my 25th Great-Grandfather, in Temple Church in June 2016.

1219), also called William the Marshal (Norman French: *William le Mareschal*), “was an Anglo-Norman soldier and statesman. He served five English kings—The ‘Young King’ Henry, Henry II, Richard I, John, and Henry III.”

“Knighted in 1166, he spent his younger years as a knight errant and a successful

tournament competitor; Stephen Langton eulogized him as the ‘best knight that ever lived.’ In 1189, he became the *de facto* Earl of Pembroke through his marriage to Isabel de Clare.



Above: Effigies of William Marshal (24th Great-Granduncle; 1190-1231, left), son and heir of William Marshal, and his brother, Gilbert Marshal (1197-1241; right), which are located next to the effigy of their father in Temple Church, London (top right), in June 2016. Middle right: Pembroke Castle and Chepstow Castle in Wales. Two of the many castles owned by William Marshal (25th Great-Grandfather). Left: New Ross, Ireland, which was founded by William Marshal and Isabel de Clare (1172-1220) in the late 1100s. It was Ireland’s busiest port in the 13th century.

In 1216, he was appointed protector for the nine-year-old Henry III, and regent of the kingdom.”

“William was granted his first land—a ‘fief’ directly

from the King, in the year 1187. Upon accepting this gift, William Marshal declared his loyalty to Henry II and his rightful successors. This promise was never forgotten and is the reason William Marshal himself is remembered to this day.”

“When Henry II’s son, Richard I, came to the throne, William Marshal continued to prosper. He was a counselor, advisor, brother at arms and confidant of the new and vigorous king. So much did Richard trust Marshal that he bestowed upon him the hand of Isabel de Clare, who was the only surviving child of Richard Strongbow de Clare, Earl of Pembroke. With this marriage William Marshal became one of the most powerful Barons in England, with lands in England, Wales, Ireland and France.”

“William ruled his lands well, but unlike many of the Barons of the time, he never forgot his oath of loyalty to his direct feudal lord, Richard I. Nor did William merely ‘sit on’ his vast estates, but rather ran them efficiently, built extensively and is known to have been a good and wise ruler to those who now found themselves under his jurisdiction.”

“With the death of Richard the Lionheart, in 1199, England was thrown into ferment regarding the succession. William considered Richard’s brother John, to have the best claim to the throne, and duly bowed his knee to a man who was to use this loyal knight falsely. King John proved to have absolutely no ability to either ally himself with, or control, the, by now, powerful Barons of England, many of whom rebelled during John’s unfortunate reign. John took action against many, by either imprisoning them, confiscating their land, or removing their titles.”

“William Marshal never once faltered in his loyalty to King John and had already ably served two English monarchs and one heir apparent. Despite this, the despotic King John provoked William beyond reason, taking his castles, and seizing his two sons as hostages.”

“Despite the most incredible provocation, William Marshal retained his oath of allegiance to King John in a manner that sets him apart. This was a man to whom honor and chivalry were more important than life itself and remains the prime reason his name is not forgotten like those of many of his brother barons from the period.”

“There is little doubt that if William Marshal had sided with the rebelling Barons, King John would have lost his crown, and undoubtedly his life, but the Earl of Pembroke never wavered and gained tremendous respect from friends and enemies alike.”

“King John died in 1216. The heir to the throne, who now became Henry III, was a mere nine years of age and William Marshal was unanimously chosen as regent for the young monarch, a position which he filled without prejudice or expectation of any greater influence or preferment. By May 1217, Marshal was the chief architect of victory in the war against King Philip II of France. This magnificent man led an attack, which relieved the siege of Lincoln Castle, despite being seventy years of age. He was able to negotiate a peace treaty with the French and restored England to peace once more.”

“William Marshal was a man of great courage and physical stamina, but he was much more than a ferocious fighting machine. He proved to several monarchs that he could be a wise councilor, a fiercely loyal servant, and a true friend. By the end of his life his accumulated titles and accolades could fill a page on their own, and yet, it is said, he remained ever humble.” (Article about William Marshal by Alan Butler.) (The Farrar Family, pages 824-842; Worthy to Remember, pages 1536-1551.)

Knight was Six Foot Five Inches Tall

Sir John de Wingfield (20th Great-Grandfather; died circa 1361) “was chief administrator to Edward the Black Prince (1330-1376). He and both his brothers fought at Crecy in 1346. He fought in the Normandy campaign from 1347-1348. He was appointed ‘governor of

the prince's business' (in effect business-manager) to Edward the Black Prince round



about 1351. In 1356 Wingfield fought at Poitiers, capturing the head of the French King John II's bodyguard, Sire D'Aubigny. Edward III purchased this captive from Wingfield for £833. Wingfield died round about 1361, possibly of the second outbreak of



Above: Effigy of Sir John de Wingfield (20th Great-Grandfather; died circa 1361) in St. Andrew Church (top right) in Wingfield, Suffolk, England, which he founded, and the appearance of his effigy when it was painted. Wingfield was a tall man. His effigy is six feet, five inches in length. He was a friend and chief administrator for Edward the Black Prince (1330-1376). Right: Wingfield Castle, a fortified manor house, located in the village of Wingfield (2017), which was fortified by Sir John de Wingfield and inherited by his daughter and heiress, Catherine Wingfield, who married Michael de la Pole (19th Great-Grandparents). Michael was created Earl of Suffolk.

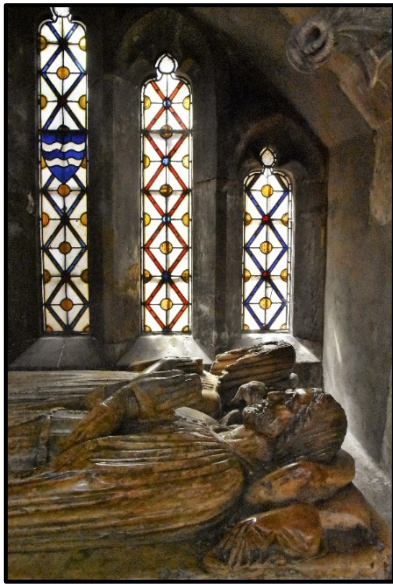
the Black Death.” (Wikipedia) Sir John de Wingfield was a tall man, especially for his time. He stood about six foot five inches in height as attested by his effigy in St. Andrew Church which he built in Wingfield, Suffolk, England (The Farrar Family, pages 784-788; Worthy to Remember, pages 1496-1500).

Financed the King

Sir William de la Pole (20th Great-Grandfather; died June 21, 1366) “was a wealthy wool merchant in Kingston upon Hull, England, a royal moneylender and briefly, Chief Baron of the Exchequer.” “

He established the *de la Pole* family as one of the primary houses of England through his

mercantile and financial success, as well as initiating the foundation of the Charterhouse



monastery in Hull.”

He and his brother, Richard de la Pole (20th Great-Granduncle), loaned Edward II and Edward III huge amounts of money to finance their wars with France and Scotland. He was



one of the richest men in England and leant huge amounts of money (in 1339 alone over £100,000—77 million pounds in 2015 money) to the king, but doing business with an absolute monarch can be dangerous. He and his brother, Richard de la Pole (20th Great-Granduncle) were incarcerated in Devizes Castle in Wiltshire, England, in 1340. Eventually, William de la Pole had to cancel all of the king’s debts in exchange for his pardon (The Farrar Family, pages 789-797; Worthy to Remember, pages 1501-1509).

Above and left: Possible tomb and effigies of William de la Pole (20th Great-Grandfather; died 1366) and his wife, Katherine de Norwich (20th Great-Grandmother), in June 2016. By tradition these are the effigies of William and Katherine de la Pole, and there has been no real evidence to disprove that belief. They are located next to the de la Pole chapel in Holy Trinity Church in Kingston upon Hull, England. He was one of the richest man in England and leant huge amounts of money (in 1339 alone over £100,000—77 million pounds in 2015 money) to the king, but doing business with an absolute monarch can be dangerous. He and his brother, Richard de la Pole (20th Great-Granduncle), were incarcerated in Devizes Castle in Wiltshire, England, in 1340. Eventually, William de la Pole had to cancel all of the king’s debts in exchange for his pardon. Lower left: Monument to William de la Pole in Kingston upon Hull, England, where William served as its first mayor, 1332-1335.

Fought in Battle of Hastings—Leader of the Infantry on the Right Wing

Robert de Beaumont, 1st Earl of Leicester (28th Great-Grandfather; 1040/1050–June 5, 1118), “also known as Robert of Meulan, count of Meulan, was a powerful Norman nobleman, one of the Companions of William the Conqueror during the Norman Conquest of England, and was revered as one of the wisest men of his age. Chroniclers spoke highly of his eloquence, his learning, and three kings of England valued his counsel.”

“Robert de Beaumont was one of only about 15 Proven Companions of William the Con-

queror at the Battle of Hastings in 1066, and was leader of the infantry on the right wing of



Top: Depiction on the Bayeux Tapestry (circa 1070) of the Battle of Hastings with the Anglo-Saxons on foot with long shields and whirling battle axes, and the Normans attacking on horseback. **Above:** Depiction of the invasion fleet; Roger de Beaumont (29th Great-Grandfather) provided 60 ships. The invasion of England was the great, defining advent in the age of Robert de Beaumont (28th Great-Grandfather; 1040/1050-1118).

the Norman Army, as evidenced in the following near contemporary account by William of Poitiers: *‘A certain Norman, Robert, son of Roger of Beaumont, being nephew and heir to Henry, Count of Meulan, through Henry’s sister Adeline, found himself that day in battle for the first time. He was as yet but a young man and he performed feats of valour worthy of perpetual remembrance. At the head of a troop which he commanded on the right wing he attacked with the utmost bravery and success.’*”

“His service earned him the grant of more than 91 English manors confiscated from the defeated English, as listed in the Domesday Book of 1086.”

When he died in 1118, “he was the last surviving Norman nobleman to have fought in the Battle of Hastings.” (Wikipedia) (The Farrar Family, pages 862-867; Worthy to Remember, pages 1574-1579.)

Close Advisor to William the Conqueror

Roger de Beaumont (29th Great-Grandfather; 1015-1094), feudal lord (French: *seigneur*) “of

Beaumont-le-Roger and of Pont-Audemer in Normandy, was a powerful Norman noble-



Above: Bayeux Tapestry. “ET HIC EPISCOPUS CIBU(M) ET POTU(M) BENEDICIT (‘And here the bishop blesses the food and drink’). Roger de Beaumont (29th Great-Grandfather; circa 1015-1094) is certainly depicted as the bearded figure. The figure is seated at the right hand of Duke William of Normandy, who himself occupies the place of honor at the ceremony of the blessing of the food at Hastings by Bishop Odo (standing, tallest figure, fourth from left). Well before the time of the battle, Roger contributed sixty ships to the invasion and although too old to fight with the army, is believed to have accompanied William to England. (Lady Karen of Provo hand sewed an exact copy of this very scene in 2012.)

man and close advisor to William the Conqueror.” (He was a second cousin once removed of William the Conqueror.)

“Roger was nicknamed *La Barbe* (Latinized to *Barbatus*) (i.e. ‘The Bearded’) because he wore a moustache and beard while the Normans usually were clean shaven. This

peculiarity is believed to be recognized in the thirty-second panel of the Bayeux Tapestry where he is depicted sitting at a feast near Hastings, well before the battle, at the right hand of Duke William, who in turn was seated at the right hand of his brother Bishop



Above: Depictions of Diarmaid mac Murchadha (27th Great-Grandfather; 1110-1171, left), King of Leinster, Ireland, and his son-in-law, Richard de Clare, 2nd Earl of Pembroke (26th Great-Grandfather; 1130-1176, right), known as Strongbow, in *Expugnatio Hibernica*, made shortly after their deaths in circa 1189, by Giraldus Cambrensis. (Strongbow was the 2nd Great-Grandson of Henry I of France.) Strongbow fought in many battles and took many Irish towns in the early Norman invasion of Ireland. He was buried in Christ Church Cathedral in Dublin.

Roger's elder sons were rewarded generously with lands in England, and both eventually were made English earls by the sons of the Conqueror. Wace's statement may therefore cast doubt on the possibility of Roger being depicted in the Bayeux Tapestry feasting at Hastings. However, it is probable that he crossed the Channel so he could continue to act as a valued member of the duke's council, perhaps giving advice on military tactics, yet stayed well behind the line of battle at headquarters." (Wikipedia) (The Farrar Family, pages 867-868) (Worthy to Remember, pages 1579-1580.)

Isabel de Clare's Ancestors were Kings in Ireland

Isabel de Clare, 26th Great-Grandmother, wife of **William Marshal**, 26th Great-Grand-

Odo of Bayeux, who is shown blessing the food at a feast."

"Planché described him as 'the noblest, the wealthiest, and the most valiant seigneur of Normandy, and the greatest and most trusted friend of the Danish (i.e. Norman) family.' The explanation for his exalted position appears to be that as an older cousin who had never rebelled against the young Duke, he was part of the kinship group of noblemen that William relied upon in governing Normandy and fighting-off frequent rebellion and invasions. The historian Frank McLynn observed that William relied heavily on relatives on his mother's side, namely his half-brothers, Bishop Odo and Robert, and brothers-in-law, and on relatives descended from the Duchess Gunnora's sisters, since his own paternal kin had proved unreliable."

"Wace, the 12th century historian, wrote that: 'At the time of the invasion of England, Roger was summoned to the great council at Lillebonne, on account of his wisdom; but he did not join in the expedition as he was too far advanced in years.' Although Roger could not fight, he did not hesitate in contributing a large share of the cost and provided at his own expense sixty vessels for the conveyance of the troops across the channel. Furthermore, his eldest son and heir fought bravely at Hastings as noted in several contemporary records. As a result,

father, descended from kings of Ireland. Her grandfather, **Diarmait Mac Murchada** (28th Great-Grandfather; circa 1110-circa May 1, 1171), was a King of Leinster in Ireland, who



Above: Effigy of Lorcan Ua Tuathail (28th half Great-Granduncle; 1128-1180) in the Collegiale Notre-Dame et Saint-Laurent, Eu, Normandy. He was the Archbishop of Dublin at the time of the Norman Invasion of Ireland and is better known as Saint Laurence O'Toole. It is believed that his fair mediations between the Irish and Normans saved many lives. He was canonized by Pope Honorius III on December 11, 1225. Below: Heart of Saint Lorcan, which has been stored in a wooden heart-shaped box for over 800 years in Christ Church Cathedral in Dublin.

invited the Normans in England to assist him in regaining his kingdom, including his future son-in-law, **Richard de Clare** (1130-1176; 27th Great-Grandfather), known as Strongbow, the 2nd Earl of Pembroke. This is called the Norman invasion of Ireland and “was a watershed in Ireland’s history, marking the beginning of more than 800 years of direct English, and, later, British involvement in Ireland.”

Diarmait MacMurchanda was the son of Donnchad mac Murchada, King of Leinster, who was the son of Muchad mac Diarmata (“he led an army into the Kingdom of Meath in July 1069, ‘where he burned territories and churches,’ but was wounded and died in 1070), King of Leinster and Dublin. He was the son of Diarmait mac Mael na mBo (died 1072), King of Leinster and Dublin. Diarmait “was one of the most important and significant kings in Ireland in the pre-Norman era. His influence extended beyond the island of Ireland into the Hebrides, the Isle of Man, Wales, and even into England.” His grandfather was Brian Boru (33rd Great-Grandfather; 941-1014), who “first made himself King of Munster, then subjugated Leinster, eventually becoming High King of Ireland.” He is one of the best-known ancient monarchs of Ireland. (The Farrar Family, pages 868-884; Worthy to Remember, pages 1580-1598)



Made a Saint

Lorcan Ua Tuathail (28th half Great-Granduncle; 1124-1180), also known as Saint

Laurence O'Toole, was Abbot of Glendalough in 1154, and Archbishop of Dublin, beginning in 1162. (Saint Laurence O'Toole was the half-brother of Mor Ni Thuathail—anglicized as Mor O'Toole—28th Great-Grandmother; circa 1114–1191.) He was serving as Archbishop at the time of the Norman invasion of Ireland and mediated between the parties during and after the invasion. He became a “national figure greatly in demand as a mediator by all sides. No greater tribute can be paid to him than the fact that he was the one man in Ireland whom everybody trusted. Irish, Vikings, Normans, all had equal respect for him as a man of total honor and integrity. He was canonized in 1225 by Pope Honorius III.” (Wikipedia) (The Farrar Family, page 874; Worthy to Remember, page 1587)

A founder of the Order of the Garter

Thomas de Beauchamp, 11th Earl of Warwick, KG (20th Great-Grandfather; 1313-1369) “was an English nobleman and military commander during the Hundred



Years' War. In 1348 he became one of the founders and the third Knight of the Order of the Garter.”

“Thomas de Beauchamp fought in all the French wars of King Edward III; he commanded the center at the Battle of Crecy (1346). He was trusted to be guardian of the sixteen-year-old Black Prince. Beauchamp fought at Poitiers in 1356 and at the Siege of Calais (1346)” and was present when the city surrendered. Calais would remain under English control until 1558.

Thomas de Beauchamp survived the original Black Death of 1347-1351, which is estimated to have killed 30% to 60% of Europe’s population, but died of the Black Death when it came back on November 13, 1369. (The Farrar Family, pages 886-891; Worthy to Remember, pages 1598-1603)

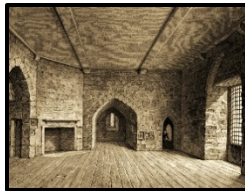


Above: Depiction of Thomas Beauchamp, Earl of Warwick, KG (20th Great-Grandfather; 1313-1369), in the Bruges Garter Book, 1430/1440. In 1348 he became one of the founders and the third Knight of the Order of the Garter. He was one of the great men of his age and had fifteen children by his wife, Katherine Mortimer (20th Great-Grandmother; 1314-1369), “a lady of great worthiness.” Left: Effigies of Thomas Beauchamp and Katherine Mortimer in St. Mary’s Church in Warwick, England; June 2017. Apparently, they had a loving marriage, which wasn’t always the case with arranged medieval marriages. They died within three months of each other.

Imprisoned in the Tower of London

Thomas de Beauchamp, 12th Earl of Warwick, KG (19th Great-Granduncle; March 16, 1338–April 8, 1401) “was an English medieval nobleman, and one of the primary opponents of Richard II.”

“In 1387 he was one of the Lords Appellant, who endeavored to separate Richard from his favorites. After Richard regained power, Beauchamp retired to his estates, but was charged with high treason in 1397, supposedly as a part of the Earl of Arundel’s alleged conspiracy. He was imprisoned in the Tower of London (in what is now known as the ‘Beauchamp Tower’), pleaded guilty and threw himself on the mercy of the king. He forfeited his estates and titles and was sentenced to life imprisonment on the Isle of Man. The next year, however, he was moved back to the Tower, until he was released in August 1399



Top right: The Beauchamp Tower in the Tower of London. It was named for Thomas de Beauchamp, 12th Earl of Warwick (19th Great-Granduncle; 1338-1401), its first prisoner, who was placed here by King Richard II in 1397. Thomas was restored to his honors and liberty two years later under Henry IV. Top left: The main upper room in Beauchamp Tower. Right: Subsequent prisoners, especially in the 16th century, inscribed graffiti on the walls, and some of it was well-done. Above: Beauchamp’s relative, Rebecca Martin, in the Tower in July 2018. (Beauchamp’s enemy, Richard II, was possibly starved to death in captivity in 1400.)

after Henry Bolingbroke’s initial victories over King Richard II.”

“After Bolingbroke deposed Richard and became king as Henry IV, Beauchamp was restored to his titles and estates. He was one of those who urged the new King to execute Richard and accompanied King Henry against the rebellion of 1400.” Beauchamp died in 1401. (Wikipedia) (The Farrar Family, pages 893-895; Worthy to Remember, pages 1605-1607)

Finest 15th-century Bronze Sculpture in England

Richard de Beauchamp, 13th Earl of Warwick, Count of Aumale, KG (1382-1439; son

of Thomas de Beauchamp, 19th Great-Granduncle; 1382-1439) “was an English medieval nobleman and military commander.”

“Soon after reaching his majority and taking responsibility for the Earldom, he saw



Above: Magnificent gilt-bronze monumental effigy of Richard de Beauchamp, 13th Earl of Warwick (1382-1439; son of Thomas de Beauchamp, 12th Earl of Warwick, 19th Great-Granduncle) in the Beauchamp Chapel of St Mary's Church, Warwick, England, in June 2017. It is regarded as “the finest piece of 15th-century bronze sculpture in England.” It was modelled and cast by William Austen of London, and gilded and engraved by Bartholomew Lambespring, a Dutch goldsmith. Richard de Beauchamp paid for the construction of Beauchamp Chapel, and he was placed there in 1475. He also gave a gift to Tewksbury Abbey.

military action in Wales, defending against a Welsh rebellion led by Owain Glyndŵr. On July 22, 1403, the day after the Battle of Shrewsbury, he was made a Knight of the Garter.” He fought another major battle with the Welsh the following year and went on a pilgrimage to the Holy Land in 1408. He acquired a reputation for chivalry and was challenged many times to fight in the sporting combat which was then popular. On the return trip he went through Russia and Eastern Europe, not returning to England until 1410.

“In 1410, he was appointed a member of the royal council and in 1413 was Lord High Steward at the Prince’s coronation as Henry V of England. The next year he helped put down the Lollard uprising and then went to Normandy as Captain of Calais and represented England at the Council of Constance. He spent much of the next decade fighting the French in the Hundred Years’ War.”

He paid for the construction of a new chapel to St. Mary in Warwick, which some believe to be the finest in England. His magnificent gilt-bronze monumental effigy can still be seen. (The Farrar Family, pages 895-900; Worthy to Remember, pages 1607-1612)

Escaped from the Tower of London and Overthrew the King

Roger de Mortimer, 3rd Baron Mortimer, 1st Earl of March (21st Great-Grandfather; April 25, 1287–November 29, 1330), “was an English nobleman and powerful Marcher lord who gained many estates in the Welsh Marches and Ireland following his advantageous marriage to the wealthy heiress **Joan de Geneville, 2nd Baroness Geneville**. In November 1316, he was appointed Lord Lieutenant of Ireland. He was imprisoned in the Tower of London in 1322 for having led the Marcher lords in a revolt against King

Edward II in what became known as the Despenser War. He later escaped to France, where



Above: Medieval depiction of a prisoner being helped to escape. Roger Mortimer (21st Great-Grandfather; 1287-1330) was imprisoned in the Tower of London in 1322. “In August 1323 Mortimer, aided by the Constable, Stephen de Segrave, drugged the warders and escaped. He attempted to capture Windsor and Wallingford Castles to free imprisoned Contrariants. Roger eventually fled to France, pursued by warrants for his capture dead or alive.” His escape “became one of medieval England’s most colorful episodes.” In Paris he became involved with Isabella of France and together they overthrew Edward II. Mortimer allegedly arranged his murder at Berkley Castle. For three years he was *de facto* ruler of England, but misused his powers, was overthrown by Edward III, and hanged.

he was joined by Edward’s queen consort Isabella, whom he took as his mistress. After he and Isabella led a successful invasion and rebellion, Edward was subsequently deposed; Mortimer allegedly arranged his murder at Berkeley Castle. For three years, Mortimer was *de facto* ruler of England before being himself overthrown by Edward’s eldest son, Edward III. Accused of assuming royal power and other crimes, Mortimer was executed by hanging at Tyburn.” (Roger de Mortimer was a 2nd Great-Grandson of William Marshal, 1st Earl of Pembroke, the great knight, Llywelyn the Great, 1173-1240, ruler of all Wales, and John of Brienne, King of Jerusalem from 1210 to 1225 and Emperor of Constantinople from 1229 to 1237; Roger’s daughter, Katherine Mortimer, 1314-1369, married the great Thomas de Beauchamp, 11th Earl of Warwick, who was so formidable in battle that the French nicknamed him “the devil Warwick.”) (The Farrar Family, pages 901-907)

Hung for Adultery

William de Braose (24th Great-Grandfather; circa 1197–May 2, 1230) “was an ill-fated member of the House of Braose, a powerful and long-lived dynasty of Marcher Lords.”



Left: Depiction of a hanging from a medieval manuscript. William de Braose (24th Great-Grandfather; 1197-1230) “was hanged by the Llywelyn the Great (25th Great-Granduncle), after he had been caught in Llywelyn’s chamber with the king of England’s daughter, Llywelyn’s wife.” “Llywelyn wrote to Eva Marshal (24th Great-Grandmother; 1203-1246, wife of William de Braose) shortly after the execution, offering his apologies. . .he hoped the execution would not affect their business dealings.” Above: Totnes Castle in Devon, England. After her husband’s execution, Eva Marshal was able to keep her possessions, including Totnes Castle, one of the best-preserved examples of a Norman motte and bailey castle in England. Her husband had inherited it from his father, Reginald de Braose, who received it from his father, William de Braose, 4th Lord of Bramber, who received it from his father, William de Braose, 3rd Lord of Bramber (27th Great-Grandfather; 1135-1179), who built its stone walls. The first castle was built by Juhel de Totnes (29th Great-Grandfather; died 1123/1130).



He was captured by the Welsh forces of Prince Llywelyn the Great (25th Great-Grandfather), in fighting in the commote of Ceri near Montgomery, in 1228. William was ransomed for the sum of £2,000 and then furthermore made an alliance with Llywelyn, arrang-

ing to marry his daughter Isabella de Braose to Llywelyn’s only legitimate son Dafydd ap Llywelyn. However, it became known that William had committed adultery with Llywelyn’s wife, Joan, Lady of Wales (25th Great-Grandaunt), and Braose was taken at his own home and transported to Wales. The marriage planned between their two children did, however, take place.”

“The Chronicle of Ystrad Fflur’s entry for 1230 reads: *‘In this year William de Breos the Younger, lord of Brycheiniog, was hanged by the Lord Llywelyn in Gwynedd, after he had been caught in Llywelyn’s chamber with the king of England’s daughter, Llywelyn’s wife.’*

“Llywelyn had William publicly hanged on May 2, 1230, possibly at Crogen, near Bala, though others believe the hanging took place near Llywelyn’s palace at Abergwynnregyn.”

“After William’s death, his wife Eva Marshal (24th Great-Grandmother; 1203-1246, daughter of William Marshal, the great knight) continued to hold de Braose lands and castles in her own right. She was listed as the holder of Totnes in 1230 and was granted 12 marks to strengthen Hay Castle by King Henry III on the Close Rolls (1234–1237).”



(“Most notably through Eva’s daughter Maud, who married Roger Mortimer, she was the ancestress of the English kings: Edward IV, Edward V, Richard III, and all monarchs from Henry VIII onwards. She was also the ancestress of Queen consorts Anne Boleyn, Jane Seymour, Catherine Howard, and Catherine Parr by three of her four daughters; Eleanor, Maud, and Eva de Braose.”) (Wikipedia) (The Farrar Family, pages 919-923; Worthy to Remember, pages 1631-1632)



Starved to Death

William de Braose, (or William de Briouze), 4th Lord of Bramber (26th Great-Grandfather; 1144–1211); “court favorite of King John of England, at the peak of his power, was also Lord of Gower, Abergavenny, Brecknock, Builth, Radnor, Kington, Limerick, Glamorgan, Skenfrith, Briouze in Normandy, Grosmont, and White Castle.”



William was a great warrior and fought alongside of King Richard the Lionheart and was with him when he was mortally wounded at Chalus, France, in 1199. He then supported King John’s claim to the throne of England, and represented the new king, making various royal grants.”

Top: Impressive ruins of Grosmont Castle in Wales near the English border. Grosmont was one of the many castles that William de Braose (26th Great-Grandfather; 1144/1153-1211) was made lord over by King John of England. Middle and above: Corfe Castle in Dorset County, in southwest England. It is one of the oldest castles made of stone in England. Maude de Braose (26th Great-Grandmother; 1155-1210) was starved to death with her oldest son, William de Braose (25th Great-Granduncle), in the dungeon of Corfe Castle in 1210. This was done on the orders of King John.

He was a royal favorite and given a number of castles, including Gromont Castle in Wales, but after 1206 he fell out of favor with King John “for reasons that remain obscure.” He fled to Ireland and Wales where he gave his support to Llywelyn the Great and helped him in his rebellion against King John. In 1210, William de Braose fled Wales disguised as a beggar, to France, but his wife and eldest son were captured. William died the

following year in August 1211 at Corbeil, France. William's wife, Maud, and eldest son,



William, were captured in 1210, and incarcerated briefly in Windsor Castle and then placed in the dungeon of Corfe Castle and starved to death." The manner of their deaths "so outraged the English nobility that the Magna Carta, which King John was forced to sign in 1215, contains clause 39—it reads: 'No man shall be taken, imprisoned, outlawed, banished or in any way destroyed, nor will we proceed against or prosecute him, except by the lawful judgement of his peers or by the law of the land.'"

Maud de Braose (26th Great-Grandmother; 1155-1210) was described in contemporary records as "beautiful, very wise, doughty, and vigorous." While her husband was away, she was put in charge of Hay Castle. In 1198, "Maud defended Painscastle

Top left: Beggar from a medieval manuscript. In 1210 William de Braose (26th Great-Grandfather; 1144- 1211) was being hunted by King John in Ireland so he escaped to Wales and then, disguising himself as a beggar, fled to France. William never saw his family again and died the following year in August 1211 at Corbeil, France. He was buried in the Abbey of St. Victor in Paris. Left: Hunting scene from a medieval manuscript. On Christmas Eve 1143, Miles of Gloucester (28th Great-Grandfather) "was killed while hunting by an arrow shot at a deer." The Earl was buried in the chapterhouse at Llanthony Priory (lower left) in South Wales.



in Elfael against a massive Welsh attack led by Gwenwynwyn, Prince of Powys. She successfully held off Gwenwynwyn's forces for three weeks until English reinforcements arrived. Over three thousand Welsh were killed. Painscastle was known as *Matilda's Castle* by the locals." (The Farrar Family, pages 924-929; Worthy to Remember, pages 1636-1640)



Killed in Hunting Accident

Miles Fitz Walter of Gloucester, 1st Earl of Hereford, Lord of Brecknock (28th Great-Grandfather; died December 24, 1143) "was High Sheriff of Gloucester and Constable of England."

On Christmas Eve 1143, Miles of Gloucester (28th Great-Grandfather) "was killed while hunting by an arrow shot at a deer." The Earl was buried in the chapterhouse at Llanthony Priory in South Wales. (The Farrar Family, pages 930-933)

Fought in the Battle of Hastings

William de Braose (or William de Briouze), “First Lord of Bramber (29th Great-Grandfather; died 1093/1096) was previously lord of Briouze, Normandy. He was granted lands in England by William the Conqueror soon after he and his followers had invaded

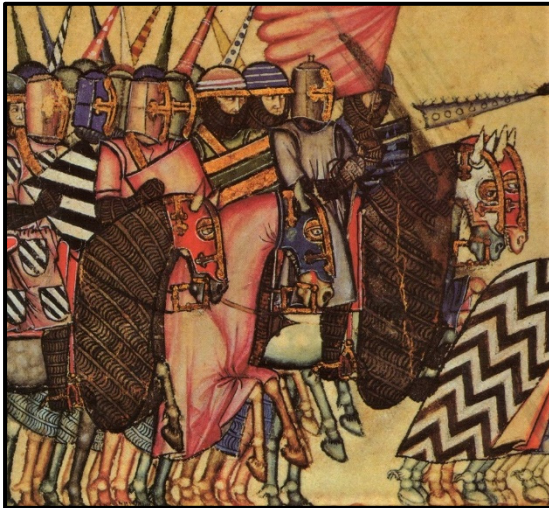


Right: Bramber Castle. “William De Braose (29th Great-Grandfather; died 1093/1096), 1st feudal baron, constructed the castle in about 1070, along with the Norman church (above), on a natural mound. Most of the surviving masonry dates from this time. Except for a period of confiscation during the reign of King John (1199–1216), Bramber Castle remained in the ownership of the de Braose family until the male line died out in 1326.” Above: St. Nicholas Bramber Parish Church is “the oldest post-conquest Norman church in Sussex, England.” Bramber is located twelve miles northwest of Brighton on the south coast of England. Below: Medieval depiction of knights fighting in the First Crusade (1095–1099). Philip de Braose (28th Great-Grandfather) served in the First Crusade and died in another.



ed and controlled Saxon England.” Certainly, he fought at the Battle of Hastings, but like most of the 7,000 men who fought for William in this famous battle, his presence cannot

be proven. Only twenty-one men are verified from contemporary documents to have fought at Hastings.



“He continued to bear arms alongside King William in campaigns in England, Normandy and Maine in France.” (The Farrar Family, pages 935-937; Worthy to Remember, pages 1647-1649)

Served in the First Crusade and Died in Another

Philip de Braose, 2nd Lord of Bramber (28th Great-Grandfather; 1070–1134) “was an Anglo-Norman nobleman and Marcher Lord.”

“Philip de Braose conquered the Welsh borderlands at Builth and New Radnor and established new Norman lordships over them. At Builth, he constructed a Motte and Bailey fortification at the site where King Edward I later built Builth Castle in the 13th century (the first of many castles built by Edward I in Wales).” Evidence suggest that he went on the First Crusade (1095-1099) and that he died on another crusade, possibly in 1134 in the eastern Mediterranean. (The Farrar Family, page 935)

Commander with King Richard on the Third Crusade

Walchelin de Ferrieres (or Walkelin de Ferrers) (26th Great-Grandfather; died 1201) “was



Above: Medieval depiction of the Battle of Arsuf in the Third Crusade. Walchelin de Ferriers (26th Great-Grandfather; died 1201) was a principal captain with King Richard on the Third Crusade. At the Battle of Arsuf, Walchelin “was commander of one of the elite bodies of knights” against the Saracens under Saladin. “Later, in 1193-1194, when Richard was imprisoned in Germany, Walchelin brought the treasure of Normandy to Speyer and gave himself as a hostage (along with many others) to the Western Emperor Henry VI. Walchelin was freed from captivity around 1197.” Top right: Trifels Castle near the small town of Annweiler in the Palatinate region of southwestern Germany. King Richard I (1157-1199) was captured by Duke Leopold V of Austria near Vienna in December 1192 on his return from the Third Crusade and handed over to Emperor Henry VI of Hohenstaufen in 1193. He was held in Trifels Castle and finally released on February 4, 1194. Perhaps it was here that Walchelin de Ferriers (26th Great-Grandfather) was held from 1194 to 1197 as a hostage for the king. (King Richard had to pay 100,000 pounds of silver to be released—approximately 25 million dollars in 2017 money.) Right: Oakham Castle in Rutland, England (located 23 miles west of Peterborough), was built by Walchelin de Ferriers (26th Great-Grandfather) in 1180/1190 and “is recognized as one of the best examples of domestic Norman architecture in England.” Only the great hall is still standing. “It is the earliest hall of any English castle surviving so completely, and it is doubly interesting in that it belonged not to a castle strictly speaking, but rather to a fortified manor house.”

a Norman baron and principal captain of King Richard I of England.”

Walchelin de Ferrieres was a chief captain with Richard on the Third Crusade. At the Battle of Arsuf, Walchelin “was commander of one of the elite bodies of knights” against the Saracens under Saladin. “Later, in 1193-1194, when Richard was imprisoned in Germany, Walchelin brought the treasure of Normandy to Speyer and gave himself as a hostage (along with many others) to the Western Emperor Henry VI. Walchelin was freed from captivity around 1197.” (The Farrar Family, pages 939-941)

Executed Piers Gaveston

Guy de Beauchamp, 10th Earl of Warwick (21st Great-Grandfather; 1272-1315) “was an

English magnate, and one of the principal opponents of King Edward II and his favorite



Above: Warwick Castle from the outer court by Italian painter, Canaletto (1697-1768) in 1752. Today the castle is rated as one of Britain’s “Top 10 Historic Houses and Monuments” (British Tourist Authority-2001) and “Britain’s best castle” (Good Britain Guide—2003). More than half a million visitors come to Warwick Castle each year. It was here in 1312 that Guy de Beauchamp brought Gaveston for a trial that led to his death. Right: Guy de Beauchamp, Earl of Warwick (21st Great-Grandfather), standing over the decapitated body of Piers Gaveston; from the *Rous Rolls* (circa 1484). Beauchamp (second richest noble in England) was one of the leading the nobles who sought to remove Gaveston from power. In the end their final solution was to have an improvised court, sentence Gaveston to death, and have him decapitated.



Piers Gaveston. Guy de Beauchamp was the son of William de Beauchamp, the first Beauchamp earl of Warwick, and succeeded his father in 1298. He distinguished himself at the Battle of Falkirk and subsequently, as a capable servant of the crown under King Edward I. After the succession of Edward II in 1307, however, he soon fell out with the new king and the king’s favorite Piers Gaveston. Warwick was one of the main architects behind the Ordinances of 1311 that limited the powers of the king and banished Gaveston into exile.”

“When Gaveston returned to England in 1312—contrary to the rulings of the Ordinances—he was taken into custody by the Aymer de Valence, 2nd Earl of Pembroke. Warwick abducted Gaveston and, together with Thomas, 2nd Earl of Lancaster, had him executed. The act garnered sympathy and support for the king, but Warwick and Lancaster nevertheless managed to negotiate a royal pardon for their actions. After the disastrous defeat at the Battle of Bannockburn in 1314, King Edward’s authority was once more weakened, and the rebellious barons took over control of government. For Warwick the triumph was brief; he died the next year.”

“When Gaveston returned to England in 1312—contrary to the rulings of the Ordinances—he was taken into custody by the Aymer de Valence, 2nd Earl of Pembroke. Warwick abducted Gaveston and, together with Thomas, 2nd Earl of Lancaster, had him executed. The act garnered sympathy and support for the king, but Warwick and Lancaster nevertheless managed to negotiate a royal pardon for their actions. After the disastrous defeat at the Battle of Bannockburn in 1314, King Edward’s authority was once more weakened, and the rebellious barons took over control of government. For Warwick the triumph was brief; he died the next year.”

“Guy de Beauchamp is today remembered primarily for his part in the killing of Gaveston,

but by his contemporaries he was considered a man of exceptionally good judgement and learning. He owned what was for his time a large collection of books, and his advice was often sought by many of the other earls. Next to Lancaster, he was the wealthiest peer in the nation, and after his death his lands and title were inherited by his son, Thomas de Beauchamp, 11th Earl of Warwick.” (The Farrar Family, pages 949-954; Worthy to Remember, pages 1661-1666)

Pedigree of Anne Moreley, Sixteenth Great-Grandmother, to Edward I, Twenty-third Great-Grandfather, to William the Conqueror, Twenty-ninth Great-Grandfather

The Farrar line to King Edward I continues from Anne Morley, who married Sir John



Hastings (16th Great-Grandparents) to Isabel de la Pole, who married Thomas Morley, 5th Baron Morley (17th Great-Grandparents) to Katherine Stafford, who married Michael de la Pole, 2nd Earl of Suffolk (18th Great-Grandparents) to Hugh Stafford, 2nd Earl of Stafford, who married Philippa Beauchamp (19th Great-Grandparents) to Margaret de Audley, who married Ralph Stafford, 1st Earl of Stafford (20th Great-Grandparents) to Margaret de Clare, who married Hugh de Audley, 1st Earl of Gloucester (21st Great-Grandparents) to Joan Plantagenet, who married Gilbert de Clare, 3rd Earl of Gloucester and 7th Earl of Hertford (22nd Great-Grandparents) to Edward I, King of England (1239-1307; reign 1272-1307), who married Eleanor of Castile [of Spain] (23rd Great-Grandparents). (Source: *The Royal Descents of 600*)

Left: Early fourteenth-century manuscript initial showing Edward I and his wife, Eleanor (23rd Great-Grandparents). “The artist has perhaps tried to depict Edward’s blepharoptosis (dropping eye), a trait he inherited from his father.”

Immigrants. Note this line follows William Farrar’s ancestors through the Morley line back to Edward

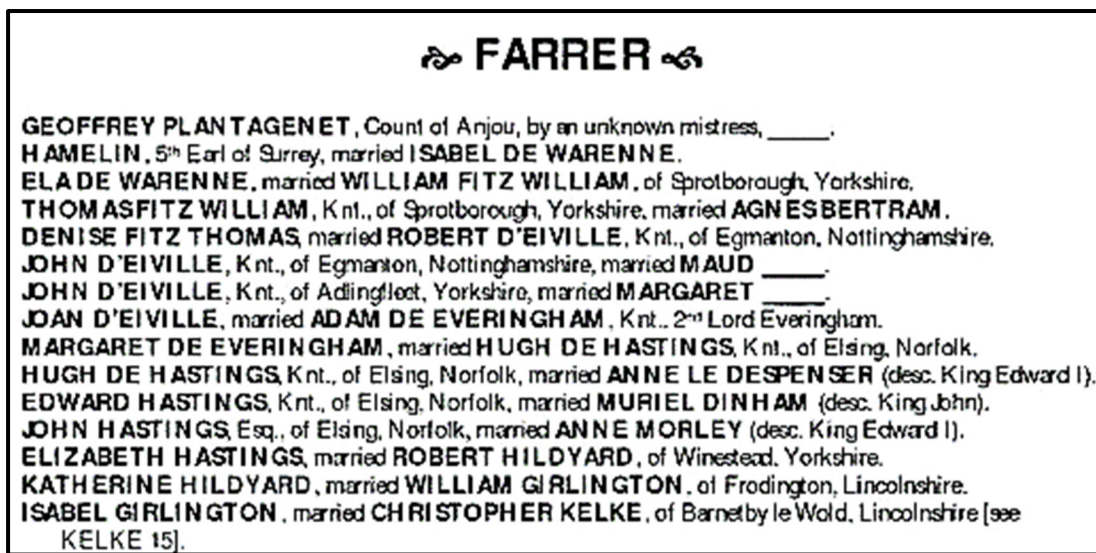
I. A later line in this history follows his ancestors back to Geoffrey Plantagenet through Edward Hastings (17th Great-Grandfather), father of John Hastings (16th Great-Grandfather). See the Hastings, la Pole, Morley, Stafford, Beauchamp, Audley, and Clare families in the Farrar Family.

Edward I was the first son of King Henry III (1207-1272; reign 1216-1272) and Eleanor of Provence (circa 1223-1291) (24th Great-Grandparents). Edward I was the son of John, King of England (1166-1216; reign 1199-1216) and Isabella of Anjou (25th Great-Grandparents). King John was the son of Henry II (1133-1189; reign 1154-1189) and Elea-

nor of Aquitaine (1122-1204) (26th Great-Grandparents). Henry II was the son of Geoffrey Plantagenet, Count of Anjou (1113-1151; reign 1129-1151) and Matilda (1102-1167) (27th Great-Grandparents), daughter of King Henry I of England (1068-1135; reign 1100-1135) and Matilda of Scotland (1080-1118) (28th Great-Grandparents). Matilda of Scotland was the daughter of Malcolm III of Scotland (1031-1093; King of Scots from 1058 to 1093) (29th Great-Grandfather), who was the son of Duncan I of Scotland (circa 1001-1040; King of Scotland: 1034-1040). King Henry I was the son of William the Conqueror (circa 1028-1087) and Matilda of Flanders (circa 1031-1083) (29th Great-Grandparents). (The Farrar Family, pages 385-386)

Descended from Many Kings of England

Isabel Gyrlington or Girlington (13th Great-Grandmother; 1495-1560, daughter of



Above: The ancestry of Isabel Girlington (13th Great-Grandmother), daughter of William Girlington (14th Great-Grandfather), to Geoffrey Plantagenet, Count of Anjou (27th Great-Grandfather) from the book, *Plantagenet Ancestry*, Volume 2, page 30. Isabel Girlington was the wife of Christopher Kelke (13th Great-Grandfather), who was the grandfather of John Farrer (11th Great-Grandfather). His son, William Farrar (10th Great-Grandfather), emigrated from England to Virginia in 1619.

William Gyrlington, 14th Great-Grandfather) was born in 1495 in Lincolnshire, England, and died February 1, 1560, in Scotter, Lincolnshire, England. She married first, **Christopher Kelke** (13th Great-Grandfather) of Barnetby le Wold, Lincolnshire, England.

Isabel was a direct descendant of many kings of England (see pedigree above). Her great-grandmother, **Anne Morley** (16th Great-Grandmother) was a direct-descendant of **King Edward I**. Her second great-grandmother, **Muriel Dinham** (1382-1412; 17th Great-Grandmother; daughter of Sir John Dinham, 1359-1428), was a direct-descendant of **King John**, and her third great-grandmother, **Anne Le Despenser** (18th Great-Grandmother) was also a direct-descendant of **King Edward I**.

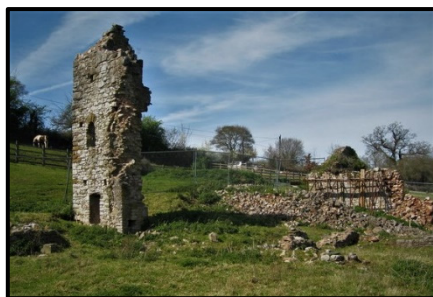
Isabel's twelfth great-grandfather was **Geoffrey Plantagenet, Count of Anjou**, from whom Kings **Henry II** (1133-1189), **Richard I** (1157-1199), **John** (1166-1216), **Henry III** (1207-1272), **Edward I** (1239-1307), **Edward II** (1284-1327), **Edward III** (1312-1377), and **Richard III** (1367-1400) descended. Later in history, the royal house descended from Geoffrey Plantagenet and **Matilda** (27th Great-Grandmother; 1102-1167) would be widely known by two names the House of Anjou (after Geoffrey's title as Count of Anjou) or the House of Plantagenet, after his sobriquet (nickname). Henry II, Richard I, and John are listed by some historians under the House of Anjou and the other monarchs under the House of Plantagenet, although they are not different royal houses. The Houses of Lancaster and York are cadet branches



Left: Effigy of Sir John de Dinham (18th Great-Grandfather; 1359-1428) in St. Mary's Church, Kingskerswell, Devon, England (located adjacent to the ruins of the Dinham manor house and seat; below). He married first Eleanor de Montacute (1357-1393; daughter of Sir John de Montagu I, 1328-1390, whose effigy is prominently displayed in Salisbury Cathedral). Sir John de Montagu (19th Great-Grandfather) was at the Battle of Crecy in 1346 and fought at Poitiers in 1356. He was Steward of the Household to King Richard II.

(younger sons) of the House of Plantagenet. (Wikipedia—List of English monarchs)

Matilda was the daughter of **King Henry I** (1068-1135), who was the son of **William the Conqueror** (1028-1087).



Everyone listed in this article in bold print is a distant great-grandfather or grandmother of Isabel Girlington, the great-grandmother of William Farrar (10th Great-Grandfather), except for William II (Rufus) (28th Great-Granduncle), Richard I (the Lionheart) (25th Great-Granduncle), Edward II (22nd Great-Granduncle), Edward III, and Richard II. (The Farrar Family, page 693)

The noble and royal ancestry of Muriel Dinham, Seventeen Great-Grandmother, who was a direct-descendant of King John of England

Killed his Father's Murderer

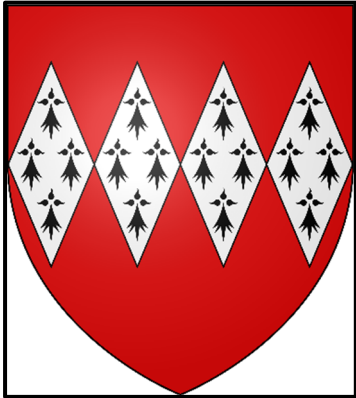
Sir John Dinham (18th Great-Grandfather; 1359-1428) killed one of the murderers of his father (**Sir John Dinham**, 1318-1383) in Exeter Cathedral, for which he was pardoned by the king. He later broke into Hartland Abbey and assaulted the Abbot over a long-standing disagreement, and also performed other acts of violence. He married three

times; his heir was John Dinham (1406–1458). His monument survives in Kingskerswell parish church.”

“Dinham was a violent man. The two thieves, Robert Tuwyng and John Broun, who had murdered his father were convicted of robbery and murder and incarcerated in Ilchester



prison. After apparently having escaped, John Broun was tracked down by Din-



Above: Effigy of Eleanor de Montacute (18th Great-Grandmother; 1357-1393, daughter of Sir John de Montagu I) and wife of Sir John de Dinham (18th Great-Grandfather; 1359-1428) in St. Mary’s Church, Kingskerswell, Devon, England Left: Arms of Dinham/Dynham. Lower left: Seal of Sir John Dinham appendant to an indenture from 1385, showing the arms of Dinham.



ham and fled for sanctuary into Exeter Cathedral. On February 18, 1383, Dinham broke down the door and killed him after a fierce struggle, thus avenging his father’s murder. On March 16, 1383, he received the king’s pardon for his action but was ordered by the Bishop Brantingham to perform penance for having violated the right of sanctuary. The penance mandated by the bishop on March 21, 1383, was ‘that on a Sunday before this Pentecost he should stand at the small altar between the choir and the high altar on the south side, with head uncovered with a lit candle of two lbs. weight in his hand from the start of the high mass, that is to say the Confession (*Confiteor*) until the end of the same

mass and then if he should so wish to make gift at the offertory of the same candle into the hand of the celebrant at the high mass.’”

John Dinham married first **Eleanor de Montagu** (18th Great-Grandmother), daughter of **John de Montacute**, 1st Baron Montacute and his wife, **Margaret de Monthermer** (19th Great-Grandparents). John and Eleanor had a daughter, **Muriel Dinham**, who married **Sir Edward Hastings** (17th Great-Grandparents).

The Courtenays of Devonshire

Sir Thomas Courtenay (20th Great-Grandfather; 1315–1356) “of Wootton Courtenay in Somerset, was a knight and an English military commander against the French during the Hundred Years War, who died in the year of the Battle of Poitiers.” He was the son of **Hugh de Courtenay** and **Agnes de Saint John** (died 1340) (21st Great-Grandparents), a daughter of **John St. John** (22nd Great-Grandfather; died 1302). He married a great heiress, **Muriel de Moels** (1322-1369), daughter of “**John de Moels**, 4th

Baron Moels, feudal baron of North Cadbury in Somerset, by his wife, **Joan Lovel**, a



Above: Hedingham Castle in the village of Castle Hedingham, Essex, England, is considered the best-preserved Norman keep in England. It was the seat of the de Vere family, Earls of Oxford. Right: 18th century drawing of ledger stone from the lost monument of Sir Walter Hungerford (1378-1449; husband of Eleanor Peverell, daughter of Margaret Courtenay, 19th Great-Grandaunt) in the north nave of Salisbury Cathedral. He was a famous soldier and fought in the Battle of Agincourt in 1415, was Speaker of the House of Commons, and Admiral of the English fleet.



daughter of **Richard Lovel** of Castle Cary in Somerset.” (Wikipedia). Sir

Thomas Courtenay had a son and two daughters: Hugh, who died a minor in 1369, **Muriel Courtenay** (a co-heiress married **Sir John Dinham** [19th Great-Grandfather; 1318-1383], feudal baron of Cardinham in Cornwall—their son was **Sir John Dinham** [18th Great-Grandfather; 1359-1428]), and Margaret Courtenay (also a co-heiress, who married Sir Thomas Peverell—their only daughter and sole heiress was Eleanor Peverell, wife of Walter Hungerford, 1st Baron Hungerford).

Hugh de Courtenay, 1st or 9th Earl of Devon (21st Great-Grandfather; 1276-1340) “of Tiverton Castle, Okehampton Castle, Plympton Castle and Colcombe Castle, all in Devonshire, feudal baron of Okehampton and feudal baron of Plympton, was an English nobleman.”

Sir Hugh de Courtenay (22nd Great-Grandfather; 1251–1292) was the son and heir of **John de Courtenay**, feudal baron of Okehampton, Devonshire, by **Isabel de Vere** (23rd



This page: Effigy of Robert de Vere, 3rd Earl of Oxford (25th Great-Grandfather; 1165-1221) in St. Mary the Virgin's Church in Hatfield Broad Oak, Essex, England.

Great-Grandparents), daughter of **Hugh de Vere, 4th Earl of Oxford** (24th Great-Grandfather). His son inherited the earldom of Devonshire.

Best Preserved Norman Keep in England

“Hedingham Castle, in the village of Castle Hedingham, Essex, is arguably the best preserved Norman keep in England. The castle fortifications and outbuildings were built around 1100, and the keep around 1140. However, the keep is the only major medieval structure that has survived, albeit less two turrets. The keep is open to the public.” (It was the seat of the de Vere family, see below.)

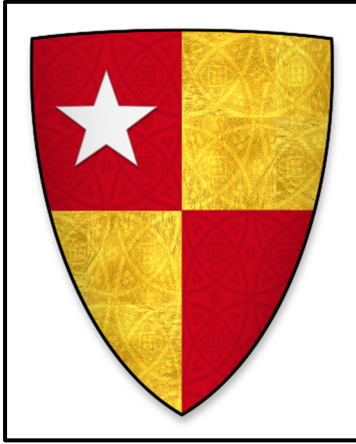


The de Vere Family of Oxford and Essex County, England

Hugh de Vere, 4th Earl of Oxford (24th Great-Grandfather; 1207-1263) was the only son and heir of **Robert de Vere**, 3rd Earl of Oxford and **Isabel de Bolebec** (25th Great-Grandparents), daughter and eventual sole heiress of **Hugh de Bolebec** (26th Great-Grandfather). Hugh de Vere's primary estate was Castle Hedingham in Essex County,

England, where he purchased the right to hold a market in the town. Castle Hedingham is considered today as the best-preserved Norman keep in England (see previous page).

Robert de Vere (born after 1165; died before October 25, 1221; 25th Great-Grandfather), “hereditary Master Chamberlain of England, was son of **Aubrey de Vere, 1st Earl of Oxford** and **Agnes of Essex** (26th Great-Grandparents). He succeeded his brother as the third Earl of Oxford and was one of the twenty-five guarantors of Magna Carta.”



Above: Arms of Robert de Vere, 3rd Earl of Oxford (25th Great-Grandfather; 1165-1221).

Aubrey de Vere, 1st Earl of Oxford (26th Great-Grandfather; 1115-1194) “was a noble involved in the succession conflict between King Stephen and Empress Matilda in the mid-twelfth century.”

He was the son of **Aubrey de Vere** (1085-1141; master chamberlain and justicar [medieval equivalent of a modern prime minister] under kings Henry I and Stephen), and **Alice** (died circa 1163) (27th Great-Grandparents), a daughter of **Gilbert de Clare** (28th Great-Grandfather).

Oxford served during the civil war of 1173–1174, helping to repel a force under Robert de Beaumont, 3rd Earl of Leicester, which landed in Suffolk on September 29, 1173. He was present on September 3, 1189, at the coronation of King Richard I. (His seat was Hedingham Castle.)

Fought in Battle of Crecy, at Siege of Calais, and Battle of Poitiers

John de Montacute (19th Great-Grandfather; born circa 1330; died 1389) “was a 14th-century English nobleman and loyal servant of King Edward III. He was the son of **William Montagu, 1st Earl of Salisbury** by his wife **Catherine Grandison**, and younger brother of William de Montacute, 2nd Earl of Salisbury (1328–1397). He also had several younger sisters.”

Montacute fought in the Battle of Crecy in 1346, was with King Edward III in the Siege of Calais in 1349 and fought in the Battle of Poitiers in 1356. He was later Steward of King Richard II. He died in 1389. His effigy is prominently displayed in Salisbury Cathedral.

John de Montacute married **Margaret de Monthermer** (19th Great-Grandmother; 1329-1395), daughter and heiress of **Thomas de Monthermer**, 2nd Baron de Monthermer by his wife **Margaret de Brewes** (20th Great-Grandparents). Their children included John Montacute, 3rd Earl of Salisbury (circa 1350-1400), Thomas Montacute, Dean of Salisbury Cathedral, and **Eleanor Montacute**, who married **Sir John Dinham** (18th Great-Grandfather; 1359-1428). (Wikipedia)

Died in Battle of Sluys

Thomas de Monthermer, 2nd Baron Monthermer (20th Great-Grandfather; 1301-1340)

“was the son of **Ralph de Monthermer** , 1st Baron Monthermer and **Joan of Acre** (21st



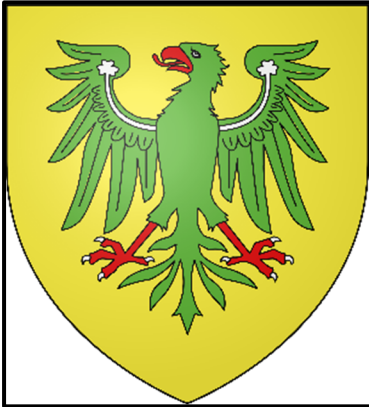
Top and left: Effigy of John de Montacute (1330-1389; 19th Great-Grandfather) in Salisbury Cathedral, England. Above: Bisham Manor, home of William Montagu, 1st Earl of Salisbury (20th Great-Grandfather; 1301-1344). The manor house dates from 1225 and was purchased by William Montagu in 1335. He was buried in the adjacent abbey in 1344.

Great-Grandparents), the daughter of **King Edward I of England** (22nd Great-Grandfather). He was a first cousin of King Edward III of England. He fought in the Battle of Sluys and died on June 24, 1340, from wounds he received in action.” (Wikipedia) His daughter, **Margaret de Monthermer** (19th Great-Grandmother; 1329-1395), married **John de Montacute** (19th Great-Grandfather; born circa 1330; died 1389).

Married the King’s Daughter Without His Permission

Ralph de Monthermer, 1st Baron Monthermer, Earl of Gloucester, Hertford, and Atholl (21st Great-Grandfather; 1270-1325) “was an English nobleman, who was the son-in-law

of King Edward I. His clandestine marriage to the King's widowed daughter **Joan** (21st Great-Grandmother) greatly offended her father, but he was quickly persuaded to pardon Ralph."



"Of unknown parentage, Monthermer was probably born in County Durham. Before 1296, he was a squire in the service of Gilbert de Clare, Earl of Gloucester and Hertford and his wife Joan of Acre, the daughter of Edward I. After Gloucester's death in 1295, the widowed countess fell in love with Monthermer, and after inducing her father to knight him, secretly married him in January 1297. When she was forced to reveal the marriage in April, the King was enraged and had Monthermer imprisoned at Bristol. Thomas Walsingham relates that, while pleading for her husband, Joan told her father 'No one sees anything wrong if a great earl marries a poor and lowly woman. Why should there be anything wrong if a countess marries a young and promising man?' With the intervention of Anthony Beck, Bishop of Durham, Edward relented and

Top left: Arms of Monthermer. Middle: Caerlaverock Castle in southwestern Scotland from the air. Ralph de Monthermer (21st Great-Grandfather; 1270-1325) and his father-in-law, King Edward I (22nd Great-Grandfather), with the entire English Army were withheld by only sixty men for a considerable period. Photograph from Simon Ledingham. Left: Forensic sculptor of Robert the Bruce (1274-1329), who Ralph de Monthermer warned to flee the English court in 1305. Robert the Bruce returned the favor by releasing Robert de Monthermer after the Battle of Bannockburn in 1314.

released Monthermer from prison in August 1297. Monthermer then paid homage to Edward at Eltham Palace and was formally recognized as *jure uxoris* Earl of Gloucester and Hertford."

Ralph de Monthermer fought in many battles including the Battle of Falkirk (Scotland) in July 1298, and at the siege of Caerlaverock with his father-in-law, in 1300. He served in Scotland four times between 1303 and 1306 and was once besieged in Ayr Castle. In 1307 he was appointed keeper of Cardiff Castle and other castles in Wales.

"In 1305 Monthermer warned Robert the Bruce, then at the English court, of the danger posed by King Edward. During a convivial evening Edward had let slip that he intended to arrest Bruce the next morning. Monthermer warned Bruce by sending him the sum of twelve pence and a pair of spurs. Bruce took the hint and he and his squire quickly departed the English court for Scotland. After the Battle of Bannockburn in 1314, at which Monthermer fought and was captured, Robert, now the victorious King of Scots, discharged the debt by releasing Ralph without ransom, but not before first entertaining

him at table. Marmaduke Lord Thweng, also captured, joined them and was also then released without ransom.”

A contemporary account of his presence at the siege of Caerlaverock noted how well he looked, “When he was attired in his own arms, which were yellow with a green eagle.” (Wikipedia)

The royal ancestry of **Joan of Acre** (21st Great-Grandmother; 1272-1307) begins with her father, **Edward I of England**, grandfather, **Henry III of England**, great-grandfather, **John of England**, second great-grandfather, **Henry II of England**, third great-grandmother, **Empress Matilda**, fourth great-grandfather, **Henry I of England**, and fifth great-grandfather, **William the Conqueror**.



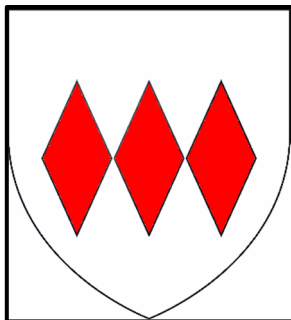
Best friend of King Edward III

William Montagu, alias de Montacute, 1st Earl of Salisbury, 3^r Baron Montagu, King of Mann (20th Great-Grandfather; 1301-1344) “was an English nobleman and loyal servant of King Edward III.”

“The son of **William Montagu, 2nd Baron Montagu**, he entered the royal household at an early age and became a close companion of the young Prince Edward. The relationship continued after Edward was crowned king following the deposition of Edward II in 1327. In 1330, Montagu was one of Edward’s main accomplices in the coup against Roger Mortimer, who until then had been acting as the king’s protector.”



Above: Detail of Edward III’s effigy in Westminster Abbey, and a half groat (silver coin) with his image. William Montacute (20th Great-Grandfather) was Edward’s “most intimate personal friend.”



“In the following years Montagu served the king in various capacities, primarily in the Scottish Wars. He was richly rewarded, and among other things received the lordship of the Isle of Man. In 1337, he was created Earl of Salisbury and given an annual income of 1000 marks to go with the title. He served on the Continent in the early years of the Hundred Years’ War, but in 1340 he was captured by the French, and in return for his freedom had to promise never to fight in France again. Salisbury died of wounds suffered at a tournament early in 1344.”

“Legend has it that Montagu's wife Catherine was raped by Edward III, but this story is almost certainly French propaganda. William and Catherine had six children, most of whom married into the nobility. Modern historians have called William Montague

Edward's 'most intimate personal friend' and 'the chief influence behind the throne from Mortimer's downfall in 1330 until his own death in 1344.'" (Wikipedia)

William Montagu, alias de Montacute, 2nd Baron Montagu (21st Great-Grandfather; 1275-1319), "was an English peer, and an eminent soldier and courtier during the reigns of Edward I and Edward II. He played a significant role in the wars in Scotland and Wales and was appointed steward of the household to Edward II. Perhaps as a result of the influence of his enemy, Thomas, 2nd Earl of Lancaster, Edward II sent him to Gascony as Seneschal in 1318. He died there in October of the following year."



Above: **William Montagu** (20th Great-Grandfather; 1301-1344) from the Salisbury Roll, circa 1463. He displays the Montagu arms on his breastplate,

"Montagu spent a great part of his life serving in the wars in Scotland, Wales and on the continent. He distinguished himself in the First War of Scottish Independence, having been summoned for feudal military service in 1301 and placed in charge of shipping for the war in March 1303. In 1304 he was with King Edward I at the Siege of Stirling Castle. In the same year he and his uncle, Amaury de St Amand, were imprisoned in the Tower of London for an alleged offence for which he was soon acquitted. On May 22, 1306, he and others were knighted by King Edward I (1272-1307), together with the king's son the Prince of Wales and future King Edward II (1307-1327). In February 1307 he and his father served together in Scotland, and in 1309 he took part in the first tournament at Dunstable in which he bore the arms *Argent, three fusils conjoined in fess gules*, as recorded in the Dunstable Roll. In 1311 he was appointed to survey the defenses of Hastings Castle and other castles, and on September 29, 1311, was placed in charge of Berkhamstead Castle. In 1314 he was appointed Keeper of Berwick Castle."

"In about 1292 he married **Elizabeth de Montfort** (21st Great-Grandmother; died 1354), daughter of **Peter de Montfort** (died before March 4, 1287; son of **Peter de Montfort** of Beaudesert Castle)." (Wikipedia) Elizabeth's effigy is still preserved in Christ Church Cathedral in Oxford, Oxfordshire, England. It is the oldest effigy in the church. She donated a large piece of land just south of the church, which is now called Christ Church

Meadow and the walk through it is now a popular attraction in Oxford. Her grandfather was Peter de Montfort, first Speaker of the House of Commons.

First Speaker of the House

Peter de Montfort (or **Piers de Montfort**) (23rd Great-Grandfather; 1205-1265) “of



Beudesert Castle was an English magnate, soldier and diplomat. He is the first person recorded as having presided over Parliament as a *parlour* or *prolocutor*, an office now known as Speaker of the House of Commons. He was one of those elected by the barons to represent them during the constitutional crisis with Henry III in 1258. He was later a leading supporter of Simon de Montfort, 6th Earl of Leicester, against the King. Both he and Simon de Montfort were slain at the Battle of Evesham on Au-

This page: Effigy of Elizabeth de Monford (21st Great-Grandmother; died 1354) in Christ Church Cathedral in Oxford, Oxfordshire, England, as it originally appeared and today (above). Some color still exists on her monument.

gust 4, 1265.” (Wikipedia)

Governor of Corfe Castle and Beaumaris Castle

Simon de Montagu, 1st Baron Montagu (22nd Great-Grandfather; died 1316) (*alias de Montagu, de Montacute*, Latinized to *de Monte Acuto* (“from the sharp mountain”), from the French *mont aigu*, with identical meaning,) was summoned to Parliament by writ and thereby became the 1st Baron Montagu. He was the ancestor of the great Montagu family, Earls of Salisbury.”

In 1299 Simon was made governor of Corfe Castle in Dorset County, England, and in 1308 he was made governor of Beaumaris Castle in Anglesey, Wales.

Led Empress Matilda’s Army

Robert Fitzroy, 1st Earl of Gloucester (29th Great-Grandfather; born before 1100; died

October 31, 1147; *alias* Robert Rufus, Robert de Caen, Robert Consul) “was an illegitimate son of **King Henry I of England**. He was the half-brother of the Empress Matilda, and her



Above: Medieval stain glass dating from 1300s of Robert Fitzroy (29th Great-Grandfather; born before 1100; died 1147) in Tewkesbury Abbey. “An illegitimate son of King Henry I, he married a daughter of the founder of Tewkesbury Abbey, Robert Fitzhamon (30th Great-Grandfather), and the abbey church was completed in Fitzroy’s time.”

Mabel FitzHamon, had seven children:

- William FitzRobert (111?–1183): succeeded his father as 2nd Earl of Gloucester.
- Roger FitzRobert (died 1179): Bishop of Worcester.
- Hamon FitzRobert (died 1159): killed at the siege of Toulouse.

chief military supporter during the civil war known as The Anarchy, in which she vied with Stephen of Blois for the throne of England.”

Early life: “Robert was probably the eldest of Henry’s many illegitimate children. He was born before his father’s accession to the English throne, either during the reign of his grandfather, William the Conqueror, or his uncle, William Rufus.

“He may have been a native of Caen or he may have been only Constable and Governor of that city, *jure uxoris*.”

“His father had contracted him in marriage to **Mabel Fitz-Hamon**, daughter and heir of **Robert FitzHamon**, but the marriage was not solemnized until June 1119 at Lisieux. His wife brought him the substantial honors of Gloucester in England and Glamorgan in Wales, and the honors of Sainte-Scholasse-sur-Sarthe and Évrecy in Normandy, as well as Creully. After the White Ship disaster late in 1120, and probably because of this marriage, in 1121 or 1122 his father created him Earl of Gloucester.”

Family: “Robert and his wife,

- Philip FitzRobert (died after 1147): lord of Cricklade.
- **Matilda FitzRobert** (died 1190): married in 1141 **Ranulf de Gernon**, 4th Earl of Chester (28th Great-Grandparents).
- Mabel FitzRobert: married Aubrey de Vere.
- Richard FitzRobert (1120/35-1175): succeeded his mother as Sire de Creully.”

“He also had four illegitimate children, three listed here:

- Richard FitzRobert (died 1142): Bishop of Bayeux [mother: Isabel de Douvres, sister of Richard de Douvres, bishop of Bayeux (1107–1133).
- Robert FitzRobert (died 1170): Castellan of Gloucester, married in 1147 Hawise de Revers (daughter of Baldwin de Revers, 1st Earl of Devon and his first wife Adelisa), had daughter Mabel FitzRobert (married firstly Jordan de Chambernon and secondly William de Soliers).
- Mabel FitzRobert: married Grufud, Lord of Senghenydd, son of Ifor Bach. This couple were ancestors of Franklin Pierce, 14th President of the U.S.A.”



Relationship with King Stephen: “There is evidence in the contemporary source, the *Gesta Stephani*, that Robert was proposed by some as a candidate for the throne, but his illegitimacy ruled him out: ‘Among others came Robert, Earl of Gloucester,

Top right: Robert Fitzroy and Mabel Fitz Robert (29th Great-Grandparents) “shown holding churches or abbeys which they founded or were benefactors of, including Tewkesbury Abbey.” (Tewkesbury Abbey Founders Book [circa 1500-1525], Bodleian Library, Oxford.) Above: Cardiff Castle, which was owned by Sir Robert Fitzroy, 1st Earl of Gloucester, and his wife, Mabel FitzRobert (29th Great-Grandparents).

son of King Henry, but a bastard, a man of proved talent and admirable wisdom. When he was advised, as the story went, to claim the throne on his father’s death, deterred by

sounder advice, he by no means assented, saying it was fairer to yield it to his sister's son (the future Henry II of England), than presumptuously to arrogate it to himself."



Above: Robert FitzHamon (30th Great-Grandfather; died 1107) and Sibilla de Montgomery (30th Great-Grandmother), his wife. They are shown jointly giving the church building of Tewkesbury Abbey, of which they were founders. (Unknown artist from Founders' and Benefactors' book of Tewkesbury Abbey, made in the early 1500s.) Right: Tewkesbury Abbey (2016), where Robert FitzHamon was buried in 1107. It has the largest and finest Romanesque tower in England and is almost the same size as Westminster Abbey in London. It is second only to Westminster Abbey in the number of medieval church monuments that it contains.

“This suggestion cannot have led to any idea that he and Stephen were rivals for the Crown, as Geoffrey of Monmouth in 1136 referred to Robert as one of the ‘pillars’ of the new King’s rule.”

“The capture of King Stephen at the Battle of Lincoln on February 2, 1141, gave

the Empress Matilda the upper hand in her battle for the throne, but by alienating the citizens of London she failed to be crowned Queen. Her forces were defeated at the Rout of Winchester on September 14, 1141, and Robert of Gloucester was captured nearby at Stockbridge.”

“The two prisoners, King Stephen and Robert of Gloucester, were then exchanged, but by freeing Stephen, the Empress Matilda had given up her best chance of becoming queen. She later returned to France, where she died in 1167, though her son succeeded Stephen as King Henry II in 1154.”

“Robert of Gloucester died in 1147 at Bristol Castle, where he had previously imprisoned



Left: The chapel built for Robert Fitz-Hamon (30th Great-Grandfather; died 1107) in Tewkesbury Abbey. It is called the Founder's Chantry because he financed the building of Tewkesbury Abbey. Above: His grave slab. The original brass effigy was removed centuries ago because of its great value.

King Stephen, and was buried at St James' Priory, Bristol, which he had founded.” (Wikipedia) (Jefferson Family, pages 262-265)

Kinsman to William the Conqueror—Founded Tewkesbury Abbey

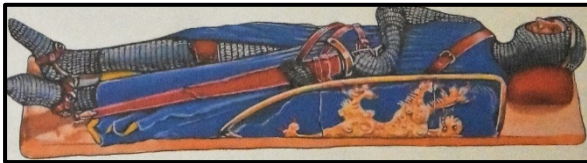
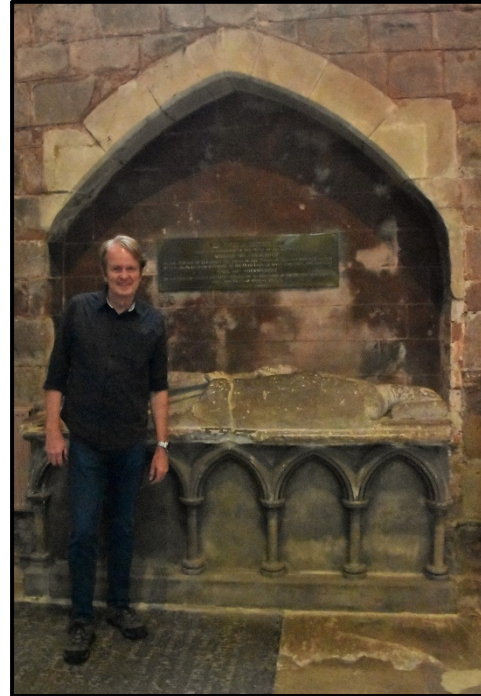
Robert Fitzhamon (30th Great-Grandfather; died March 1107) “was the first Norman feudal baron of Gloucester and the Norman conqueror of Glamorgan, southern Wales. He became Lord of Glamorgan in 1075.”

“As a kinsman of the Conqueror and one of the few Anglo-Norman barons to remain loyal to the two successive kings William Rufus and Henry I of England, he was a prominent figure in England and Normandy.”

“Not much is known about his earlier life, or his precise relationship to William I of England.

He first comes to prominence in surviving records as a supporter of King William Rufus (1087-1100) during the Rebellion of 1088. After the revolt was defeated, he was granted as a reward by King William Rufus the feudal barony of Gloucester, consisting of over two hundred manors in Gloucestershire and other counties. Some of these had belonged to the late Queen Matilda, consort of William the Conqueror and mother of William Rufus, and

had been seized by her from the great Saxon thane, Brictric son of Algar, apparently as a punishment for his having refused her romantic advances in his youth. They had been



This page: Shrewsbury Abbey, where Roger de Montgomerie (31st Great-Grandfather) was buried in 1094. I'm standing next to his tomb in June 2017. Above: Appearance of Roger's effigy when it was painted.

destined as the inheritance of Rufus's younger brother Henry (the future King Henry I); nevertheless Fitzhamon remained on good terms with Henry."

"Robert Fitzhamon seems to have seized control of the lowlands of Glamorgan and Gwynllwg sometime from around 1089 to 1094. His key strongholds were Cardiff Castle, which already may have been built, on the site of an old Roman fort, new castles at Newport, and at Kenfig. His descendants would inherit these castles and lands."

"He also refounded Tewkesbury Abbey in 1092. The abbey's dimensions are almost the same as Westminster Abbey. The first abbot was Gira Idus, Abbot of Cranborne (died 1110) who died before the abbey was consecrated in October 1121. The abbey was ap-

parently built under the influence of his wife, Sybil de Montgomery, said to be a beautiful and religious woman like her sisters.” (Wikipedia) (Jefferson Family, pages 267-272)

Earl of Shrewsbury—One of Richest and Most Powerful Men in England

Roger de Montgomerie (31st Great-Grandfather; died 1094), “also known as Roger the Great de Montgomery, was the first Earl of Shrewsbury, and Earl of Arundel, Sussex. His father was **Roger de Montgomery**, seigneur of Montgomery, and was a relative, probably a grandnephew, of the Duchess Gunnor, wife of Duke Richard I of Normandy. The elder Roger had large holdings in central Normandy, chiefly in the valley of the Dives, which the younger Roger inherited.”

Life: “Roger was one of William the Conqueror’s principal counsellors. He may not have fought in the initial invasion of England in 1066, instead staying behind to help govern Normandy. According to Wace’s Roman de Rou, however, he commanded the Norman right flank at Hastings, returning to Normandy with King William in 1067. Afterwards he was entrusted with land in two places critical for the defense of England, receiving the Rape of Arundel at the end of 1067 (or in early 1068), and in November 1071 he was created Earl of Shrewsbury; a few historians believe that while he received the Shropshire territories in 1071, he was not created Earl until a few years later.”



Above: Possible medieval image of Mabel de Belleme (31st Great-Grandmother). While in her castle (in Normandy) and “coming out of her bath,” she was attacked by four men—Two years earlier she had taken the hereditary lands of Hugh Bunel by force—Now, with the help of his three brothers, Hugh struck off her head with his sword. They were able to escape. This murder took place on the night of December 2, 1079.

“Roger was thus one of the half dozen greatest magnates in England during William the Conqueror’s reign. William gave Earl Roger nearly all of what is now the county of West Sussex. . . Besides the 83 manors in Sussex, his possessions also included seven-eighths of Shropshire which was associated with the earldom of Shrewsbury, he had estates in Surrey (4 manors), Hampshire (9 manors), Wiltshire (3 manors), Middlesex (8 manors), Gloucestershire (1 manor), Worcestershire (2 manors), Cambridgeshire (8 manors), Warwickshire (11 manors) and Staffordshire (30 manors). The income from Roger’s estates would amount to about £2000 per year, in 1086 the landed wealth for England was around £72,000, so it would have represented almost 3% of the nation’s GDP.” (Wikipedia) (Jefferson Family, pages 274-278)

Cruel Wife was Murdered and Her Head Cut Off

Roger de Montgomerie (31st Great-Grandfather; died 1094; see above) “first married

Mabel de Belleme (31st Great-Grandmother), who was heiress to a large territory straddling the border between Normandy and Maine. The medieval chronicler, Orderic Vitalis, paints a picture of Mabel of Bellême being a scheming and cruel woman. She was murdered by Hugh Bunel and his brothers, who in December 1077 rode into her castle of Bures-sur-Dive and cut off her head as she lay in bed. Their motive for the murder was that Mabel had deprived them of their paternal inheritance. Roger and Mabel had ten children.” (Wikipedia) (Jefferson Family, pages 278-281)



Above: Ancient depiction of a medieval murder. William Guillaume I Talvas (32nd Great-Grandfather; circa 1010-after 1065) had his wife, Hildeburg (32nd Great-Grandmother), strangled on her way to church, according to Orderic Vitalis (circa 1125), “because she loved God and would not support his wickedness.”

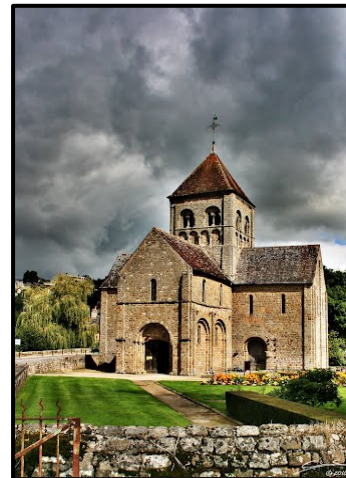
loved God and would not support his wickedness. William married secondly a daughter of Ralf de Beaumont, Viscount of Le Mans.”

“On the occasion of his second wedding, William Talvas invited William fitz Giroie (a former rival) to attend. Suspecting nothing fitz Giroie while a guest at the festivities was suddenly seized by Talvas’ men and imprisoned, then according to Orderic, horribly mutilated and blinded before being released. Somehow William Giroie survived his torture and mutilation and retired to Bec Abbey to live out the remainder of his life as a monk. To avenge this atrocity the sons and kinsmen of William fitz Giroie sacked and destroyed the lands of William Talvas who would not face them in the field. Finally, Talvas’ son Arnulf rebelled and exiled his father, now reviled by everyone. He wandered until he was taken in by the de Montgomery family whose son Roger agreed to marry his daughter Mabel in return for the lands William lost. It seems certain that after the death of Arnulf the following year, that William Talvas recovered his lands. William confirmed a gift to St. Aubin of Angers made by his brother Yves circa 1060-1062 and after that nothing more is heard of him.”

Had his Wife Murdered on her way to Church

William I Talvas (995–1052) “while as treacherous and self-serving as any of his family before him he surpassed them in wickedness and cruelty. He had married a **Hildeburg**, daughter of a nobleman named **Arnulf**, but he had his wife strangled on her way to church, according to Orderic, because she

“William Talvas is said to have cursed the infant William, later to become William the



Above: Effigy and tomb of Guillaume “William” Talvas (32nd Great-Grandfather; circa 1010–after 1055), father of Mabile de Belleme (31st Great-Grandmother) and son of William de Belleme (33rd Great-Grandfather; circa 970–after 1028). He was buried in the “chapel of the church of Notre-Dame-Sur” (right) in L’eau, France. (In English: Norte-Dame-on water.) “While as treacherous and self-serving as any of his family before him, he surpassed them in wickedness and cruelty.” If the accounts of his life are true, he was indeed one of the worse men to have ever lived, even murdering his first wife. Top right: Old drawing of his effigy. The recumbent figure is lying under a Gothic canopy, with a lion at its feet.

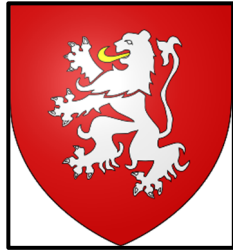
Conqueror, in his cradle predicting the child would be the downfall of the house of Bellême.” (Wikipedia)

Poisoned by His Host

Ranulf II (28th Great-Grandfather) (also known as Ranulf de Gernon) (1099–1153) “was an Anglo-Norman potentate who inherited the honor of the palatine county of Chester upon the death of his father **Ranulf le Meschin, 3rd Earl of Chester**. He was descended from the Counts of Bessin in Normandy.”

“In 1153 Henry—by then King Stephen’s accepted heir—granted Staffordshire to Ranulf. That year, whilst Ranulf was a guest at the house of William Peverel the Younger, his host

attempted to kill him with poisoned wine. Three of his men who had drunk the wine died, while Ranulf suffered agonizing pain. A few months later Henry became king and exiled Peverel from England as punishment. Ranulf succumbed to the poison on December 16, 1153: his son **Hugh de**



Above left: The coat of arms of Ranulf de Gernon, 4th Earl of Chester (28th Great-Grandfather; 1099-1153). Above right: Depiction of a medieval feast. In 1153, Ranulf de Gernon, and three of his knights died from poisoned wine. “Whilst Ranulf was a guest at the house of William Peverel the Younger, his host attempted to kill him with poisoned wine. Three of his men who had drunk the wine died, while Ranulf suffered agonizing pain. A few months later Henry became king and exiled Peverel from England as punishment. Ranulf succumbed to the poison on December 16, 1153.”

Kevelioc, 5th Earl of Chester (27th Great-Grandfather; 1147-1181), inherited his lands as held in 1135 (when Stephen took the throne), while other honors bestowed upon Ranulf were revoked.” (Wikipedia) (Jefferson Family, page 300-304)

Participated in the Fifth Crusade

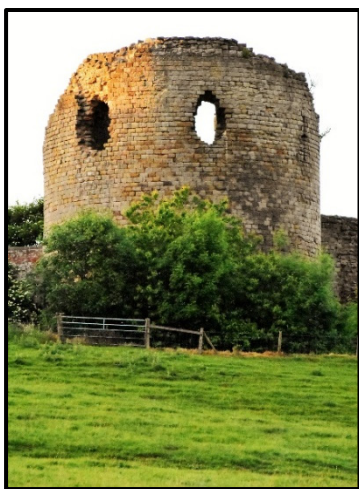
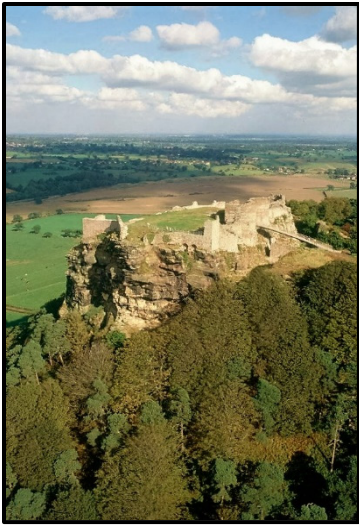
Ranulf de Blondville, 6th Earl of Chester and 1st Earl of Lincoln (26th Great-Grand-uncle; 1170-1232), “known in some references as the 4th Earl of Chester (in the second lineage of the title after the original family line was broken after the 2nd Earl), was one of the ‘old school’ of Anglo-Norman barons whose loyalty to the Angevin dynasty was consistent but contingent on the receipt of lucrative favors. He was described as ‘almost the last relic of the great feudal aristocracy of the Conquest.’”

“Ranulf, born in 1170, was the eldest son of **Hugh de Kevelioc** and **Bertrade de Montfort of Evreux**. He was said to have been small in physical stature.”

“Loyal to the king in 1215–1216, he was one of the few magnates to witness the Magna Carta of 1215. He played a leading military role in the civil war by virtue of his extensive estates and numerous castles. Ranulf stood with William Marshal and the Earls of Derby and Warwick with the King, whilst the other nobility of the land stood with the enemy or remained aloof from the conflict.”

In 1217, Ranulf fought in the Second Battle of Lincoln, which was fought between the Royalists, headed by William Marshal, and de Blondville and the French forces and their allies. The battle went in favor of the Royalists, and they captured forty-six Barons and the Earls of Winchester and Hereford and the Earl of Lincoln, recently created by Louis the French King. Following the battle in recognition of his support, Ranulf was created Earl of Lincoln by King Henry III of England on May 23, 1217.”

“In 1218, de Blondeville decided to honor the crusading vow he had made three years



Above: Medieval depiction of the Siege of Damietta, Egypt, the Fifth Crusade. The port was taken in November 1219. Ranulf de Blonderville, 6th Earl of Chester and 1st Earl of Lincoln (26th Great-Granduncle; 1170–1232) was part of the victorious army but grew discontent with the leadership of the crusader. He left Damietta in September 1220 with his fellow English earls. The rest of the crusade was a disaster for those who stayed behind. Top left: Beeston Castle in Cheshire, built by Ranulf de Blonderville in the 1220s after his return from the 5th Crusade. It is built on a rocky summit, 350 feet above the Cheshire Plain. Left: Ruins of Chartley Castle, located north of Stowe-by-Chartley in Staffordshire, England, which was built in stone in 1220/1221 by Ranulf. Photographs taken in 2017.

previously, and he journeyed eastwards. He met up with the Count of Nevers and the Count of La Marche in Genoa, accompanied by the Earls of Derby, Arundel and Winchester. They then sailed on towards Egypt and the Nile. An icy winter in camp was followed by a burning summer which affected the morale of the crusaders greatly. During September 1219, the Sultan, wary of the conflict outside Damietta, offered the Crusaders a startling bargain—Beth-

lehem, Nazareth, Jerusalem and central Palestine and Galilee, so long as the Crusaders gave up their war in Egypt. Earl Ranulph was one of many voices in support of taking the offer and was supported by his English peers. However, Bishop Pelagius, the Patriarch of Jerusalem and the military orders would have none of it. They finally refused the offer and on November 5 they found the walls of Damietta poorly manned, so they attacked and

secured the city. When winter came the army was smoldering with discontent. Earl Ranulf left Damietta in September 1220, with his fellow English earls, leaving behind an

indecisive force under the command of Bishop Pelagius and the Military Orders.”



Above: Image from the Bayeux Tapestry showing William the Conqueror with his two half-brothers. William is in the center, Odo is on the left with empty hands, and Robert is on the right with a sword in his hand. The Bayeux Tapestry was made in the 1070s A.D., and because it is contemporary, accurately depicts the Norman style of clothes and hair.

first Norman King of England (1066–1087). He was also the Duke of Normandy from 1035 until his death.”

“At the Battle of Hastings in 1066, William defeated Harold Godwinson, the last Anglo-Saxon king of England, which is shown on the Bayeux Tapestry. He changed the course of both Norman and English history.” (Wikipedia)

As shown below, William the Conqueror was a direct descendant of Charlemagne.

William I, King of England (1027-1087; 30th Great-Grandfather).
 Robert I, Duke of Normandy (circa 1000-1035; 31st Great-Grandfather).
 Judith of Brittany (982-1017; 32nd Great-Grandmother).
 Ermengarde of Anjou (born before 967; 33rd Great-Grandmother).
 Adele of Meaux (circa 950-circa 980; 34th Great-Grandmother).
 Robert de Vermandois, Count of Meaux (918-968; 35th Great-Grandfather).
 Herbert II, Count of Vermandois (884-943; 36th Great-Grandfather).
 Herbert I, Count of Vermandois (circa 848-907; 37th Great-Grandfather).

“Ranulf died at Wallingford on October 26, 1232, aged sixty. His viscera were buried at Wallingford Castle, his heart at Dieulacres Abbey, which he had founded, and the remainder of his body at St Werburg's in Chester. His various estates were divided between his four sisters: Matilda (Maud), Mabel, Agnes (Alice), and Hawise as co-heirs.” (Wikipedia) (Jefferson Family, pages 306-310)

Descend from the Kings of England and Charlemagne

Last Invader to Conquer England

William the Conqueror (30th Great-Grandfather; 1027-1087), “also known as William I of England, was the

Pepin, Count of Vermandois (circa 815-?; 38th Great-Grandfather).
 Bernard, King of Italy (797-818; 39th Great-Grandfather).
 Pepin, King of Italy (773-810; 40th Great-Grandfather).
 Charlemagne (747-814; 41st Great-Grandfather).

List of Twenty-one Proven Companions of William the Conqueror

“The order of listing is that given in the respective sources.”

- (1) **Robert de Beaumont, 1st Earl of Leicester** (Source: William of Poitiers)

“A certain Norman, Robert, son of Roger of Beaumont, being nephew and heir to Henry, Count of Meulan, through Henry’s sister Adeline, found himself that day in battle for the first time. He was as yet but a young man and he performed feats of valour worthy of perpetual remembrance. At the head of a troop which he commanded on the right wing he attacked with the utmost bravery and success.”



Above: Image from the Bayeux Tapestry showing Odo, Bishop of Bayeux (center), fighting at Hastings, holding a club. The club may reflect his clerical status which might have precluded the shedding of blood by sword. He is one of the “Proven Companions” of William the Conqueror.

- (2) Eustace II, Count of Boulogne (Source: William of Poitiers)

“With a harsh voice he (Duke William) called to Eustace of Boulogne, who with 50 knights was turning in flight and was about to give the signal for retreat. This man came up to the Duke and said in his ear that he ought to retire since he would court death if he went forward. But at the very moment when he uttered the words Eustace was struck between the shoulders with such force that blood gushed out from his mouth and nose and half dead he only made his escape with the aid of his followers.”

- (3) William, Count of Evreux (Source: William of Poitiers)

“There were present in this battle: Eustace, Count of Boulogne; William, son of Richard, Count of Evreux; Geoffrey, son of Rotrou, Count of Mortagne; William FitzOsbern; Haimo, Vicomte of Thouars; Walter Giffard; Hugh of Montfort-sur-Risle; Rodulf of Tosny; Hugh of Grantmesnil; William of Warenne, and many other most renowned warriors whose names are worthy to be commemorated in histories among the bravest soldiers of all time.”

- (4) Geoffrey of Mortagne, Count of Mortagne and Lord of Nogent, later Count of Perche (Source: William of Poitiers)
- (5) William Fitzosbern, 1st Earl of Hereford (Source: William of Poitiers)
- (6) Aimeri, Viscount of Thouars (Source: William of Poitiers)



Above: Rebecca Martin (age eight) on the ground where the Battle of Hastings was fought on October 14, 1066; 2004. Five of her direct line ancestors are among the “Proven Companions” of William the Conqueror, her 31st Great-Grandfather. She has always been attracted to Hastings and as of 2020 has visited the battlefield five times.

- (7) **Walter Giffard, Lord of Longueville** (Source: William of Poitiers)
- (8) Hugh de Montfort, Lord of Montfort-sur-Risle (Source: William of Poitiers)
- (9) Ralph de Tosny, Lord of Conches, Lord of Conches (Source: William of Poitiers)
- (10) Hugh de Grandmesnil (Source: William of Poitiers)
- (11) **William de Warenne, 1st Earl of Surrey** (Source: William of Poitiers)
- (12) William Malet, Lord of Gravelle (Source: William of Poitiers)

“His (King Harold’s) corpse was brought into the Duke’s camp and William gave it for burial to William, surnamed Malet, and not to Harold’s mother, who offered for the body of her beloved son its weight in gold.”

- (13) **Odo, Bishop of Bayeux, later Earl of Kent** (Source: Bayeux Tapestry)

“Hic Odo Eps (Episcopus) Baculu(m) Tenens Confortat Pueros.” (Here Odo the Bishop holding a club strengthens the boys).”

- (14) Turstin FitzRolf (Source: Orderic Vitalis)
- (15) Engenulf de Laigle (Source: Orderic Vitalis)

The five additional names: “These five were agreed upon by both David C. Douglas and Geoffrey H. White and are from the *Complete Peerage XII-1*, Appendix L.”

- (16) Geoffrey de Mowbray, Bishop of Coutances (Source: William of Poitiers)
- (17) **Robert, Count of Mortain** (Source: The Bayeux Tapestry)
- (18) Wadard. Believed to be a follower of the Bishop of Bayeux (Source: The Bayeux Tapestry)
- (19) Vital. Believed to be a follower of the Bishop of Bayeux (Source: The Bayeux Tapestry)
- (20) Goubert d’Auffay, Seigneur of Auffay (Source: Orderic Vitalis)

“Since the time of these lists, J. F. A. Mason in the *English Historical Review* adds one additional name:

- (21) Humphrey of Tilleul-en-Auge (Source: Orderic Vitalis) (Wikipedia)

For those who are descendants of Christopher Branch of Virginia (11th Great-Grandfather), as recorded in *The Jefferson Family*, and William Farrar of Virginia (10th Great-Grandfather) as recorded in *The Farrar Family*, five of these proven twenty-one companions of William the Conqueror are their direct line ancestors. All five fought in the Battle of Hastings on October 14, 1066.

- (1) **Robert de Beaumont, 1st Earl of Leicester** (28th Great-Grandfather; 1040/1050-1118). His father, Roger de Beaumont was certainly at Hastings (Source: The Bayeux Tapestry), but not in the battle itself. Roger provided sixty ships for the invasion. (Farrar Family, pages 862-867)
- (2) **Walter Giffard, Lord of Longueville** (30th Great-Grandfather; died before 1085), provided thirty ships. (Farrar Family, page 859)
- (3) **William de Warenne, 1st Earl of Surrey** (30th Great-grandfather; died 1088). (Farrar Family)
- (4) **Odo, Bishop of Bayeux, later Earl of Kent** (30th Great-Granduncle; died 1097). (Farrar Family, pages 864 and 866; Jefferson, page 325)
- (5) **Robert, Count of Mortain** (30th Great-Granduncle; circa 1031-1090), provided 120 ships, the most of any of William’s magnates. (Jefferson, page 325) Robert’s wife was Matilda of Montgomery (30th Great-Grandaunt; died 1085). (Jefferson, pages 287-288)



Above: Rebecca Martin (age 8 in 2004) at the Rufus stone in England, where King William II “Rufus” (1056-1100) was shot by an arrow on August 2, 1100 A.D. He is her 30th Great-Granduncle.

Killed by Arrow

William II of England (29th Great-Granduncle; 1056–1100) “was the second son of William the Conqueror and Matilda of Flanders. He was King of England from 1087 until 1100, but he was a harsh ruler and was not very well-liked. He did not have a wife or any children. He died on August 2, 1100, in the New Forest when he was shot by an arrow while hunting with his brother-in-law, Walter Tirel (Tryyel) and other friends.” (Wikipedia)

Had over Twenty Known Illegitimate Children

Henry I of England (29th Great-Grandfather; 1068-1135), also called Henry Beauclerc

(meaning good scholar), “ruled from 1100 until his death in 1135. Henry was born in Selby, Yorkshire, England. He was the fourth son of William the Conqueror and Queen Matilda of Flanders. Henry was the only child born in England. His mother had come to England for her coronation in 1068.”

“Henry and his wife had two children, Matilda and William Adelin. William died in the White Ship sinking on November 25, 1120. Henry also fathered more illegitimate children than any other English King. Estimates by various historians place the number between 20 and 25.”

“Henry died in 1135. He was visiting his daughter and grandchildren in Normandy. After his death, his daughter Mathilda and his nephew, Stephen, argued over who would become the ruler of England, and started a civil war called ‘The Anarchy.’” (Wikipedia)

Won the Civil War

Stephen of England (1096–1154; son of Adela of Normandy, 29th Great-Grandaunt) “was King of England from 1135 until 1154. He was crowned at Westminster Abbey on December 26, 1135. Stephen is buried at the Clunaic Monastery in Faversham, Kent.”

“The long English Civil War known as The Anarchy ended in his favor, but to secure his position and to avoid another civil war, he agreed to the Treaty of Winchester, in which Stephen recognized Henry II (27th Great-Grandfather), son of Matilda, Empress of England (28th Great-Grandmother), as his heir.” (Wikipedia)

Lost the Civil War, but Won the Throne for Her Descendants

Matilda, Empress of England (28th Great-Grandmother; born in 1102 at Winchester, Hampshire, England; died September 10, 1167, at Abbey of the Notre Dame des Prés, Rouen, Caux, France, and buried in Rouen Cathedral) “was the daughter of Henry I ‘Beauclerc,’ King of England and Editha of Scotland. She married, firstly, Heinrich V, Holy Roman Emperor, son of Heinrich IV, Holy Roman Emperor, on January 7, 1114, at Mainz, Rheinland-Pfalz, Germany. She married, secondly, **Geoffrey V Plantagenet** (28th Great-Grandfather), Comte d’Anjou et Maine, son of Fulk V d’Anjou, 9th Comte d’Anjou and Aremburga de la Fleche, Comtesse de Maine, on May 22, 1128, at Le Mans Cathedral, Le Mans, France.”

“She was given the name of Adelaide at birth. After her marriage, Matilda ‘the Empress’ of England was styled as *Empress Matilda of Germany* on January 7, 1114. She gained the title of *Lady of the English* on April 7, 1141. She was deposed as Lady of the English on November 1, 1141.”

“Daughter of Henry I and Editha of Scotland, she was nominated by her father as his successor. However, on the death of Henry I, the council considered a woman unfit to rule and offered the throne to Stephen. Matilda invaded England and fought (1139-1148) to wrest rule from the usurping Stephen. She won much of the west, and after Stephen’s capture in April 1141 a clerical council proclaimed Matilda ‘Lady of the English.’ She

entered London but made cash demands that provoked Londoners to expel her before a coronation. On Stephen's release, she suffered defeats (fled from Oxford Castle December 1142), and eventually left England for Normandy, now controlled by her husband. The cause of her death is obscure. Although Matilda failed to secure the English throne, she laid a basis for successful claims by descendants of her husband Geoffrey of Anjou." (Wikipedia)

Handsome, Jovial, and a Great Warrior

Geoffrey of Anjou (28th Great-Grandfather; 1113-1151) called the Handsome, the Fair (French: *le Bel*) or Plantagenet, was the count of Anjou, Touraine and Maine by inheritance from 1129, and also the duke of Normandy by conquest from 1144. His marriage to Empress Matilda, daughter of King Henry I of England, led to the centuries-long reign of the Plantagenet dynasty in England. The name "Plantagenet" was taken from Geoffrey's epithet. Geoffrey's ancestral domain of Anjou gave rise to the name Angevin, and what became known as the Angevin Empire in the 12th century.

"Geoffrey was the elder son of Fulk V of Anjou and Ermengarde of Maine. Geoffrey received his nickname from the yellow sprig of broom blossom (*genêt* is the French name for the *planta genista*, or broom shrub) he wore in his hat. The chronicler John of Marmoutier described Geoffrey as handsome, red-haired, jovial, and a great warrior. King Henry I of England, having heard reports on Geoffrey's talents and prowess, sent legates to Anjou to negotiate a marriage between



Above: Enamel effigy of Geoffrey Plantagenet, Count of Anjou (28th Great-Grandfather; 1113-1151) on his tomb, formerly at Le Mans Cathedral, now in the Museum of Archeology and History in Le Mans, France. It is one of the first authentic representations of a coat of arms (a blue shield depicting four gold lions) and is "possible evidence for the early use of what became the English royal arms." He was called the Handsome, the Fair, or Plantagenet. John of Marmoutier described Geoffrey as "handsome, red haired, jovial, and a great warrior."

on Geoffrey's talents and prowess, sent legates to Anjou to negotiate a marriage between

his 25-year-old daughter Matilda and Geoffrey. Consent was obtained from both parties, and on June 10, 1128, the fifteen-year-old Geoffrey was knighted in Rouen by King Henry, in preparation for the wedding.”

“The year after the marriage Geoffrey’s father left for Jerusalem (where he was to later become king), leaving Geoffrey behind as count of Anjou.”

“When his father-in-law, King Henry I of England died in 1135, Geoffrey supported Matilda in entering Normandy to claim her inheritance. The border districts submitted to her, but England chose her first cousin Stephen of Blois for its king, and Normandy soon followed suit.”

“In 1139 Matilda landed in England with 140 knights, where she was besieged at Arundel Castle by King Stephen. In the Anarchy which ensued, Stephen was captured at Lincoln in February 1141 and imprisoned at Bristol. A legatine council of the English church held at Winchester in April 1141 declared Stephen deposed and proclaimed Matilda ‘Lady of the English.’”

“During 1142 and 1143, Geoffrey secured all of Normandy west and south of the Seine, and, on January 14, 1144, he crossed the Seine and entered Rouen. He assumed the title of Duke of Normandy in the summer of 1144. In 1144, he founded an Augustine priory at Château-l’Hermitage in Anjou. Geoffrey held the duchy until 1149, when he and Matilda conjointly ceded it to their son, Henry, which cession was formally ratified by King Louis VII of France the following year.”

“Geoffrey also put down three baronial rebellions in Anjou, in 1129, 1135 and 1145–1151. He was often at odds with his younger brother, Elias, whom he had imprisoned until Elias died in 1151. The threat of rebellion slowed his progress in Normandy and is one reason he could never intervene in England. Geoffrey died later the same year, aged 38, and Henry took his father’s place as head of the Plantagenet ducal house. In 1153, the Treaty of Wallingford stipulated that Stephen should remain King of England for life and that Henry, the son of Geoffrey and Matilda should succeed him, beginning the Plantagenet era in English history.”

“Geoffrey died suddenly on September 7, 1151. According to John of Marmoutier, Geoffrey was returning from a royal council when he was stricken with fever. He arrived at Château-du-Loir, collapsed on a couch, made bequests of gifts and charities, and died. His wife and sons outlived him. He was buried at St Julien’s Cathedral in Le Mans France, and his son Henry succeeded him as Duke of Normandy.”

Geoffrey and Matilda’s children were:

1. Henry II, King of England (1133–1189)
2. Geoffrey, Count of Nantes (1134 – 1158)
3. William, Viscount of Dieppe (1136–1164)

“Geoffrey also had illegitimate children by an unknown mistress (or mistresses): Hame-who married Isabel de Warenne, 4th Countess of Surrey; Emme, who married Dafydd Ab

Owain Gwynedd, Prince of North Wales; and Mary, who became a nun and Abbess of Shaftesbury and who may be the poet Marie de France.” (Wikipedia)

King of Jerusalem

Fulk (29th Great-Grandfather; 1089-1143) “was the count of Anjou (as Fulk V) from 1109



Top left: 13th century painting depicting Fulk, King of Jerusalem (29th Great-Grandfather; 1089-1143). He ruled Jerusalem from 1131 until 1143. His two sons, Baldwin III and Amalric, also ruled as kings of Jerusalem. Above: Crusader graffiti in the Church of the Holy Sepulchre. Fulk went on two crusades before he became king. Top right: David's Tower, which was his palace in Jerusalem (also the site of Jesus' trial by Pilate). Middle: Outer wall by David's Tower. Right: Western Wall. I took these photographs in 2019.

to 1129 and the king of Jerusalem from 1131 to his death. During his reign, the Kingdom of Jerusalem

reached its largest territorial extent.”

“Fulk went on **crusade** in 1119 or 1120 and became attached to the Knights Templar (Orderic Vitalis). He returned, late in 1121, after which he began to subsidize the



Above: Acre, Israel, in June 2019. King Fulk of Jerusalem was killed on a hunting trip at Acre in 1143. His queen mourned his loss. He was buried in the Church of the Holy Sepulchre in Jerusalem, one of the few persons to ever be buried there. Fulk’s son, Baldwin III, and grandson, Baldwin IV, were also buried in the church, which covers Golgotha and Christ’s tomb. Below: Entrance to the Church of the Holy Sepulchre in 2019.

Templars, maintaining two knights in the Holy Land for a year.” In 1127, he was offered the hand of Melisende, the daughter of Baldwin II, King of Jerusalem, and began to rule Jerusalem in 1131, upon Baldwin II’s death.

“In 1143, while the king and queen were in Acre, Fulk was killed in a hunting accident. His horse stumbled, fell, and Fulk’s skull was crushed by the saddle, ‘and his brains gushed forth from both ears and nostrils,’ as William of Tyre describes. He was carried back to Acre, where he lay unconscious for three days be-

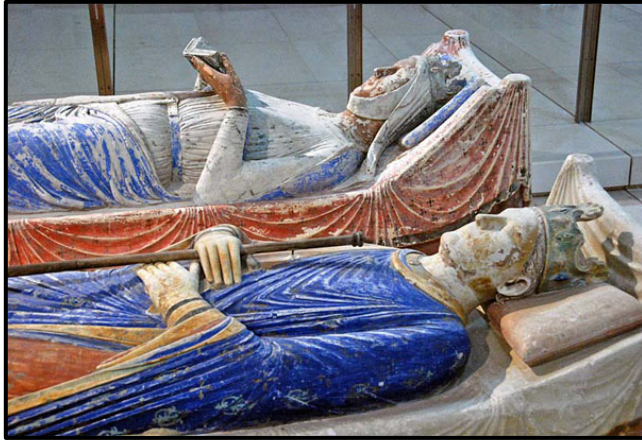
fore he died. He was buried in the Church of the Holy Sepulchre in Jerusalem. Though their marriage started in conflict, Melisende [his second wife] mourned for him privately as well as publicly. Fulk was survived by his son **Geoffrey** (28th Great-Grandfather) by his first wife, and Baldwin and Amalric by Melisende.” (Baldwin III [28th Great-Grand-uncle], Fulk’s son, ruled as King of Jerusalem from 1143 until his death in 1163 and was buried in the Church of the Holy Sepulchre; his brother, Amalric, ruled after him from 1163 until 1174. Amalric’s son was Baldwin IV, a leper, who ruled Jerusalem from 1174 until 1185—the Hollywood movie, “Kingdom of Heaven” portrayed him and this time period in Jerusalem. Baldwin IV was also buried in the Holy Sepulchre—only a few were ever permitted.)



“According to William of Tyre, Fulk was ‘a ruddy man, like David... faithful and gentle, affable and kind... an experienced warrior full of patience and wisdom in military affairs.’ His chief fault was an inability to remember names and faces.” (Wikipedia)

Ruled from Scotland to the Border of Spain

Henry II of England (27th Great-Grandfather; born March 5, 1133, in Le Mans, France;



Right: Henry II portrayed alongside his mother, Empress Matilda, in a 12th-century manuscript. Henry II was King of England from 1154 to 1189. Effigies of King Henry II and his wife, Queen Eleanor of Aquitaine (1122-1204), in Fontevraud Abbey, France. Above: Henry of Northumbria silver penny, minted in the name of Henry II at Corbridge in Northumberland after his peace deal with King Stephen.

died July 6, 1189, in Chinon, France) “was also Count of Anjou, Count of Maine, Duke of Normandy, Duke of Aquitaine, Duke of Gascony,

Count of Nantes, Lord of Ireland and, at various times, controlled parts of Wales, Scotland and western France. He was as much concerned with his empire in France as he was with England.”

“Henry was the son of Geoffrey V, Count of Anjou and Empress Matilda (28th Great-Grandparents). He married Eleanor of Aquitaine in 1152 and was crowned king in 1154. His children included the future kings Richard, who would later lead many battles, and John. Although he was King of England, he never learnt the English language because his family had come over from Normandy in 1066. They spoke Norman French. Henry was intelligent and well educated. He spoke Latin fluently, which was the language of educated people in Europe at that time. All documents and laws were written in Latin.”

“Henry II fought against his brother Geoffrey in Montsoreau in 1152. Henry II’s succession to the English throne was agreed in 1153. He finally came to the throne in 1154

upon Stephen I's death. He reduced the power of the barons who had become very powerful in Stephen's reign, and in 1166 introduced trial by jury." (Wikipedia)

Leader of the Third Crusade

Richard I of England, the Lionheart (26th Great-Granduncle; 1157-1199) "was the king of England from 1189 to 1199. Richard was the son of Henry II of England and Eleanor of Aquitaine (27th Great-Grandparents). As the third son, he was not expected to inherit the throne. In 1168 he became the Duke of Aquitaine."



Above: Effigy of Richard I of England (1157-1199) in Fontevraud Abbey, France. He was King of England from 1189 until 1199 and is still one of the most admired monarchs in history.

"Richard was one of the leaders of the Third Crusade against Saladin, which never actually succeeded. During his journey, he conquered Sicily and Cyprus. He fought in the Battle of Acre and the Battle of Arsuf. In the end, he was unable to win back Jerusalem from the Muslims. On his return trip back to England he

was captured by the Austrian Duke, Leopold I. The English people had to pay a huge ransom to set him free. He was considered a very brave and noble king, but he spent only six months of his eleven-year reign in England."

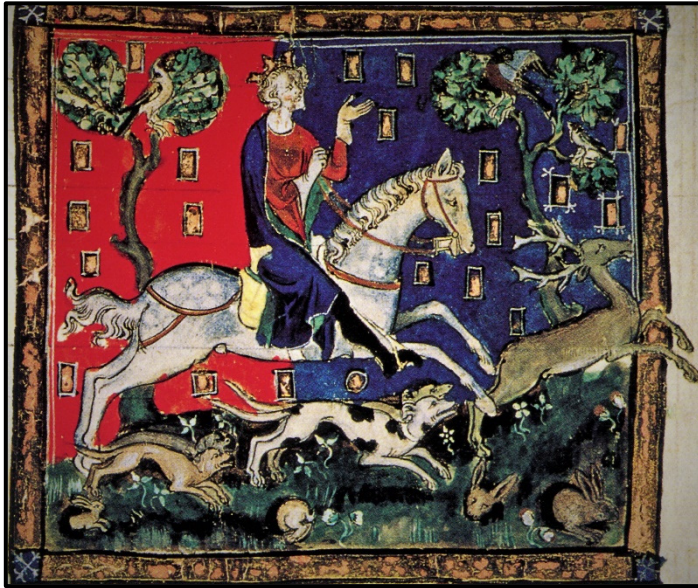
"He died after being shot with a crossbow while besieging a castle in Limousin. His remains were buried at different places. His body was buried at Fontevraud Abbey near Saumur in France, as are his father and mother. His internal organs were buried at Chalus, near Limoges in central France. His heart was buried in the Notre Dame Cathedral at Rouen. It was found in 1838 and was examined by scientists in 2012. They did tests for poisons, as one medieval story claimed Richard had died from a poisoned arrow. There is no evidence to support this idea, and he probably died from gangrene from the arrow wound."

"Richard was succeeded by his younger brother, John." (Wikipedia)

Forced to Sign the Magna Carta

King John (26th Great-Grandfather; 1166-1216) "was the son of Henry II of England and Eleanor of Aquitaine (27th Great-Grandparents). He was King of England from April 6, 1199, until his death. He became King of England after the death of his brother Richard I (Richard the Lionheart)."

“His reign was marked by disputes between John and his barons and bishops. Because of



Above: Contemporary image of King John (26th Great-Grandfather; 1166-1216) on a stag hunt. Top right: Effigy of Isabella of Angoulême (26th Great-Grandmother; 1186-1246), Queen of England, in Fontevraud Abbey. She was the second wife of King John and mother of Henry III. She had five children with John and after he died, she married again and had nine more children. Right: Henry III (25th Great-Grandfather; 1207-1272) traveling to Brittany in 1230, by Matthew Paris (1200-1259).

this the nobles forced him to observe the agreement called Magna Carta, to limit his power. The Magna Carta was a significant legal document in English history, as well as the first English ‘bill of rights.’ It introduced the idea that monarchs had limited rights and had to follow certain laws, and it gave the nobles more say in the government. It not only affected English government, but inspired governments of other countries.”

“John’s reign as king was important but not considered successful from England’s historical point of view. He tried several times to get back land in France which had been lost, but did not succeed.” (Wikipedia)

Reigned for Fifty-six Years

Henry III (25th Great-Grandfather; 1207-1272), son of John, King of England, and Isabella of Angoulême (26th Great-Grandmother; 1118-1246, she is buried in Fontevraud Abbey in France), “became King of England in 1216 when he was less than ten years old. He continued to be king for 56 years until he died in 1272. He was married to Eleanor of Provence. He is credited for redeveloping certain aspects of Westminster Abbey and his interest in architecture and decoration. He improved the Tower of London’s defenses and kept lions, an elephant and a polar bear in the tower. Discovered after his death, his tomb

reveals Henry III was about 5' 6" tall and had a drooping left eyelid. Henry was an unpopular monarch.” (Wikipedia) The great knight, William Marshal (25th Great-Grandfather; 1146-1219), served as protector of young Henry III and regent of the kingdom. Wil-



Above: Portrait in Westminster Abbey, thought to be of King Edward I (24th Great-Grandfather; 1239-1307) of England.

liam saved England and Henry from the French king, Prince Louis, when he won the Second Battle of Lincoln. “In spite of his advanced age (around 70) he prosecuted the war against Prince Louis and the rebel barons with remarkable energy. In the Battle of Lincoln he charged and fought at the head of the young King’s army, leading them to victory.”

against Simon de Montfort in defense of his father’s crown. He went on a crusade, and his father died as Edward was on his way back. As a ruler, he improved the laws and made Parliament regular. He conquered Wales, and subdued the Welsh by brutal policies. He was determined to control Scotland through puppet kings and just managed to do it during his lifetime. He expelled the Jewish people from England.” (Wikipedia)

Subdued Wales and Scotland

Edward I (24th Great-Grandfather; 1239-1307), also *Longshanks* (meaning “long legs”) and the *Hammer of the Scots*, “was a Plantagenet King of England. He became king on November 21, 1272, until his death in 1307. His mother was Queen Eleanor of Provence and his father was King Henry III of England. As a younger man, Edward fought

King with a Great Spanish Heritage

Edward II (23rd Great-Granduncle; 1284-1327) of Caernarfon, “was King of England from 1307 until he was removed from the throne in January 1327. His tendency to ignore his nobility, in favor of low-born favorites, led to political trouble and eventually to his removal from the throne. He is most remembered for a story about his alleged murder, which was linked to his reliance on the corrupt family of Hugh le Despenser.” (Wikipedia)

Edward II was the son of **Eleanor of Castile** (24th Great-Grandmother; 1241-1290), who

had a particularly close marriage to **Edward I**. They travelled extensively together and she



was with him on the Ninth Crusade when he was wounded at Acre. “When she died at Harby near Lincoln, her grieving husband famously ordered a stone cross to be erected at

Above: Contemporary portrait of Eleanor of Castile (24th Great-Grandmother; 1241-1290), Ferdinand III (25th Great-Grandfather; 1199-1252) in a 13th-century miniature, and Alfonso IX, King of Leon and Galicia (26th Great-Grandfather; 1188-1230). Below: Effigy of Edward II of England (23rd Great-Uncle; 1284-1327) in Gloucester Cathedral. It is believed to be a true likeness of the king. During his reign he witnessed the Great Famine that slowly killed 10-25% of the population of towns between 1315 and 1317.

each stopping-place on the journey to London, ending at Charing Cross.” Eleanor was the daughter of **Ferdinand III of Castile** (25th Great-Grandfather; 1199-1252), who secured



the permanent union of the crowns of Castile and Leon (which would dominate the Iberian Peninsula) and greatly expanded the dominions of Castile into southern Spain, annexing many of the great old cities such as Cordoba and Seville for the next two centuries. He was canonized in 1671 and the San Fernando Valley of Los Angeles, California, is named after him. Ferdinand was the son of **Alfonso IX of Leon** (26th Great-Grandfather; 1171-1230), who founded the University of Salamanca in 1212 (located west of Madrid), which is the “third oldest university still in

operation in the world and the oldest in the Hispanic world.” He was a great lover of women and had many extramarital affairs that produced at least ten known children besides his legitimate issue. (Note: Eleanor of Castile is also a 24th Great-Grandmother through her daughter, **Joan of Acre** [23rd Great-Grandmother; 1272-1307]), a sister of Edward II. Joan married **Gilbert de Clare, 7th Earl of Gloucester** (22nd Great-Grandfather; 1243-1295), one of the most powerful nobles in her father’s kingdom; her second husband

was **Ralph de Monthermer** (21st Great-Grandfather; 1270-1325), a squire in her household whom she married in secret. Thus we are twice descended through the lines of Eleanor of Castile and Edward I.)

Made England the Strongest Military Power in Europe

Edward III (1312–1377; son of Edward II, 23rd Great-Granduncle) “was a King of Eng-



Above: *The Triumph of Death*, an oil panel painting by Pieter Bruegel the Elder, circa 1562. It depicts well the terrible carnage that the Black Death brought, killing at least one-third of the population of England from 1347 to 1351. Right: Close-up of the above painting. It was the “deadliest pandemic recorded in human history,” resulting in the deaths of up to 75-200 million, and took until 1500 for European population to regain the levels of 1300. Edward III (1312-1377; son of Edward II, 23rd Great-Granduncle) was King of England during the plague, but it didn’t keep him from invading France again in 1356.

land. He ruled for 50 years and made England the strongest military power in Europe.”

“Edward was crowned when he was fourteen years old, after his father was forced to abdicate. After his victory against the Scots, he declared himself heir to the French



throne in 1337 and so started the Hundred Years' War. The war went very well for England; the victories of Crécy and Poitiers led up to the Treaty of Brétigny, by which he gained much territory. When he became older, he was less active, mostly a result of his bad health. He died of a stroke in 1377, aged 64."

"Edward also established the Order of the Garter, and developed legislature and government. However, during his reign there was the Black Death," which killed one-third or more of all the people of England.

"Edward and his wife, Philippa of Hainault, had many children and, as they traveled, the children were generally known by where they were born (though the oldest son, Edward 'of Woodstock,' became known to later generations as Edward, the Black Prince). Prince Edward died before his father Edward III, and his older son, Edward 'of Angouleme,' had died a child, so younger son Richard 'of Bordeaux' succeeded Edward III as Richard II of England before being deposed by his cousin Henry IV of England, whose father, John 'of Gaunt,' had married the heiress of Lancaster. His family, the House of Lancaster, fought the Wars of the Roses with the House of York descended from the daughter of Edward III's son Lionel 'of Antwerp' (who was older than John) over who was the rightful king."



Above: Portrait of Richard II (1367–1400; son of Edward the Black Prince, son of Edward III, son of Edward II, 23rd Great-Granduncle) in Westminster Abbey. He abdicated in 1399 and soon after was probably starved to death on orders of his successor, Henry IV.

"In his own time and for centuries after, Edward III was praised, but by Whig historians he was seen as an irresponsible adventurer. This view has turned, and modern historians credit him with some significant achievements." (Wikipedia)

Edward III was the son of Isabella of France (1295–1358), who could not tolerate Hugh Despenser the Younger (21st Great-Grandfather by another line) and so, allying with Roger Mortimer, deposed of her husband, King Edward II, and had Despenser executed.

Son of the Black Prince

Richard II (1367–1400; son of Edward the Black Prince, son of Edward III) "was the son of Edward, the Black Prince, Prince of Wales, and Joan of Kent, 'The Fair Maid of Kent.' He was born in Bordeaux, and became his father's successor when his elder brother died in infancy. His father died before him, so he became king in 1377. His uncle John of Gaunt, the Duke of Lancaster became regent until Richard II could rule. He was deposed by Henry

of Bolingbroke (Henry IV), John of Gaunt's son with Blanche of Lancaster, taken prisoner and later died in captivity."

"Richard abdicated (resigned) in 1399. He was murdered later that year." (He is thought to have been starved to death in Pontefract Castle on or about February 14, 1400.) (Wikipedia)

Kings and Princes of Wales and Ireland

Benevolent Ruler Betrayed and Killed

Bleddyn ap Cynfyn (29th Great-Grandfather) (Old Welsh: *Bledŷnt uab Kynŷyn*; died A.D. 1073), "was an 11th-century Welsh king. He was installed by Harold and Tostig God-



winson as king of Gwynedd in 1063 on his father's death, during their destruction of the kingdom of Bleddyn's half-brother, Gruffydd ap Llywelyn. He became king of Powys

Left: A tomb slab dating from the 9th century in the parish church of St. Tysilio and St. Mary (above right) in Meifod, Powys, Wales ("a center of ancient Christianity in central Wales") in June 2017. It is "possibly the tomb slab of a prince." The churchyard (above) is said to contain the royal tombs of Madog ap Maredudd (27th Great-Grandfather; died 1160) and his son, Gruffydd Maelor (26th Great-Grandfather; died 1191), Prince of Powys Fadog. The earliest Meifod church was built here about 550 A.D. Meifod is located in Powys in mid-Wales next to the River Vyrnwy. It is a mile from "Mathrafal, the original capital of the Kingdom of Powys."

on his brother Rhiwallon's death in 1069. His descendants continued to rule Powys as the House of Mathrafal."

"Bleddyn was killed in 1073 by King Rhys ab Owain of Dyfed, having been betrayed by the lords of Ystrad Tywi. When Rhys was later defeated at the 1078 Battle of Goodwick by Bleddyn's cousin and successor, Trahaearn ap Caradog, and killed by Caradog ap Gruffydd of Gwent shortly afterwards, this was hailed as 'vengeance for the blood of Bleddyn ap Cynfyn.' After his death, Gwynedd was seized by Trahaearn and later recovered for the House of Aberffraw by Gruffudd ap Cynan; but in Powys, Bleddyn was the founder of a dynasty which lasted until the end of the 13th century."



"Bleddyn's legacy in the *Chronicle of the Princes* was that of a benevolent ruler: 'The most lovable and the most merciful of all kings...he was civil to his relatives, generous to the poor, merciful to pilgrims and orphans and widows and a defender of the weak...the

mildest and most clement of kings...[he] did injury to none, save when insulted...open handed to all, terrible in war, but in peace beloved.” (Wikipedia)

Brother Handed Him Over to the King for Personal Gain

Maredudd ap Bleddyn (28th Great-Grandfather; 1047—February 9, 1132) was a



Top: Meifod churchyard that probably contains the royal tombs of Madog ap Maredudd (27th Great-Grandfather; died 1160) and his son, Gruffydd Maelor (26th Great-Grandfather; died 1191), Prince of Powys Fadog. Photograph taken in June 2017.

prince and later King of Powys in eastern Wales. Maredudd was the son of **Bleddyn ap Cynfyn** who was King of both Powys and Gwynedd. When Bleddyn was killed in 1075, Powys was divided between three of his sons, Iorwerth, Cadwgan and Maredudd.

The three brothers held their lands as vassals of Robert of Bellême, 3rd Earl of Shrewsbury. In 1102 the Earl was summoned to answer charges at the court of King Henry I of England and responded by rising in rebellion against the king. All three brothers initially supported Robert and took up arms on his behalf, pillaging Staffordshire. The king deputed William Pantulf, Lord of Wem, to detach Iorwerth, who was considered to be the most powerful of the three brothers, from his alliance with Robert and his own brothers by the promise of large gifts of land. William succeeded in this, and Iorwerth, after leading a large Welsh force to help the king defeat and banish Earl Robert, then captured his brother Maredudd and handed him over to the king.”

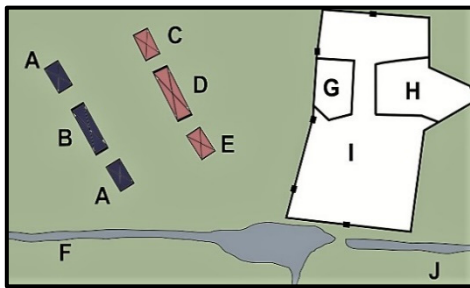
“Maredudd escaped from captivity in 1107 but did not gain any real power. In 1113 he was apparently acting as pentulu or captain of the guard to his nephew, Owain ap Cadwgan who had taken over as prince of Powys. In this capacity in 1113 Maredudd was able to capture Madog ap Rhiryd, who had killed his brothers, Iorwerth and Cadwgan in 1111. Maredudd sent him to Owain, who took vengeance for the killing of his father by blinding Madog.”

“In 1114 when King Henry I of England invaded Wales, Maredudd quickly made his peace with him, while Owain allied himself with Gruffudd ap Cynan of Gwynedd to oppose the invasion. It was not until Owain was killed in 1116 that Maredudd began to strengthen his position and became ruler of Powys.”

“In 1121 Maredudd carried out raids on Cheshire which provoked King Henry into invading Powys. Maredudd retreated into Snowdonia and asked Gruffudd ap Cynan for assistance. However, Gruffudd was in no mood to defy the king on Maredudd’s behalf, and Maredudd had to purchase peace at a cost of a fine of 10,000 head of cattle. Gwynedd continued to put pressure on Powys, with the sons of Gruffudd ap Cynan, Cadwallon and Owain Gwynedd annexing more territory in 1124. Cadwallon was killed in a battle with the men of Powys near Llangollen in 1132 which put a halt to further encroachment for the time being. Maredudd did not take part in this battle and died the same year, remembered by the annalist of Brut y Tywysogion as *the beauty and safety of all Powys and her defender*. He was succeeded by his son, **Madog ap Maredudd**.” (Wikipedia)

Fought in First Battle of Lincoln

Madog ap Maredudd (Middle Welsh: *Madawg mab Maredudd*, *Madawc mab Maredudd*)



(27th Great-Grandfather; died 1160) “was the last Prince of the entire Kingdom of Powys, Wales and for a time held the Fitzalan Lordship of Oswestry.”

“Madog was the son of **Maredudd ap Bleddyn** (28th Great-Grandfather) and followed his father on the throne of Powys in 1132. He is recorded as



Top left: First Battle of Lincoln, which took place on February 2, 1141. Madog ap Maredudd (26th Great-Grandfather) fought with his Welch cavalry (A) and Robert of Gloucester (B) against the army of King Stephen of England (C, D, E) and not only won the battle but captured Stephen as well. (I is the City of Lincoln, G, Lincoln Castle, and H, Lincoln Cathedral.) Left: Depiction of the First Battle of Lincoln from 1175-1225.

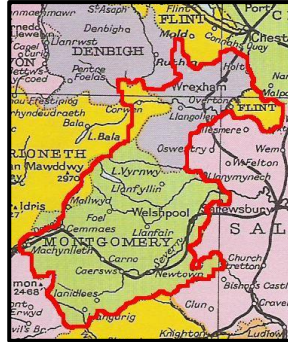
taking part in the Battle of Lincoln in 1141 in support of the Earl of Chester, along with Owain Gwynedd’s brother, Cadwaladr ap Gruffydd, and

a large army of Welshmen. In 1149 he is recorded giving the commote of Cyfeiliog to his nephews, Owain Cyfeiliog and Meurig. The same year Madog was able to rebuild Oswestry Castle, a fortress of William Fitzalan. It would seem likely that he had gained both the fortresses of Oswestry and Whittington in 1146.”

“At this time the King of Gwynedd, between 1149 and 1150, Owain Gwynedd, was exerting pressure on the borders of Powys, despite the fact that Madog was married to Susanna, Owain’s sister. Madog made an alliance with Ranulf de Gernon, 4th Earl of Chester, but Owain defeated them at the Battle of Ewloe (Coleshill) in 1150 and took possession of Madog’s lands in Iâl (English: Yale). In 1157 when King Henry II of England invaded Gwynedd he was supported by Madog, who was able to regain many of his Welsh lands. Even so, he retained the lordships of Oswestry and Whittington. In 1159 Madog would seem to have been the Welsh prince who accompanied King Henry II in his campaign to Toulouse which ended in failure. Returning home to Wales Madog died about

February 9, 1160, in Whittington Castle. He was buried soon afterwards in the church of St Tysilio at Meifod, the mother church of Powys.”

(Mathrafal—near Welshpool in Powys in Mid-Wales—was the seat of the Kings and Princes of Powys probably from the 9th century until its destruction in 1212 by Llywelyn ap Iorwerth [Llywelyn the Great] of Gwynedd. After the division of Powys in 1160 it became the capital of the southern portion which eventually became known as Powys Wenwynwyn. It was built on the site of a hill fort dating from as early as 520 A.D. All that remains today are some of the earthworks.) (Wikipedia)



Left: Approximate extent of Powys in 1160, the last year that Madog ap Maredudd (27th Great-Grandfather; died 1160) ruled the Kingdom of Powys in Wales. Above: Arms of Gruffydd Maelor (26th Great-Grandfather; died 1191).

United Northern Powys into Powys Fadog

Gruffydd Maelor (26th Great-Grandfather; died 1191) “was Prince of Powys Fadog in Wales. He was to be the founder of the principal ruling family of northern Powys during the 13th century, forming what became known as Powys Fadog after it was inherited by his son.”

“He married **Angharad** his cousin and daughter of **Owain Gwynedd** (27th Great-Grandfather), King of Gwynedd.” (Wikipedia)

First Prince of Wales

Owain ap Gruffudd (27th Great-Grandfather; circa 1100–November 23 or 30, 1170) “was King of Gwynedd, North Wales, from 1137 until his death in 1170, succeeding his father **Gruffudd ap Cynan**. He was called ‘Owain the Great’ and the first to be styled ‘Prince of Wales.’ He is considered to be the most successful of all the North Welsh princes prior to his grandson, Llywelyn the Great. He became known as Owain Gwynedd.”

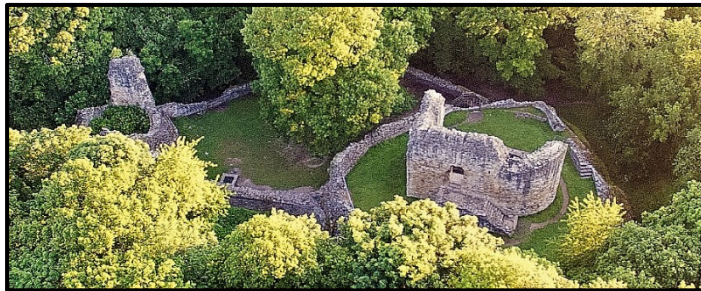
Early life: “Gwynedd was a member of the House of Aberffraw, the senior branch of the dynasty of Rhodri the Great. His father, Gruffudd ap Cynan, was a strong and long-lived ruler who had made the principality of Gwynedd the most influential in Wales during the sixty-two years of his reign, using the island of Anglesey as his power base. His mother, **Angharad ferch Owain**, was the daughter of **Owain ab Edwub of Tegeingl**. Gwynedd was the first son of **Gruffydd** and **Angharad**.”

“Owain is thought to have been born on Anglesey about the year 1100. By about 1120 Gruffydd had grown too old to lead his forces in battle and Owain and his brothers, Cadwallon and later Cadwaladr, led the forces of Gwynedd against the Normans and

against other Welsh princes with great success. His elder brother Cadwallon was killed in



Top left: Effigy of King Henry II (1133-1189) in Fontevraud Abbey, France. In 1157 and 1165, Henry II invaded the lands controlled by Owain ap Gruffudd (27th Great-Grandfather), but was defeated by Owain, although he later had to make concessions to the English monarch. Above: Trail leading to Ewloe Castle (right) in June 2017. At the Battle of Ewloe (1157) Owain's "men ambushed the royal army in a narrow, wooded valley, routing it completely with King Henry himself narrowly avoiding capture. The fleet accompanying the invasion made a landing on Anglesey where it was defeated." Henry "was only saved by the actions of Roger de Clare, Earl of Hertford." (*Ewloe Castle and the Battle of Ewloe*) The castle was built after the battle by the Welsh.



Henry's forces ravaged eastern Gwynedd and destroyed many churches thus enraging the

a battle against the forces of Powys in 1132, leaving Owain as his father's heir. Owain and Cadwaladr, in alliance with Gruffydd ap Rhys of Deheubarth, won a major victory over the Normans at Crug Mawr near Cardigan in 1136 and annexed Ceredigion to their father's realm."

Accession to the throne and early campaigns: "On Gruffydd's death in 1137, therefore, Owain inherited a portion of a well-established kingdom, but had to share it with Cadwaladr. In 1143 Cadwaladr was implicated in the murder of Anarawd ap Gruffydd of Deheubarth, and Owain responded by sending his son, Hywel ab Owain Gwynedd, to strip him of his lands in the north of Ceredigion. Though Owain was later reconciled with Cadwaladr, from 1143, Owain ruled alone over most of north Wales. In 1155 Cadwaladr was driven into exile."

"Owain took advantage of the Anarchy,

a civil war between Stephen, King of England, and the Empress Matilda, to push Gwynedd's boundaries further east than ever before. In 1146 he captured Mold Castle and about 1150 captured Rhuddlan and encroached on the borders of Powys. The prince of Powys, Madog ap Maredudd, with assistance from Earl Ranulf of Chester, gave battle at Coleshill, but Owain was victorious."

War with King Henry II: "All went well until the accession of King Henry II of England in 1154. Henry invaded Gwynedd in 1157 with the support of Madog ap Mare-

local population. The two armies met at Ewloe. Owain's men ambushed the royal army in a narrow, wooded valley, routing it completely with King Henry himself narrowly avoiding capture. The fleet accompanying the

Above: Rhuddlan Castle, located near the northeast coast of Wales. Owain ap Gruffudd (27th Great-Grandfather; circa 1100-1170) captured Rhuddlan Castle (then a motte-and-bailey castle located 300 yards south of the current stone castle) about 1150 but relinquished it to King Henry II of England about 1157. He regained the castle in 1167 after a three-month siege. King Edward I of England rebuilt the castle in 1277-1282, following the First Welsh War. Right: View of Bangor Cathedral from Bangor Mountain. Owain ap Gruffudd was buried in Bangor Cathedral by the local clergy in spite of being excommunicated by the Pope for not putting aside his second wife, who was his first cousin. Owain's brother, Cadwaladr ap Gruffydd (27th Great-Granduncle; circa 1100-1172), who rebelled against Owain, but later reconciled, was buried beside him in 1172.



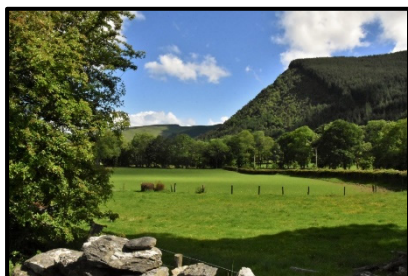
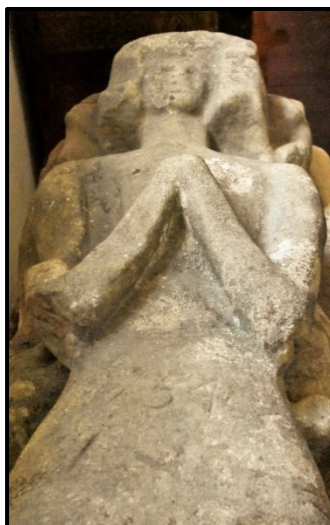
invasion made a landing on Anglesey where it was defeated. Ultimately, at the end of the campaign, Owain was forced to come to terms with Henry, being obliged to surrender Rhuddlan and other conquests in the east.”

“Forty years after these events, the scholar, Gerald of Wales, in a rare quote from these times, wrote what Owain Gwynedd said to his troops on the eve of battle: ‘My opinion, indeed, by no means agrees with yours, for we ought to rejoice at this conduct of our adversary; for, unless supported by divine assistance, we are far inferior to the English, and they, by their behavior, have made God their enemy, who is able most powerfully to avenge both himself and us. We therefore most devoutly promise God that we will henceforth pay greater reverence than ever to churches and holy places.’”

“Madog ap Maredudd died in 1160, enabling Owain to regain territory in the east. In 1163 he formed an alliance with Rhys ap Gruffydd of Deheubarth to challenge English rule. King Henry again invaded Gwynedd in 1165, but instead of taking the usual route along the northern coastal plain, the king's army invaded from Oswestry and took a route over the Berwyn hills. The invasion was met by an alliance of all the Welsh princes, with Owain as the undisputed leader. However, apart from a small melee at the Battle of Crogen, there was little fighting, for the Welsh weather came to Owain's assistance as torrential rain forced Henry to retreat in disorder. The infuriated Henry mutilated a number of Welsh hostages, including two of Owain's sons.”

“Henry did not invade Gwynedd again and Owain was able to regain his eastern conquests, recapturing Rhuddlan castle in 1167 after a siege of three months.”

Disputes with the church and succession: “The last years of Owain’s life were spent in



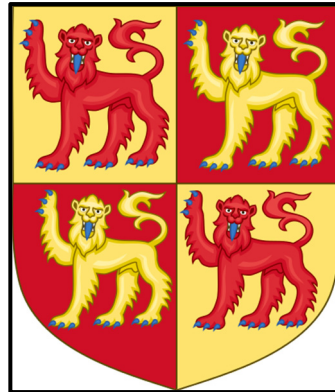
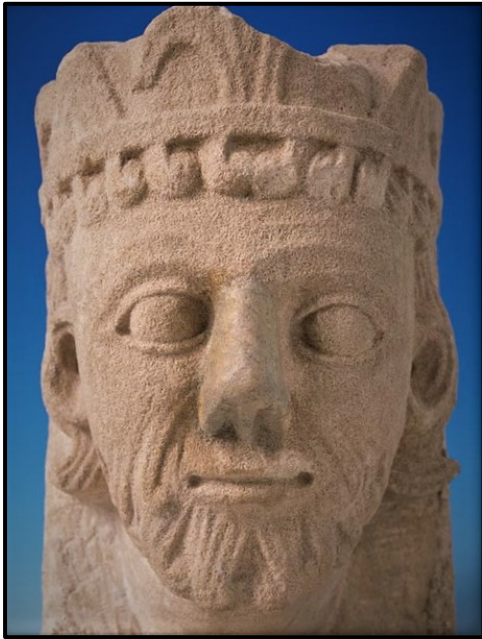
Top right: St Melangell’s Church in Pennant Melangell, where Iorwerth ab Owain Drwyndwn (26th Great-Granduncle; 1145-1174) died in a nearby battle (possible site of the battle left) in 1174; June 2017. The church is the oldest Romanesque shrine in Britain, dating from the early 12th century. Top left and above: Possible effigies of Iorwerth ab Owain Drwyndwn, son of Owain Gwynedd (27th Great-Grandfather) and his wife, Marared ferch Madog (26th Great-Grandaunt; daughter of Madog ap Maredudd, prince of Powys, 27th Great-Grandfather) as found in St. Melangell’s Church; June 2017. They were the parents of Llywelyn the Great, de facto Prince of Wales.

disputes with the Archbishop of Canterbury, Thomas Becket, over the appointment of a new Bishop of Bangor. When the see became vacant Owain had his nominee, Arthur of Bardsey, elected. The archbishop refused to accept this, so Owain had Arthur consecrated in Ireland. The dispute continued, and the see remained officially vacant until well after Owain’s death. He was also put under pressure by the Archbishop and the Pope to put aside his second wife, Cristin, who was his first cousin, this relationship making the marriage invalid under church law. Despite being excommunicated for his defiance, Owain steadfastly refused to put Cristin aside. Owain died in 1170, and despite having been excommunicated was buried in Bangor Cathedral by the local clergy. The annalist writing Brut y Tywysogion recorded his death ‘after innumerable victories, and unconquered from his youth.’” (Wikipedia)

His Nose kept Him from being King

Iorwerth ab Owain Gwynedd (26th Great-Granduncle; 1130-1174) (or Iorwerth

Drwyndwn meaning “the flat-nosed”), also called Edward, “was the eldest legitimate son



of Owain Gwynedd (the king of Gwynedd) and his first wife Gwladys (Gladys) ferch Llywarch. He married **Marared ferch Madog** (26th Great-Grandaunt; daughter of Madog ap Maredudd, prince of Powys, 27th Great-Grandfather). His son, Llywelyn the Great, eventually united the realm and became known as *Llywelyn Fawr* and is one of Wales’s most famous monarchs. Iorwerth received Nant Conwy as his inheritance

Top left: Carved stone head from Deganwy Castle, which is thought to represent Llywelyn ap Iorwerth, known as Llywelyn the Great (equivalent to a 25th Great-Granduncle; 1172-1240). Llywelyn is one of the great heroes of Welsh history. Top right: Seal of Llywelyn ap Iorwerth. Above: The arms of the royal house of Gwynedd; by tradition first used by Llywelyn's father, Iorwerth Drwyndwn. Left: Wales, circa 1217. Yellow areas were directly ruled by Llywelyn; grey areas were ruled by Llywelyn’s client princes; green: areas were Anglo-Norman lordships.

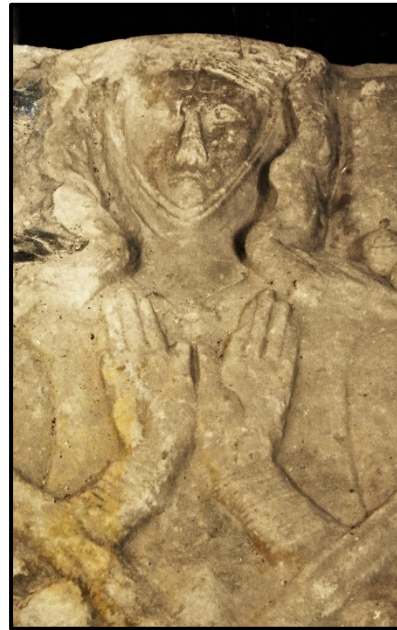
from his father, Owain Gwynedd. However, he did not receive the crown succession, as was the normal tradition, because of his nose defect (his soubriquet ‘Trwyndwn’ means broken-nosed).”

“He was killed in battle at Pennant Melangell, in Powys, during the wars deciding the succession following the death of his father.” (Wikipedia)

Great Prince of Wales

Llywelyn the Great (his relationship is equivalent to a 25th Great-Granduncle) was born about 1173, “the son of Iorwerth ap Owain and the grandson of **Owain Gwynedd**, who had been ruler of Gwynedd until his death in 1170. Llywelyn was a descendant of the

senior line of Rhodri Mawr and therefore a member of the princely house of Gwynedd. He



Top right: Close-up of the sarcophagus (top left and right) of Princess Joan (25th Great-Grandaunt), wife of Llewelyn the Great (equivalent to 25th Great-Granduncle). She died in 1237 and was buried in the Friary of Llanfaes in Anglesey, Wales. Centuries later her tomb was used for a horse watering trough, but “rescued from such indignity” and placed at the entrance to Beaumaris Church Wales (below), in 1808. Photographs taken in June 2016. Above: Dolwyddelan Castle in Conwy County, North Wales, which was built by Llewelyn the Great near his birthplace in the late 12th century.

was probably born at Dolwyddelan, though not in the



present Dolwyddelan Castle, which was built by Llywelyn himself. He may have been born in the old castle which occupied a rocky knoll on the valley floor.”

“Llywelyn had a strong claim to be the legitimate ruler and began a campaign to win power at an early age. He was sole ruler of Gwynedd by 1200 and made a treaty with King John of England that year. Llywelyn's relations with John remained good for the next ten years.

He married John's natural daughter Joan in 1205, and when John arrested Gwenwynwyn ap Owain of Powys in 1208, Llywelyn took the opportunity to annex southern Powys. In 1210, relations deteriorated, and John invaded Gwynedd in 1211. Llywelyn was forced to seek terms and to give up all lands east of the River Conwy but was able to recover them the following year in alliance with the other Welsh princes. He allied himself with the barons who forced John to sign Magna Carta in 1215. By 1216, he was the dominant power in Wales, holding a council at Aberdyfi that year to apportion lands to the other princes."

"Following King John's death, Llywelyn concluded the Treaty of Wor-

Three castles built by Llewelyn the Great. Top right: Dolbadarn Castle with its round tower. Middle: Criccieth Castle, located on the northwest coast of Wales near Porthmadog, "Many Welsh princes and English kings fought to own this castle, and it changed hands many times." Lower right: Ruins of Castell-Y-Bere, which was built to guard the valley next to the mountain, Cadair Idris, in order to defend the southwest part of Gwynedd. June 2017.

cester with his successor, Henry III, in 1218. During the next fifteen years, Llywelyn was frequently involved in fights with Marcher lords and sometimes with the king but also made alliances with several major powers in the Marches. The Peace of Middle in 1234 marked the end of Llywelyn's military career, as the agreed truce of two years was extended year by year for the remainder of his reign. He maintained his position in Wales until his death in 1240 and was succeeded by his son, Dafydd ap Llywelyn." (Wikipedia)

Llywelyn is "considered to be the greatest native ruler of Wales during the Middle Ages prior to the conquest of the country by the English. Although Lylwelyn was initially the ruler of a small state in the northwestern part of Wales, he succeeded in expanding his power beyond the borders of his realm. Eventually, he came to dominate most of Wales. In addition, Llywelyn dealt skillfully with his powerful English neighbors, resorting to



diplomacy on some occasions, and war on others.” (*Was Llywelyn the Great Wales’ Greatest Native Ruler?*) Wales was conquered by the English in 1283, less than 50 years after Llywelyn’s death.

Betrayed, imprisoned, escaped and regained his throne

Gruffudd ap Cynan (29th Great-Grandfather; circa 1055-1137), “sometimes written as Gruffydd ap Cynan, was King of Gwynedd (northwest Wales) from 1081 until his death in 1137. In the course of a long and eventful life, he became a key figure in Welsh resistance to Norman rule and was remembered as King of all Wales. As a descendant of Rhodri Mawr, Gruffudd ap Cynan was a senior member of the princely House of Aberffraw.”

“Through his mother, Gruffudd had close family connections with the Norse settlement around

Dublin and he frequently used Ireland as a refuge and as a source of troops. Three times he gained the throne of Gwynedd and then lost it again, before regaining it once more in 1099, and this time keeping power until his death. Gruffudd laid the foundations which were built upon by his son, Owain Gwynedd, and his great-grandson, Llywelyn the Great.”



After Gruffudd ap Cynan’s victory with his allies at the Battle of Mynydd Carn in 1081, he regained the rule of Gwynedd for the second time, but by the treachery of one of his own men, was enticed to a meeting with Hugh, Earl of Chester and Hugh, Earl of Shrewsbury at Rhug, near Corwen. Gruffudd was taken prisoner at the meeting and imprisoned for many years. “According to his biography he was in fetters in the marketplace at Chester when Cynwrig the Tall, on a visit to the city, saw his opportunity when the burgesses were at dinner. He picked Gruffudd up, fetters and all, and carried him out of the city on his shoulders.” Gruffudd took refuge in Dublin and soon returned with an army to attack the Norman castles in Gwynedd and won back his kingdom. In 1098 the



Above: Stone coffin of Llewelyn the Great (1172-1240; equivalent to a 25th Great-Granduncle) in St. Grwst’s parish church (below), Llanrwst, Conwy, Wales. My daughter, Rebecca Martin (age 20) is with me in June 2016. She is also a direct descendant of Llewelyn (27th Great-Granddaughter) through her mother, Lady Karen Piquet Martin.

Earls of Chester and Shrewsbury invaded, and he lost his kingdom again because “a fleet



Above: Kidwelly Castle (in fog); June 2016. Left: Romanticized portrait of Gwenllian ferch Gruffydd (28th Great-Grandaunt; circa 1100-1136, daughter of Gruffydd ap Cynan, Prince of Gwynedd, 29th Great-Grandfather), who led a Welsh army against Norman invaders near here in 1136. She was defeated, captured, and beheaded by the Normans. It’s the only known example in the medieval period of a woman leading a Welsh army into battle. In the fight her son Morgan was also slain and another son, Maelgwyn, captured and executed. It is written that “Gwenllian grew to be strikingly beautiful.” She eloped with Gruffydd ap Rhys, Prince of Deheubarth, Wales, who won a resounding victory with a coalition against the Normans after her death in 1136. Unfortunately, he died the next year in “uncertain circumstances.” Lower left: Monument in Kidwelly, Wales, honoring Gwenllian; June 2016.



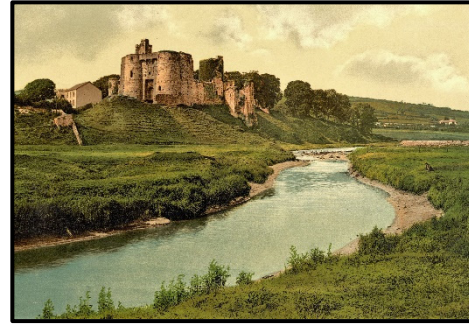
he had hired from the Danish settlement in Ireland accepted a better offer from the Normans and changed sides.” He managed to escape with his ally, Cadwgan ap Bleddyn, in a skiff back to Dublin. King Magnus III of Norway invaded Wales and killed Duke Hugh of Shrewsbury with an arrow. After this an agreement was made with Earl Hugh of Chester, and Gruffydd returned to rule Gwynedd for a fourth and final time. The following year, 1101, Earl Hugh of Chester died, and Gruffydd was able to consolidate his position.

He expanded his kingdom with diplomacy as by force and met King Henry of England, who granted him more areas to rule, greatly extending his realm. His kingdom prospered under his rule, which was considered a “Golden Age.” Many “lime-washed churches” were built, and he was buried by the high altar in Bagor Cathedral. (Wikipedia)

Only Medieval Woman to Lead a Welsh Army into Battle

Gwenllian ferch Gruffydd (28th Great-Grandaunt; 1100-1136) was Princess consort of Deheubarth in Wales, and married to Gruffydd ap Rhys, Prince of Deheubarth. Gwenllian was the daughter of Gruffydd ap Cynan (1055–1137), Prince of Gwynedd and Angharad ferch Owain, and a member of the princely Aberffraw family of Gwynedd. She was also the third great-granddaughter of Brian Boruma mac Cennetig, High King of Ireland.

Gwenllian's 'patriotic revolt' and subsequent death in battle at Kidwelly Castle contributed to the Great Revolt of 1136."



Above: Kidwelly Castle on a post card from the 1890s. Left: Rebecca Martin (29th Great-Grandniece of Gwenllian ferch Gruffudd) with a black cat at the entrance to Kidwelly Castle in June 2016. Gwenllian ferch Gruffudd (circa 1100-1136), led a Welsh army against Norman invaders near here in 1136.

Gwenllian was "strikingly beautiful." She married Gruffydd ap Rhys shortly after 1116 and "joined him at his family seat of Dinefwr in Deheubarth. Deheubarth was struggling against the Norman invasion in South Wales, with Norman, English, and Flemish

colonists in footholds throughout the country. While the conflict between the Normans and the Welsh continued, the princely family were often displaced, with Gwenllian joining her husband in mountainous and forested strongholds. From here, she and Gruffydd ap Rhys led retaliatory strikes, aka 'lightning raids' against Norman-held positions in Deheubarth."

"By 1136 an opportunity arose for the Welsh to recover lands lost to the Marcher Lords when Stephen de Blois displaced his cousin, Empress Matilda, from succeeding her father to the English throne the year prior, sparking the Anarchy in England. The usurpation and conflict it caused eroded central authority in England. The revolt began in South Wales, as Hywel ap Maredudd, Lord of Brycheiniog (*Brecknockshire*), gathered his men and marched to Gower, defeating the Norman and English colonists there at the Battle of Llŵchwr. Inspired by Hywel of Brycheiniog's success, Gruffydd ap Rhys hastened to meet with Gruffudd ap Cynan of Gwynedd, his father-in-law, to enlist his aid in the revolt."

"While her husband was in Gwynedd seeking an alliance with her father against the Normans, Maurice de Londres and other Normans led raids against Deheubarth's Welsh and Gwenllian was compelled to raise an army for their defence. In a battle fought near Kidwelly Castle, Gwenllian's army was routed, she was captured in battle and

beheaded by the Normans. In the battle her son Morgan was also slain and another son, Maelgwyn captured and executed.”

“Though defeated, her patriotic revolt inspired others in South Wales to rise. The Welsh of Gwent, led by Iowerth ab Owain (grandson of Caradog ap Gruffydd, Gwent’s Welsh ruler displaced by the Norman invasions), ambushed and slew Richard Fitz Gilbert de Clare, the Norman lord who controlled Ceredigion.”

“When word reached Gwynedd of Gwenllian’s death and the revolt in Gwent, Gwenllian’s brothers Owain and Cadwaladr invaded Norman controlled Ceredigion, taking Llanfihangel, Aberystwyth, and Llanbadarn.”

“For centuries after her death, Welshmen cried-out *Revenge for Gwenllian* when engaging in battle. Gwenllian and her husband also harassed Norman, English, and Flemish colonists in Deheubarth, taking goods and money and redistributed them among the Deheubarth Welsh who were themselves dispossessed by those colonizers, like a pair of ‘Robin Hoods of Wales,’ as historian and author Philip Warner writes.”

“Gwenllian's youngest son went on to become a notable leader of Deheubarth, The Lord Rhys” (see below). (Wikipedia)

Powerful Ruler Sent Food to His Enemies so They wouldn’t Starve

Rhys ap Gruffydd or Gruffudd (often anglicised to “Griffith;” circa 1132–April 28, 1197; son of Gwenllian ferch Gruffudd, 28th Great-Grandaunt) “was the ruler of the kingdom of Deheubarth in south Wales from 1155 to 1197. Today, he is commonly known as The Lord Rhys, in Welsh *Yr Arglwydd Rhys*, although this title may have not been used in his lifetime. He usually used the title ‘Proprietary Prince of Deheubarth’ or ‘Prince of South Wales,’ but two documents have been discovered in which he uses the title ‘Prince of Wales’ or ‘Prince of the Welsh.’ Rhys was one of the most successful and powerful Welsh princes, and, after the death of Owain Gwynedd of Gwynedd in 1170, the dominant power in Wales.”

“Rhys’s grandfather, Rhys ap Tewdwr, was king of Deheubarth, and was killed at Brecon in 1093 by Bernard de Neufmarché. Following his death, most of Deheubarth was taken over by the Normans. Rhys’s father, Gruffydd ap Rhys, eventually was able to become ruler of a small portion, and more territory was won back by Rhys’s older brothers after Gruffydd’s death. Rhys became ruler of Deheubarth in 1155. He was forced to submit to King Henry II of England in 1158. Henry invaded Deheubarth in 1163, stripped Rhys of all his lands and took him prisoner. A few weeks later he was released and given back a small part of his holdings. Rhys made an alliance with Owain Gwynedd and, after the failure of another invasion of Wales by Henry in 1165, was able to win back most of his lands.”

“In 1171 Rhys made peace with King Henry and was confirmed in possession of his recent conquests as well as being named Justiciar of South Wales. He maintained good relations with King Henry until the latter’s death in 1189. Following Henry’s death Rhys revolted against Richard I and attacked the Norman lordships surrounding his territory,

capturing several castles. In his later years Rhys had trouble keeping control of his



Left: 14th century effigy of Rhys ap Gruffydd (1132-1197; son of Gwenllïan ferch Gruffydd, 28th Great-Grandaunt, who died leading a Welsh army into battle) in St. David's Cathedral (lower left), Wales. He was one of the most capable leaders in Wales for over 50 years. Top right: Two views of Dinefwr Castle, which was the chief seat of the Dinefwr dynasty; the earliest surviving part of the present castle may have been built by Rhys or by his son, Rhys Gryg. Above: Carreg Cennen Castle, which was built by Rhys and is one of the earliest native-built castles of stone in Wales.

sons, particularly Maelgwn and Gruffydd, who maintained a feud with each other. Rhys launched his last campaign against the Normans in 1196 and captured several castles. The following year he died unexpectedly

and was buried in St David's Cathedral.”

A contemporary who did not favor Rhys wrote: “This same man gave provisions to his enemies when besieged and driven by risk of famine to capitulate; he wished them to

be overcome by his own strength and not by want of bread; and though he deferred victory, he increased the renown of it.”

“Giraldus Cambrensis frequently mentions Rhys in his writings and describes him as ‘a man of excellent wit and quick in repartee.’”

“Rhys’s career was indeed a remarkable one. Its very length was a tribute to his stamina and skill: he had occupied the stage of Welsh politics for over fifty years, from his first appearance in his early teens, at the capture of Llanstefan castle in 1146, to his death in 1197. But it was his achievement which was astounding: he had reconstituted the kingdom of Deheubarth and made it the premier Welsh kingdom. For once, the poet’s compliment was well-deserved: Rhys had restored ‘the majesty of the South.’” (Wikipedia; see Internet for its very long article)

Fair Queen

Cynan ab Iago (30th Great-Grandfather; circa 1014– circa 1063) “was a Welsh prince of the House of Aberffraw sometimes credited with briefly reigning as King of Gwynedd. His father, **Iago ab Idwal ap Meurig**, had been king before him and his son, **Gruffudd**, was king after him.”

“Iago was King of Gwynedd from 1023 to 1039 but was killed (possibly by his own men) while Cynan was still young. The throne was seized by Gruffydd ap Llywelyn, a member of a cadet branch of the royal dynasty. Cynan fled to Ireland and took refuge in the Viking settlement at Dublin. He married **Ragnhilda** (30th Great-Grandmother), the daughter of its **King Olaf Sigtryggsson** and granddaughter of **King Sigtrygg Silkbeard**. Ragnhilda appeared on the list of the ‘Fair Women of Ireland’ in the Book of Leinster and was also descended from Brian Boru.”

Slain while on his way to Rome on a Pilgrimage

Amlaib mac Siltriuc (31st Great-Grandfather; died 1034) (“Amhlaeibh, son of Sitric”) or Olaf Sigtryggsson “was the son of the Hiberno-Norse King of Dublin, **Sigtrygg Silkbeard** and **Slaine**, the daughter of **Brian Boru**. A member of the Uí Ímair dynasty, his ancestors



Above: Page from the 12th century Book of Leinster, wherein Ragnhilda (30th Great-Grandmother), daughter of King Olaf Sigtryggsson, appears on a list of the “Fair Women of Ireland.”

also included **Amlaib Cuaran** and **Gormflaith**, who were influential in medieval Ireland. He was ransomed by the Gaelic lord of Brega and later killed in England by Anglo-Saxons while on his way on pilgrimage to Rome in 1034. Some of his descendants later became the Kings of Gwynedd in Wales.” (Wikipedia)

Fought in Many Battles and Reigned for Forty-Six Years

Sigtrygg II Silkbeard Olafsson (32nd Great-Grandfather) “was an Irish-Norse king of



Top left: Main kingdoms of Ireland in 1014, during the age of Sigtrygg Silkbeard (32nd Great-Grandfather; died 1041). He ruled Dublin for over 46 years from 989 to 1036. Above: Coin of “Sihtric” Sigtrygg Silkbeard. He established the first mint in Dublin in 990. Left: The ruin of Inch Abbey near Downpatrick in Northern Ireland, which was plundered by Sigtrygg in 1002. This gave him some revenge for the people of the north (the Ulaid—Ulster) not aiding him when he sought their help in 1000 A.D.



Dublin (possibly A.D. 989–994; restored or began 995–1000; restored 1000 and abdicated 1036) of the Uí Ímair dynasty. He was caught up in the abortive Leinster

revolt of 999–1000, after which he was forced to submit to the King of Munster, Brian Boru. His family also conducted a double marriage alliance with Boru, although he later realigned himself with the main leaders of the Leinster revolt of 1012–1014.”

Sigtrygg was a son of **Olaf Cuaran**, King of York and of Dublin, and **Gormflaith ingen Murchada**. Gormflaith was the daughter of the **King of Leinster, Murchad mac Finn**, and the sister of his successor, King Máel Mórda of Leinster. She had previously been married to the King of Meath and High King of Ireland, Máel Sechnaill—the first of her

three husbands. She was a beautiful, powerful and intriguing Irish woman, who according to the 13th-century Icelandic *Njáls saga*, was ‘the fairest of all women, and best gifted in



Left: The medieval tower of the stone church of Ardbraccan, County Meath, Ireland, in which Sigtrygg (32nd Great-Grandfather) burned more than 200 men in 1035. The tower is over one thousand years old. Above: Christ Church Cathedral in Dublin, Ireland, founded by Sigtrygg about 1028, it is the oldest building in Dublin.

everything that was not in her own power, but it was the talk of men that she did all things ill over which she had any power,’ Sigtrygg’s paternal half-brother was Glúniainn, ‘Iron-knee,’ who ruled as King of Dublin from 980–989.”

“Sigtrygg’s long reign spanned 46 years, until his abdication in 1036. During that period, his armies saw action in four of the five Irish provinces of the time. In particular, he conducted a long series of raids into territories such as Meath, Wicklow, Ulster, and perhaps even the coast of Wales. He also came into conflict with rival Norse kings, especially in Cork and Waterford.”

“Sigtrygg married Brian Boru’s daughter, **Slaine**, and they had one son: **Olaf** (died 1034). According to the *Annals of the Four Masters*, Olaf ‘was slain by the Saxons’ on his way on a pilgrimage to Rome. He was survived by one **Ragnhild**, from whom **Gruffudd ap Cynan** (29th Great-Grandfather) and the Kings of Gwynedd were descended.”

“Sigtrygg went on pilgrimage to Rome in 1028 and is associated with the foundation of Christ Church Cathedral in Dublin. Although Dublin underwent several reversals of fortune during his reign, on the whole trade in the city flourished. He died in 1042.” (Wikipedia)

High King of Ireland

Brian Boru (33rd Great-Grandfather; circa 941–April 23, 1014) was an Irish king who ended the domination of the High Kingship of Ireland by the Uí Néill and probably ended Viking invasion/domination of Ireland.

“Brian built on the achievements of his father, Cennétig mac Lorcaín, and especially his elder brother, Mathgamain, Brian first made himself king of Munster, then subjugated



Leinster, eventually becoming High King of Ireland. He was the founder of the O'Brien dynasty and is widely regarded as one of the most successful and unifying monarchs in medieval Ireland.”

“With a population of under 500,000 people, Ireland had over 150 kings, with greater or lesser domains. The Uí Néill king Máel Sechnaill mac Domnaill, abandoned by his northern kinsmen



Top: Irish stamp honoring Brian Boru (33rd Great-Grandfather; 941-1014) as Imperator Scotorum of Ireland. Brian is one of the best-known ancient monarchs of Ireland. Above: Iona Abbey. Amlaib (33rd Great-Grandfather; 927-981), King of Dublin, Northumberland, and York, although he pillaged churches, lived the last years of his life at Iona Abbey and was buried here in 981. Photograph by Oliver Bonjoch.

of the Cenél nEógain and Cenél Conaill, acknowledged Brian as High King at Athlone in 1002. In the decade that followed, Brian campaigned against the northern Uí Néill, who refused to accept his claims, against Leinster, where resistance was frequent, and against the Norse-Gaelic Kingdom of Dublin.”

“Brian's hard-won authority was seriously challenged in 1013 when his ally Máel Sechnaill was attacked by the Cenél nEógain king Flaithbertach Ua Néill, with the Ulstermen as his allies. This was followed by further attacks on Máel Sechnaill by the germanic norsemen of Dublin under their Norse king Sigtrygg Silkbeard and the Leinstermen led by Máel Mórda mac Murchada. Brian campaigned against these enemies in 1013. In 1014, Brian's armies confronted the armies of Leinster and Dublin. The resulting Battle of Clontarf saw Brian killed, his army nonetheless victorious against the Leinstermen and Norsemen. The battle is widely lauded as an instrumental moment in Irish history and is well known in popular memory.” Brian was well-regarded by contemporary chroniclers. (Wikipedia)

Ruler of Northumbria, England, and Dublin, Ireland, who Pillaged Churches

Amlaib mac Sitric (33rd Great-Grandfather; 927-981) was a 10th-century Norse-Gael who

was King of Northumbria, England, Dublin, Ireland, and for a short time York, England. His reign over these territories spanned some forty years. He was a renowned warrior and a ruthless pillager of churches but ended his days in retirement at Iona Abbey.



Above: The Viking settlements of Cork (846), Limerick (922), Waterford (850), Wexford (899), and Dublin (841) in Ireland. Right: Map of the ancient kingdoms of Great Britain and Ireland, circa 1000 A.D., showing Dublin, Ireland, Northumbria, and York, Northern England, which were ruled by Amlaib mac Sitric (33rd Great-Grandfather) and Sitric Caech (34th Great-Grandfather); also Powys, Wales, which was ruled by Madog ap Gruffudd (25th Great-Grandfather) and Gruffudd II ap Madog (24th Great-Grandfather).

“Amlaib was married at least twice and had many children who married into Irish and Scandinavian royal families. His

descendants were kings in the Isle of Man and the Hebrides until the 13th century.”
(Wikipedia)

Viking Ruler Defeated Six Irish Kings in One Battle

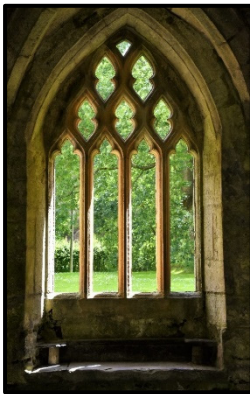
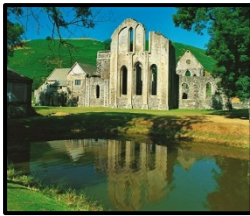
Sitric Caech (34th Great-Grandfather; died 927) “was a Viking leader who ruled Dublin and then Viking Northumbria in the early 10th century. He was a grandson of Ímar and a member of the Uí Ímair. Sitric was most probably among those Vikings expelled from Dublin in 902, whereafter he may have ruled territory in the eastern Danelaw in England. In 917, he and his kinsman, Ragnall ua Ímair, sailed separate fleets to Ireland where they won several battles against local kings. Sitric successfully recaptured Dublin and established himself as king, while Ragnall returned to England to become King of Northumbria. In 919, Sitric won a victory at the Battle of Island Bridge over a coalition of local Irish kings who aimed to expel the Uí Ímair from Ireland. Six Irish kings were killed in the battle, including Niall Glúndub, over-king of the Northern Uí Néill and High King of Ireland.”

“In 920 Sitric left Dublin for Northumbria, with his kinsman Gofraid ua Ímair succeeding

him as king. That same year he led a raid on Davenport, Cheshire, perhaps as an act of defiance against Edward the Elder, King of the Anglo-Saxons. In 921 Ragnall ua Ímair



Top left: Possible grave slab of Madog ap Gruffudd (25th Great-Grandfather; died circa 1236) in Valle Crucis Abbey (above and lower left in May 2016) in Llantysilio in Denbighshire, Wales, which he founded in 1201. In 1211, Madog joined King John and many of the other Welsh rulers to oppose Llywelyn ab Iorwerth (died 1240), but later he was a strong ally of Llywelyn. Below: Banner of Madog ap Gruffudd, and later the Banner of the Kingdom of Powys Fadog.



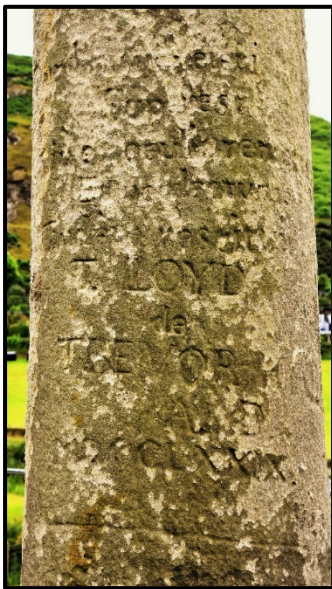
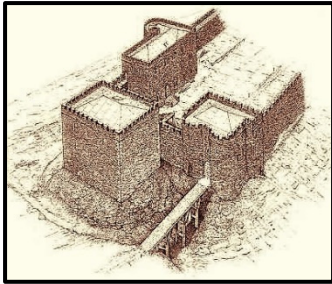
died, with Sitric succeeding him as King of Northumbria. Though there are no written accounts of conflict, numismatic evidence suggests there was a Viking reconquest of a large part of Mercia in the following few years. An agreement of some sort between the Vikings of Northumbria and the Anglo-Saxons was achieved in 926 when Sitric married a sister of Æthelstan, perhaps Edith of Polesworth. Sitric also converted to Christianity, though this did not last long and he soon reverted to paganism. He died in 927 and was succeeded by his kinsman Gofraid ua Ímair. Sitric's son, Gofraid, later reigned as King of Dublin, his son, Aralt, as King of Limerick, and his son, **Amlaib Cuaran** as king of both Dublin and Northumbria.” (Wikipedia)



United Northern Powys and Founded Valle Crucis Abbey

Madog ap Gruffudd (25th Great-Grandfather) “was Prince of Powys Fadog, 1191-1236, in northeast Wales. He was elder son of **Gruffydd Maelor** (26th Great-Grandfather) and his wife, **Angharad**, a daughter of **Owain Gwynedd** (27th Great-Grandfather). He

succeeded his father jointly with his brother, Owen, in 1191 and on Owen’s death in 1197 became the sole ruler of Powys north of the River Rhaeadr and the Afon Tanat.”

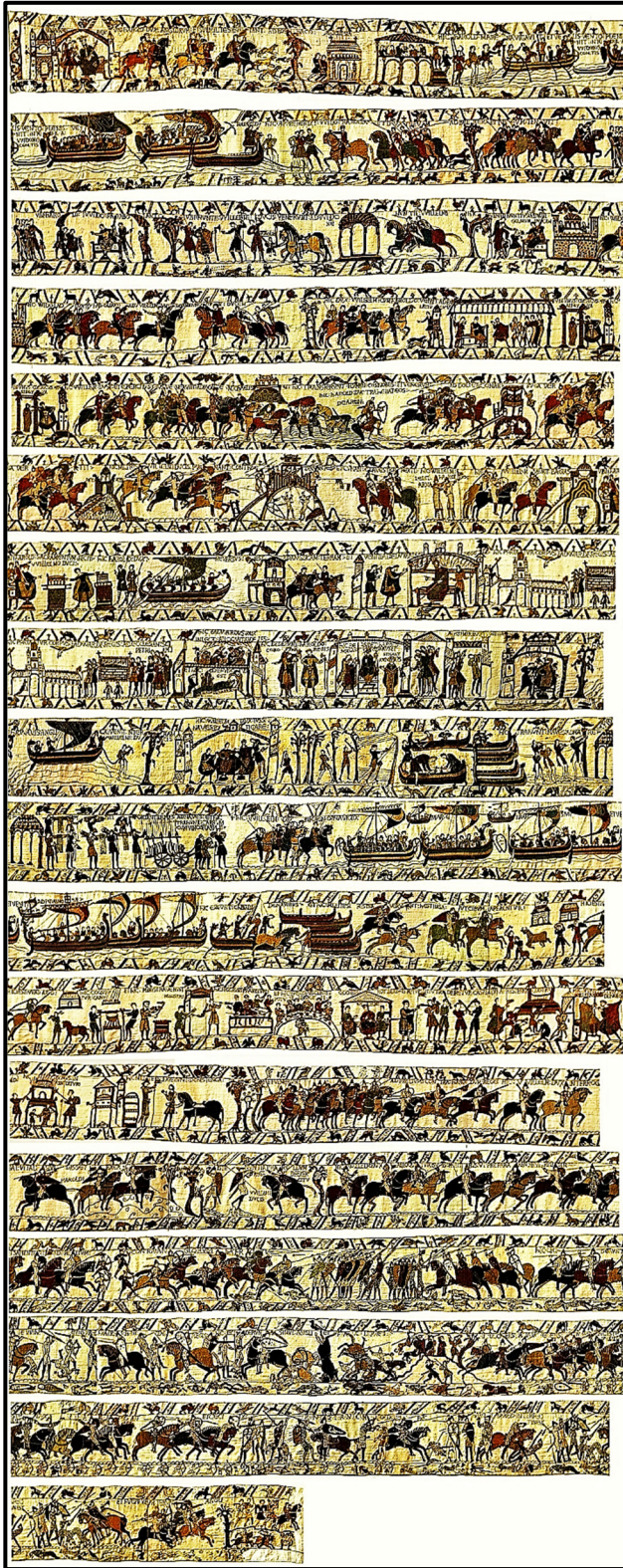


Top right: Castell Dinas Bran as seen from the road near the town of Llangollen in Denbighshire, Wales, in June 2016, and, above, an aerial view of the castle. Top left: How Castell Dinas Bran may have looked in 1270. The castle was built in the 1260s by Gruffydd II ap Madog (24th Great-Grandfather; died 1269). Left: Ancient Pillar of Eliseg, located next to Valle Crucis Abbey. It was erected by Cyngen ap Cadell, king of Powys (possible distant great-grandfather; died 855) in memory of his great-grandfather, Elisedd ap Gwylog (possible distant great-grandfather; died circa 755). “Whilst the pillar itself dates to the 9th century, the mound is thought to be significantly older, possibly prehistoric. ‘Certainly, the mound can be dated to the Bronze Age, approximately 2000 B.C.’” Photographs taken in 2016.

“Madog consolidated the possessions of his father, Gruffudd Maelor, and the territory he ruled became known as *Powys Fadog* in his honor, the remainder of the old kingdom formed Powys Wenwynwyn. (*Fadog* is a gender mutation of his name, *Madog*).

“Madog was close to his cousin, Llywelyn ap Iorwerth, initially, but gradually distanced himself and also kept aloof from the year 1212 when his cousin had managed to reform the Welsh Confederacy and looked instead to King John of England, in whose pay he was, as an official ally of the English king. By 1215 he decided to ally with his cousin.”

“On January 28, 1201, Madog founded Valle Crucis Abbey, Llangollen, Wales, a Cistercian settlement, and the last Cistercian monastery to be founded in Wales. It became the spiritual center of the region. He is buried at Valle Crucis Abbey in the Abbey Church. The exact site of his burial is unknown.” (Wikipedia)



Wife Descended from King Henry I and William the Conqueror

Gruffudd II ap Madog (24th Great-Grandfather; died 1269) “was Prince of Powys Fadog.” He is believed to have built Castell Dinas Bran in the 1260s. Today it is a ruined castle on top of a prominent hilltop site above the town of Llangollen in Denbighshire, Wales.

“He married **Emma de Audley** (24th Great-Grandmother; 1224-circa 1278), daughter of **Henry de Audley** (25th

Left: The entire Bayeux Tapestry. An embroidered cloth which is nearly 230 feet long and 20 inches tall, depicting “the events leading up to the Norman conquest of England concerning William, Duke of Normandy (30th Great-Grandfather), and Harold, Earl of Wessex, later King of England, and culminating in the Battle of Hastings.” It was probably commissioned by Bishop Odo, William the Conqueror’s half-brother, and made in England in the 1070s. Emma de Audley (24th Great-Grandmother; 1224-1278), and wife of Gruffudd II ap Madog (24th Great-Grandfather), was a direct descendant of William the Conqueror.

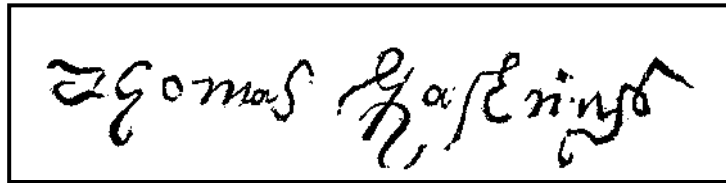
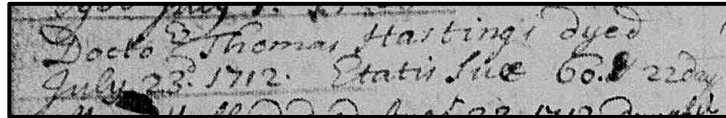
Great-Grandfather; 1175-1246; a royalist baron, sheriff of Shropshire and Staffordshire and “constable of several

castles;” son of **Adam de Audley** and **Emma Fitzhorm/FitzOrm**) and **Bertrade de Mainwaring** (25th Great-Grandmother; 1196-circa 1249; daughter of **Ralph de Main-**

waring of Chester [1155-after 1210] and **Amice de Machines/Meschines de Keveloc** [died circa 1210]—a direct descendant of **King Henry I** and **Sybil Corbet**, his mistress.” Amice de Meschines was the daughter of Hugh de Kevelioc, 3rd Earl of Chester (1147-1181), who was son of Ranulph de Gernon, 2nd Earl of Chester (1099-1153; son of Ranulph le Meschin, 1st Earl of Chester) and Matilda “Maud” of Gloucester (1120-1189). She was the daughter of the Robert, 1st Earl of Gloucester (1090-1147), half-brother of Empress Matilda and her chief military supporter, and the son of Henry I (1068-1135), who was the son of William the Conqueror (1028-1087).

A Founder of Watertown, Massachusetts

Thomas Hastings (9th Great-Grandfather; circa 1605–circa 1685) “was a prominent English immigrant to New England, one of the approximately 20,000 immigrants who came as part of the Great Migration. A deacon of the church, among his many public offices he served on the Committee of Colony Assessments in 1640 and as Deputy for Watertown to the General Court of Massachusetts in 1673. He held property in nearby Dedham between 1636 and 1639, although there is no evidence that he ever lived there.”

Top: Signature of Thomas Hastings (9th Great-Grandfather; 1605-1685). He was one of the most important early settlers of Watertown, Massachusetts, and served as a selectman and a deacon for many years. Above: An entry in a church record showing the date of the death of Doctor Thomas Hastings (8th Great-Granduncle; 1652-1712), son of Thomas Hastings, on July 23, 1712.

Background and family:

“Hastings and his wife Susan left Ipswich, Suffolk, on *The Elizabeth* on April 30, 1634.

Although his home in England is unknown, the make-up of their ship's company strongly suggests that he was from East Anglia and perhaps from the counties of Suffolk or Norfolk.”

“The only major genealogy to treat the family, *The Hastings Memorial* (Boston, 1866), states that he was of noble birth by descent from the illustrious family that included the Earl of Huntingdon line. He is not known to have claimed such a connection in his lifetime and there is no record to substantiate this supposed connection and much to argue against it. The surname is generally habitational and may derive from the English town of Hastings, Sussex.”

“After the death of his first wife in 1650, Hastings married **Margaret Cheney** (9th Great-Grandmother) of Roxbury and together they had eight children. Remarkably for the day and given such a large brood, they all survived their parents.”

“In 1671, their 19-year-old first son, Thomas, Jr., was accused of fathering a child out of

wedlock and the Hastings and Woodward families (who came to America together on the same ship 37 years before) became embroiled in a highly embarrassing paternity suit before the Middlesex County Court. Intimate relations outside of marriage were not simply



frowned upon but potentially criminal. The social and political ramifications were foreboding too for Deacon Thomas, who was not only a leader in the church but serving as a selectman, town clerk and town meeting moderator during the controversy. While the younger Thomas denied the relationship and asserted another was the father, Susannah Woodward was quite forthright about their alleged liaisons and ‘for

all of which miscarriages...she craved forgiveness.’ Although paternity could not be established, circumstantial evidence and hearsay led to an order that Thomas, Jr., pay for maintenance of the child and his father assumed the financial responsibility. Then, like today, his father's standing in the community brought relative leniency.”

“The younger Thomas married Anna Hawkes a year later after moving 150 miles west to the Connecticut River Valley and settling in the village of Hatfield, Massachusetts. He became a respected doctor which must have been a relief to his father who was to say later, ‘I have been at great charge to bring him up to be a Scholar and I hope he will live well by his arts and learning.’ Dr. Thomas practiced medicine for some 40 years and served as town clerk for two decades. His was a frontier practice and as such, he treated many injuries sustained in skirmishes with the Indians and also wrote one of the best contemporary records of the devastating 1704 attack on nearby Deerfield.”



Top left: The Old Burying Ground in Watertown, Massachusetts, where Thomas Hastings (9th Great-Grandfather) was probably buried (no gravestone exists today). **Above:** The gravestone of William Cheney (10th Great-Grandfather; 1604-1667), father of Margaret Cheney (9th Great-Grandmother), in Roxbury, Massachusetts. The inscription reads: “:WILLEAM CHENY: / :AGED: 63: YEARS: / :DYED: 1: 5: 1667:” The monument is small, perhaps a foot tall, which is a common size among the oldest slate gravestones in New England.

Legacy: “In Watertown, Massachusetts, where the American town meeting first took form, Thomas Hastings was repeatedly called to leadership positions inside and outside the church. At one time or another, he held virtually every office to include multiple stints as Selectman, Moderator and Town Clerk. His public service spanned five decades, and he was last elected to public office (Selectman) in 1680. As a Freeman, he

owned property and would have been a devoted Puritan and believer of the Gospel as conveyed in the Geneva Bible. Certainly, one of the town's most influential citizens, later



historians have called him one of the ‘old war-horses’ of Watertown. Many of the surviving records from his time were written in his hand and often the government meetings were held in his home.”

The descendants of Thomas and Margaret are numerous, and many have risen to positions of great importance or notoriety. Although no marker remains, he almost certainly lies among his many descendants in Watertown's Old Burying Ground (Arlington St. Cemetery). Margaret Hastings survived him by about five years. The old property locations are well established, but no 17th-century Hastings family structures remain.”

“Grandsons of Thomas Hastings, Daniel and Nathaniel Hastings were among the early settlers of the Town of Boylston, Massachusetts.” (Wikipedia: Thomas Hastings, colonist”)

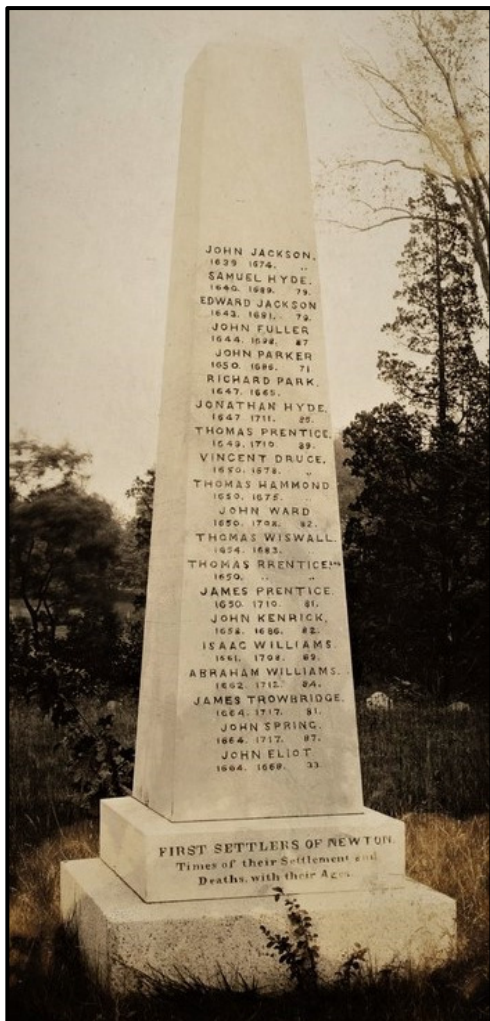
Thomas had eight children with his second wife, **Margaret Cheney** (9th Great-Grandmother; born 1628), the daughter of **William Cheney** of Roxbury (who has one of the oldest surviving gravestones in New England), including **Joseph Hastings** (8th Great-Grandfather; 1657-1695). (Wikipedia)

Founders of Newton, Massachusetts

Samuel Hyde (10th Great-Grandfather; 1610-1689) embarked on the ship *Jonathan*, at London, England, bound for Boston, in April 1639. He was the second settler in Cambridge Village (later called Newton) about 1640. In 1647 he and his brother, Jonathan Hyde, bought forty acres of land and later in 1652, they bought two hundred acres more. They held these properties in common until 1661, when they were divided between them. The

Above: Gravestone of Samuel Hastings (8th Great-Granduncle; 1665-1723), one of the oldest remaining Hastings monuments in America, in the Old Burying Ground, Watertown, Massachusetts. Left: Stone monument of Dr. Thomas Hastings (1679-1728) in Hill Cemetery, Hatfield, Massachusetts. Thomas was the son of Dr. Thomas Hastings (8th Great-Granduncle; 1652-1712) and Anna Hawkes. Dr. Thomas Hastings (1652-1712) was involved in a paternity trial in Watertown, Massachusetts, before becoming a responsible citizen in Hatfield, Massachusetts.

Dedham highway was laid out through their lands. His descendants owned the Hyde homestead for five generations or more. His wife, **Temperance** (10th Great-Grandmother; died after 1689), probably came on the same ship to America with her husband in 1639.



Samuel Hyde and his brother, Jonathan Hyde, are listed on the Newton, Massachusetts, Founder's Monument, erected in 1852. It stands in Center Cemetery (the town's oldest), to honor the first settlers of Newton, Massachusetts.

John Fuller (10th Great-Grandfather; 1611-1694) “was one of the first settlers of Cambridge Village, now Newton, Massachusetts, arriving there in 1644. When deposed on May 16, 1656, he gave his age as ‘about 40 years.’ He was a farmer and a maltster. In December 1658, he purchased 750 acres of land from Joseph Cooke of Cambridge and with additional purchased increased his holdings to 1,000 acres. He and Edward Jackson were the largest landowners in Newton. At his death he divided his land between his five surviving sons, each of whom had

Left: Founder's Monument in Newton, Massachusetts. Samuel Hyde (2nd from top), and John Fuller (4th from top) (10th Great-Grandfathers) are listed. This photograph is from the 1800s.

long lives: John, 75, Jonathan, 74, Joseph 88, Joshua, 98, and Jeremiah, 83. Each of these divided their land among their children in their lifetimes and had a far larger number of descen-

dants than any other of the early settlers of Newton. Twenty-two of John Fuller's descendants served in the American Army from Newton during the Revolutionary War.” (The Hastings Family, pages 40-41, 44)

Ancestors from Lavenham, England

Elizabeth Cole (10th Great-Grandmother; 1623-1700, wife of John Fuller, Sr., 10th Great-Grandfather; 1611-1697—John Fuller was a major landholder in Newton, Massachusetts) was baptized on January 1, 1622/1623, in St. Peter and St. Paul Parish Church in Lavenham, Suffolk, England, the daughter of **Walter Cole** (11th Great-Grandfather; 1585-1652) and **Susanna Northfield** (11th Great-Grandmother; 1589-1658).

Walter Cole was born in 1585 in Bramford, Mid Suffolk District, Suffolk, England, and died 1652 in Lavenham, Suffolk, England. He married Susanna Northfield [spelled Northfeild] “of Great Saxham lately of Lavenham” on January 30, 1609, in St. Andrews

Church, Great Saxham, Suffolk, England, on January 30, 1609. He was a Barber-Surgeon by trade and admitted in May 1593 as an apprentice to Alexander Elliot. “Walter Cole’s



Above: Gravestone of Isaac Fuller (9th Great-Granduncle; 1665-1691) in Center Street Cemetery, Newton, Massachusetts. The inscription reads: “HERE LYES ye / BODY OF / ISAAC FULLER / AGED 26 YEARS / DIED OCTOBER ye 6 / 1691.” Isaac’s gravestone is the oldest Fuller monument in Newton, Massachusetts. Top right: St. Peter and St. Paul Parish Church in Lavenham, Suffolk, England, where Elizabeth Cole (10th Great-Grandmother; 1623-1700, wife of John Fuller of Newton, Massachusetts) was baptized on January 1, 1622/1623. She was the daughter of Walter Cole (1585-1652) and Susanna Northfield (11th Great-Grandparents). Walter was a Barber-Surgeon by trade and is buried in the graveyard of St. Peter and St. Paul (above). In his will that was proved in 1653 he gave 20 shillings to “my daughter Elizabeth the now wife of John Fuller in New England.” Right: St. Andrews Church in Great Saxham, Suffolk, England, where Walter Cole and Susanna Northfield were married in 1609. The town is ancient and was recorded in the Domesday Book of 1086.



Will: WALTER COLE of Lavenham, Suffolk, barber chirurgion, 13 August 1652, proved 24 September 1653. ‘My will is that Susan my well beloved wife shall have, hold, occupy and enjoy...But the said Anne my daughter shall pay unto my daughter Jane the now wife of Thomas Day of Colchester, Essex, fifteen pounds, within a year after the decease of Susan my wife, and also twenty shillings more unto my daughter *Elizabeth the now wife of John Fuller in New England*, to be paid within three years after the decease of Susan my wife. I give to my daughter Susan... The residue I give to my said wife whom I make sole executrix.’” (Will posted on Find a Grave) Walter Cole was buried in the graveyard of St. Peter and St. Paul in Lavenham, England.

John Fuller (10th Great-Grandfather; 1611-1697, emigrated to Cambridge Village [later Newton], Massachusetts, about 1644) was probably the son of **John Fuller** (baptized

Worthy to Remember an Abridgment

January 4, 1563, in Lavenham, England) and **Anne Gates** (born April 5, 1573, in Lavenham, England).



Three scenes from Lavenham, England: High Street (above), the Old Wool Hall, which dates from 1464 (top right), and the Crooked House (right). Below: Gravestone of Abraham Brown (8th Great-Grandfather; 1671-1729) in Waltham, Massachusetts. The inscription reads: "Here lyes Buried / ye Body of Capt. / ABRAHAM BROWN / Who Departed this / life Novembr ye 27th / Anno Dom. 1729 in ye / 59th Year of His Age."

Elizabeth Fuller (9th Great-Grandmother; 1645-1685), wife of Job Hyde (9th Great-Grandfather; 1643-1685), was the daughter of **John Fuller** (10th Great-Grandfather; 1611-1697) and **Elizabeth Cole** (10th Great-Grandmother; about 1623-1700) of Newton, Massachusetts. (The Hastings Family, pages 43-44)



Oldest Home in Watertown, Massachusetts

Abraham Browne (8th Great-Grandfather; 1671-1729) was son of **Jonathan Browne** and **Mary Shattuck**. He bought the family home at Watertown from the other heirs, to which he made "new" additions to the older portion that his son Samuel occupied. He held numerous town positions, including that of Town Treasurer, Assessor, Selectman, Town Clerk, and Captain of Militia. He was licensed as an innkeeper in 1709 and continued as such for four years. He was appointed guardian in 1708 of the 17-year-old Ephraim Williams (1691-1754), later Colonel and father of the founder of Williams College (i.e Ephraim Williams, Jr., 1714-1755).

His home, built in circa 1697, is the oldest building still standing in Watertown, Massachusetts. His grandfather, **Abraham Browne** (10th Great-Grandfather; died 1650) was one of the first settlers of Watertown, Massachusetts (established in 1630), and is listed on

the Founder's Monument. (Watertown is nine miles due west from downtown Boston.)
(The Hastings Family, pages 18-23)

Oldest Known Burial in Lancaster, Massachusetts

John Houghton (9th Great-Grandfather; 1624-1684) immigrated to New England between



Above: Seal of Watertown, Massachusetts, that was first settled in 1630. It depicts the first meeting of a Puritan with a Native American, where a biscuit was traded for a fish. Right: The Original 1692/1698 home of Abraham Brown (8th Great-Grandfather; 1671-1729) in July 2002. Located at 562 Main Street in Watertown, Massachusetts, it is the oldest surviving building in Watertown. Restored in 1919, it is “acknowledged to be the first fully documented restoration in America.” It was considered a “mansion house” when it was built in the late 1600s.



1647 and 1650, with his wife, **Beatrix** (9th Great-Grandmother; 1625-1720), and possibly accompanied by his cousin or brother, Ralph Houghton. He first resided in Dedham, Massa-

chusetts, but about 1652 moved to Lancaster, Massachusetts. His first home in Lancaster was located between Clinton and South Lancaster on Dean's Brook. After the Indian massacre in 1675, he lived in Woburn, Massachusetts, until Lancaster was resettled. When he returned to Lancaster, he lived on the old common south of the road nearly opposite the

Reform School. He had a very large, landed estate in the present towns of Berlin, Clinton



*Sold in Watertown Jan: 28: 1712
Abraham Brown Esq^r
Clerk.*



and Bolton. John Houghton was a prominent citizen and served as deputy from Lancaster to the general court in 1660.

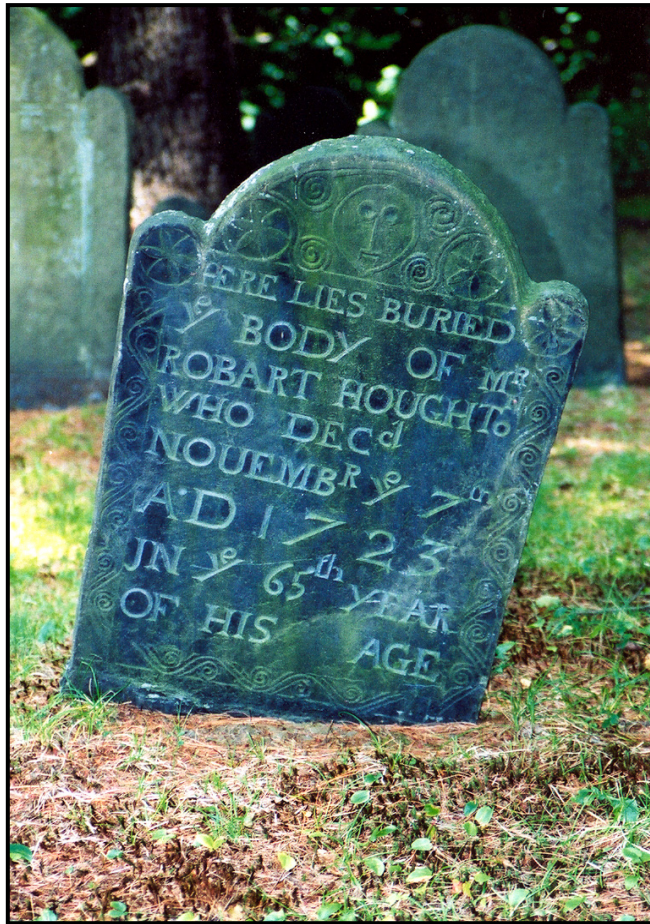
John died in 1684 and was buried in the Old Burying Ground in Lancaster, his gravestone being the oldest in the cemetery and in the town. The inscription on his gravestone reads: "JOHN / HOVHTON / DECASED / 1684." His monument is about one foot in height, which is typical of the oldest gravestones in New England.

Top left: I'm holding my daughter, Rebecca Martin (age 1 1/2), next to the gravestone of Mary Shattuck Brown, my 9th Great-Grandmother in Waltham, Massachusetts, in 1997. The inscription reads: "Here lyes Buried / ye body of Mrs. Mary / Brown, Relict of Mr. / Jonathan Brown / Who Departed this / Life, Octobery 23^d / A. D. 1732 in ye. . ." (the rest of the inscription is buried but reads: "89th year of her age. Pious in life. Resigned in death."). Mary was the mother of Capt. Abraham Brown (signature, above), whose home is the oldest in Watertown. Top right: Monument of Elizabeth Bennett Houghton (7th Great-Grandmother) and her son, Hiram Houghton (6th Great-Granduncle), in Boylston, Massachusetts. Left: Gravestone of John Houghton (9th Great-Grandfather; 1624-1684), which is the oldest in Lancaster, Massachusetts; 1994.

John and Beatrix were the parents of seven children: John Houghton (1650-1737), **Robert**



Above: Gravestone of John Houghton (8th Great-Granduncle; 1650-1737). He was the most prominent man of his time in Lancaster, Massachusetts. The inscription reads: “HERE LIES BURIED /ye BODY OFMr./JOHNHOUGHTON/ESQR. AS YOU / ARE SO WARE WE / AS WE ARE SO / YOU WILL BE / WHO DIED FEBRUARY YE 3rd ANNODOMINY /1736-7 AND /IN ye 87th YEAR /OF HIS AGE.” Right: Monument of Robert Houghton (8th Great-Grandfather; 1658-1723) in Old Common Burying Ground in Lancaster, Massachusetts. Both brothers survived two serious Indian attacks in 1675 and 1704.



Houghton (1658-1723), Mary Wheeler Houghton (1662), Jonas Houghton (1663-1723), Beatrix Houghton (1665), Benjamin Houghton (1668-1721) and Sarah Houghton (1672). All his children, except John, who was born in Dedham, were born in Lancaster, Massachusetts. Some of their gravestones are among the best of our ancestors. (The Houghton Family, pages 1-10)

Some of their gravestones are among the best of our ancestors. (The Houghton Family, pages 1-10)

Most Prominent Person in Lancaster, Massachusetts

John Houghton, Jr. (8th Great-Granduncle; 1650-1737) was the most prominent citizen of Lancaster, Massachusetts, in his day. He served in various town offices and was representative and justice for many years. After the Indian massacre at Lancaster in 1675, which was part of King Philip’s War, he and his family fled to Woburn, Massachusetts. He and his brother, Jonas, signed petitions on behalf of the town of Lancaster to the legislature during Queen Anne’s War. For fourteen years, between 1693 and 1724, he was deputy to the general court. John was town clerk for forty years. He was a fine penman and was a skilled conveyancer and writer of legal papers. In 1704 he commanded a garrison

house on the east side of the Nashua River in Lancaster. He and his first wife, Mary Farrar, had 13 children. (The Houghton Family, pages 5-7)

Survived Two Indian Attacks

Robert Houghton (8th Great-Grandfather; 1658-1723) moved from Lancaster, Massa-



Above: Gravestone of Samuel Bennett (8th Great-Grandfather; 1665-1742) in the Old Burying Ground in Lancaster, Massachusetts. I took this photograph in 2012, and it is one of my all-time favorite pictures. His father, George Bennett (9th Great-Grandfather; 1630-1675) was killed by Indians on Sunday August 16, 1675, in Lancaster, Massachusetts. No one expected the attack, which was deemed a massacre.

ed in Lancaster during both attacks, and survived, but his father was killed (see below). (The Houghton Family, pages 8-9)

Killed in Indian Attack

George Bennett (9th Great-Grandfather; 1630-1675) was killed in the Indian massacre that occurred at Lancaster, Massachusetts, on Sunday August 16, 1675. He was about forty-five years old when the unexpected attack occurred. His son, **Samuel Bennett** (8th Great-Grandfather; 1665-1742), was ten years old when the attack took place. His mother, **Lydia**

chusetts, with his family after the Indian massacre on Sunday August 16, 1675, to Woburn, Massachusetts, later settling in Clinton, Massachusetts, on "The Acre." He later returned to Lancaster, but he and others again suffered losses in the Indian raid of July 31, 1704. He was one of those who petitioned the general court for aid on behalf of the inhabitants of Lancaster in November 1704. He and his wife, **Es-ther Lippingwell Houghton** (8th Great-Grandmother; 1657-1740), have excellent gravestones in Old Common Burying Ground in Lancaster, Massachusetts. **Samuel Bennett** (8th Great-Grandfather; 1665-1742) also resid-

Kirby (9th Great-Grandmother; born about 1635), moved their family away from Lancaster, as did all the other families of Lancaster, for several years. In 1692 Samuel was stationed at Nonacoicus Farm in Groton, now Ayer, Massachusetts. He returned to Lancaster, where he owned land in the center of town that once belonged to his great-grandfather, **Richard Linton** (11th Great-Grandfather). He also owned a saw-mill, “up the North River.” In later years he moved to Shrewsbury, Massachusetts, but probably returned again to Lancaster, for he was buried in the Old Burying Ground,



where his gravestone is one of the finest, ancient monuments in Massachusetts. The inscription on his gravestone reads: “HERE LIES BURIED / ye BODY OF MR. / SAMUEL BENNIT / WHO DEPARTED / THIS LIFE JULY 6th / A. D 1742 / AGE JN ye 77th / YEAR OF HIS AGE.” (The Houghton Family, pages 15-16)

Loyalist during Revolutionary War

Solomon Houghton (6th Great-Grandfather; born 1729), son of Joshua Houghton (7th Great-Grandfather; 1695-before 1775), was a Loyalist and served as Paymaster in the English army during the Revolutionary War. In spite of his support for the King of England, most of his family were patriots and soldiers, who supported the revolution. After the Colonies won their independence, Solomon moved to England and probably died there. His will bequeathed his property to any of his children who would swear allegiance to the king. None of his sons would make such an oath, but one daughter finally went to Canada and fulfilled the requirements of her father’s will for the sake of the property.

Solomon’s wife, **Deliverance Houghton** (6th Great-Grandmother; died 1810), moved to Marlboro, Vermont, where she lived with her sons, Nahum, Philemon, and Hiram Houghton,



Above: Gravestone of Deliverance Ross Houghton (6th Great-Grandmother; 1734-1810) in Marlboro Cemetery in Marlboro, Vermont. She is buried next to Elizabeth Whitney (6th Great-Grandmother; 1716-1800) (left). Deliverance and Elizabeth were good friends and many of their children intermarried. The Houghton and Whitney families were prominent, early settlers of Marlboro. I took these photographs about 2000.

during the last years of her life. She is buried in Marlboro Cemetery next to her good friend, **Elizabeth Whitney** (6th Great-Grandmother). (The Houghton Family, pages 17-18)

Best Photograph of a Gravestone

The gravestone of **Esther Leppingwell Houghton** (8th Great-Grandmother; 1657-1740)



Above: Gravestone of Esther Lippingwell Houghton (8th Great-Grandmother; 1657-1740) in Old Common Burying Ground in March 2013. I rate this as the best photograph of a gravestone that I've ever taken.

Vermont, when he was killed by an Indian about half a mile south of the fort. He "went unarmed to the residence of Joshua June to obtain some garments which Mrs. June had washed for him. He had been gone from the house but a short time when Mrs. June

in Old Common Burying Ground in Lancaster, Massachusetts, may be the best photograph that I have ever taken of an ancestral monument. I took the picture in March 2013. The timing was ideal as the sun was overhead and lit the face of the gravestone perfectly, making the background black. Just five minutes later everything had changed. I visited Esther's monument again a few years later and it is no longer in pristine condition. (The Houghton Family, page 9)

Killed by an Indian

Caleb Houghton (1760-1780; Great-Grandson of Robert Houghton, 8th Great-Grandfather) was serving as a Revolutionary War soldier with about 150 men at Fort Revenge, Pittsford, Rutland County,

heard the report of a gun. Stepping to the door and looking up along the road she saw an Indian in the act of transfixing Houghton with his bayonet.”

“For some time before this event the horrid atrocities of the Indians had produced such



Above: Gravestone of Capt. Sampson Waters (1640-1693; son of Ann Linton, 10th Great-Grandaunt) in Copp’s Hill Burying Ground in Boston, Massachusetts. Sampson was one of 14 children of Ann Linton (1613-1680) and Lawrence Waters (1612-1687). His parents were once fined for dancing together. Right: Monument of Caleb Houghton (1760-1780; grandson of Robert Houghton, 8th Great-Grandfather), a Revolutionary War soldier, who was killed by an Indian in 1780. He was unarmed as he left Fort Revenge in Pittsford, Vermont, to get his clothes when he was attacked. Today the monument, which was erected in 1873, marks the location of the fort.



an effect upon Houghton’s mind that he had a frightful dream of being captured and tortured by them and had been heard afterwards solemnly to declare that he would never be taken alive by them. These facts were recollected at the fort when Houghton’s absence was unexpectedly protracted, and sad fears

were entertained as to his fate. A party of men were sent out to look for him, and after a while they found his corpse about half a mile south of the fort, bearing marks of a fierce struggle and of savage revenge. This took place beneath an oak tree which stood about one hundred rods northeast of Mr. June’s house, and when the land was cleared this tree was thoughtfully spared and may still be seen pointing out the spot where Houghton fell a victim to Indian ferocity. The soldiers took the body of their comrade, carried it to the fort and thence buried it on a small knoll, about fifteen rods east of the present residence of Samuel Hendee” (*History of the Town of Pittsford, Vermont*, by Dr. A.M. Caverly; pub. by Tuttle & Co., Rutland, Vermont., 1872).

“The first we hear of Caleb Houghton as a soldier was in the year 1777, when he was enrolled in the company commanded by Capt. John Patty in Col. Williams’ Regiment. This company was called out on August 29th and was in service twenty-five days. Young Houghton received £2 for this service. 10s. 8d.”

Fined for Dancing; Built the First House in Lancaster, Massachusetts

Ann Linton (10th Great-Grandaunt; 1613-1680) married about 1635 Lawrence Waters (born about 1612; died December 9, 1687, in Charlestown, Massachusetts). Lawrence settled in Watertown, where he had a home and eight acres by 1635. He later purchased



an additional 150 acres. In the early town records Lawrence is referred to as a carpenter.

In 1646 Lawrence disposed of all his holdings except his home and original eight acres and moved with his father-in-law, Richard Linton (11th Great-Grandfather), to Lancaster, Massachusetts. He built a house on seventeen acres, which was probably the first building in Lancaster. This building, located on the southeast side of George Hill, was known as the trucking house and used for trading with the Indians. By 1650 he sold this house and land to John and Elizabeth Hall, and settled nearby on a six-acre lot where he built another house. He soon purchased another nine acres that bordered on his father-in-law's property and then twenty-four additional acres.



Above: Two post cards from 1909 that show the Old Grist Mill and Seven Bridge Road in Lancaster, Massachusetts. Lawrence Waters (1612-1687; husband of Ann Linton, 1613-1680, 10th Great-Grandaunt) and John Prescott built the first corn mill in Lancaster in 1653. Perhaps this is a later building on the same site.

build a corn mill in Lancaster. In 1654 his estate was valued at 277 pounds, and he drew lot Number 4 of eleven acres in the second division of meadows. In 1662 he was released from ordinary training by paying five shillings per annum to the military company. (It was the usual case to be released from military training after the age of 60 years.) He was made a freeman in 1663, and on August 18, 1663, the church land bounded on his land.

On March 15, 1653, Lawrence signed the first laws and orders of Lancaster. Later in September he was one of the signers of an agreement with John Prescott, blacksmith, to

Lawrence and Anna survived the Indian attack and on March 20, 1675/1676, with his

wife and two children, he sought shelter in Charlestown where his son Stephen became responsible to the authorities for them. At this time, he was blind. Survivors of the attack took shelter in and near two fortified houses or garrisons, one of them on the land of Lawrence Waters. On May 28, 1684, Lawrence was taxed in Lancaster as an out-of-town resident, 1 pound and 3 shillings for the meetinghouse and 1 pound and 17 shillings for the minister. He died in 1687, aged about 85 years, having outlived his wife by seven years.

Lawrence and Ann were once fined (18 pence) and “admonished to avoyde dancing.” The date is not given in the record. (*Records of the Governor & Company of the Massachusetts Bay in New England*, Volume 4, part 1, page 233.) (The Houghton Family, pages 30-32)



Above: Double gravestone of Gersholm Houghton (7th Great-Granduncle) and Daniel Knight in Leominster, Massachusetts. This is an extremely rare monument, not because it is a double gravestone, but for the reason that it is a memorial to two husbands of the same wife. This is the only monument of its kind that the author has ever seen; 2011.

One Gravestone for Both Husbands

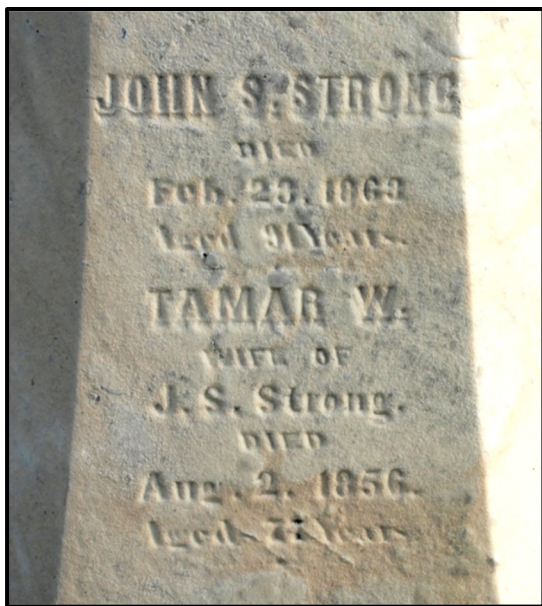
Gersholm Houghton (7th Great-Granduncle; born about 1697; died April 3, 1757), son of **Robert Houghton** (8th Great-Grandfather), married Elizabeth Rugg on February 23, 1724/1725, in Lancaster, Massachusetts. In 1725, he and Elizabeth moved to “the new grant,” now Leominster, with members of his father’s family. The Houghton House still (1907) stands at the railway crossing and Main Street in Leominster. They lived as one family until after 1729, when Gersholm had a farm of 162 acres surveyed. After his death, Elizabeth married second Daniel Knight of Leominster on May 12, 1758. Knight died October 27, 1767, and she died on February 13, 1779, at Leominster. (Gersholm’s will dated 1757)

Gersholm was the first settler of Leominster; its first treasurer (1740-1742) and a selectman in 1750. He served as a soldier in the Louisburg expedition under Captain Jonathan Smith in 1748.

“In 1725 the first actual settlers were Gersholm Houghton in the south and soon after James Boutelle in the southwesterly part of what is now Leominster. Gersholm Houghton built his house on the farm now owned by Mr. C. C. Boyden, his wife Tamar (actually Elizabeth) carrying in her apron the field stones used in the construction of the chimney. After the death of her husband in 1757, she married Mr. Daniel Knight, and after his death ten years later, erected in their memory the double stone now sitting in the northeast corner of the old burying ground (Pine Grove Cemetery, the First Meetinghouse Burying Ground, lo-

cated on Tremaine and Main Streets in Leominster). The cellar hole of the Houghton House still remains on Mr. Boyden's farm" (*Leominster, Massachusetts: Historical and Picturesque*, Chapter 2, pages 23-29, published 1888).

The double gravestone mentioned above was still standing in 2011. The inscription on the original monument reads: "In Memory of Mr. / DANIEL KNIGHT / Who died Oct. / ye 27th AD 1767 / In Ye 78th Year / Of His Age." [and] "In Memory of Mr. GERSHOM



Above: Monument of Tamar W. Houghton Strong (1779-1856; daughter of Tamar Houghton, 5th Great-Grandaunt, and Jonas Whitney 5th Great-Granduncle; equivalent to a 4th Great-Grandaunt) and her husband John S. Strong (1772-1863) in Strongsville Cemetery. John donated the land for the burial ground in 1822. He was the founder of Strongsville, Ohio, which was named after him.

Houghton, 5th Great-Grandaunt and Jonas Whitney 5th Great-Granduncle; equivalent to 4th Great-Grandaunt) moved from Marlboro, Vermont, with her husband, John S. Strong, to Ohio in the early 1800s. A huge amount of land was purchased southwest of modern day Cleveland largely by two men who "in 1815 appointed John Stoughton Strong ('an enterprising citizen of Connecticut, already arrived at middle age, but full of the vigor and courage of youth') as their agent in the sale and settlement" of their property.

"It was in the month of February 1816, that the first hand of settlers, having made their tedious way from Connecticut in sleighs, entered the territory afterwards known as the township of Strongsville. It was led by John S. Strong, the gentleman just mentioned, a small, active, nervous man, full of untiring energy, well-suited to the task of opening a new country, and was composed, besides him of Elijah Lyman (brother-in-law of John Strong; husband of Irene Houghton), Guilford Whitney, William Fuller, Obadiah Church,

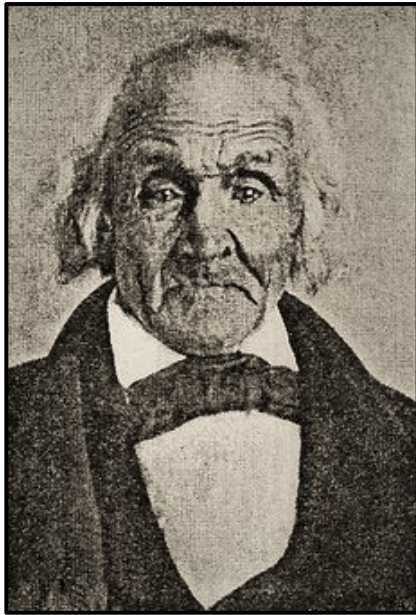
HOUGHTON / Who Died April / ye 3rd AD 1757 / In Ye 66th Year / Of His Age." The epitaph reads: "As you are now we once were / As we are now you must be." This is a very unusual monument in that the wife placed the names of both of her husbands on the same gravestone. I have done family history research for forty years and it is the only monument of its kind that I have ever seen. It definitely reflects the love she had for both men.

Gersholm and Elizabeth had two children: Abiathar (born January 21, 1725; died January 8, 1777; married Millicent Carter; Abiathar served as a private in Capt. J. Wood's Massachusetts company during the Revolutionary War and may have died in service; military marker in Pine Grove Cemetery in Leominster, Massachusetts) and Tamar Houghton (born December 5, 1732/1733; married Levi Woods). (The Houghton Family, pages 47-51)

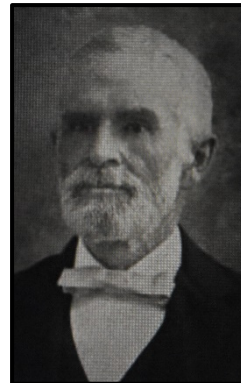
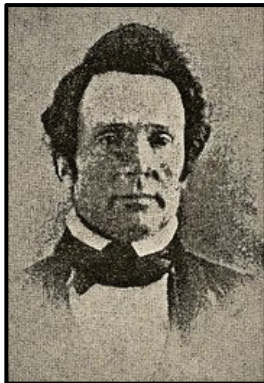
Founded Strongsville, Ohio

Tamar Houghton (daughter of Tamar

and Mr. Goodell. Mr. Strong selected a point only a few rods northwest of the center of



the township, where the village of Strongsville is now located, as the place for his own residence and the headquarters of the infant colony. Axes were speedily ringing in the forest, and a log house was soon erected to serve the party for shelter while surveying the township into lots” (*History of Cuyahoga County, Ohio*, pages 520-528, published 1879).



Top: Tamar W. Houghton Strong (1779-1856; equivalent to a 4th Great-Grandaunt) and John S. Strong (1772-1863). Above: Their son, Warner Strong (1804-1856; left), his wife, Saloma Burrell Strong (1804-1856), and Warner’s son, Frederick Strong (1835-1919; right). Warner and Saloma died a month apart. Frederick traded lumber and published a weekly newspaper in Winterset, Iowa. He died in Pacific Grove, California.

“About the first of October 1816, another family was added to the little settlement; Guilford Whitney then bringing from Connecticut his wife and his four children: Flavel, Jubal, Vina and Betsy— also a young lady named Charlotte Wallace.”

no grain in the new settlement, but it was extremely rare in the older localities around, owing to the cold summer of 1816 (‘Year without a summer’). One settler had to travel thirty miles from Strongsville to obtain wheat at a dollar a bushel.”

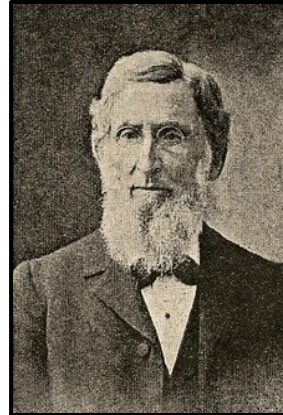
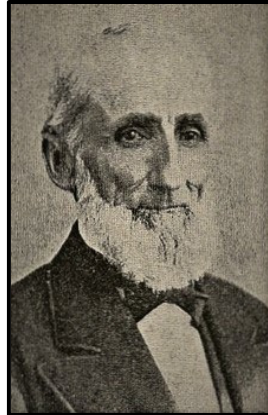
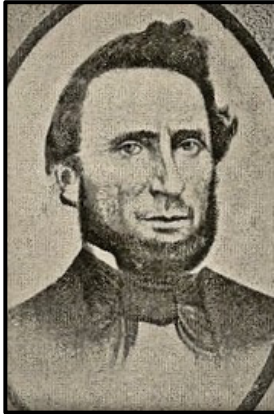
“Not only was there

“During the winter of 1816-1817 the first marriage took place in the township; the groom being Hollis Whitney and the bride being the Miss Charlotte Wallace before mentioned as accompanying Guilford Whitney.”

Many new families came to the new settlement in 1817 “and great prosperity was expected. Axes were heard in every direction, and log houses rose in various parts of the township in quick succession. John Bosworth cleared fifty acres for Mr. Strong, thirty of which were

Worthy to Remember an Abridgment

sown to wheat that fall. Numerous smaller clearings were made, many tracts were sown to



wheat and the township bade fair to be speedily independent of the outer world, so far as food was concerned. The religious habits of old Connecticut were imported by the colonists, and on the 10th



Above: Three sons of Tamar Houghton Strong (1779-1856; equivalent to a 4th Great-Grandaunt): Clark Ross Strong (1808-1856), Lyman Whitney Strong (1817-1881), and John Stoughton Strong, (1820-1906). Left: Edson Baldwin Olds (1802-1869; son of Sally Whitney Olds, 1774-1840, daughter of Tamar Houghton, 6th Great-Grandaunt, and Jonas Whitney, 6th Great-Granduncle—equivalent to a 5th Great-Grandaunt). He was a Representative from Ohio and physician. Member of the State House of Representatives in 1842, 1843, 1845 and 1846; served in the State senate 1846-1848; elected as a Democrat to the Thirty-first, second and third U.S. Congresses. He was arrested for disloyalty and imprisoned in Fort Lafayette in 1862 but was elected a member of the State House of Representatives while a prisoner. Upon his release, he served in this position from 1862-1866. Lower left: Rev. Marcus Lafayette Olds (1828-1868; son of Edson Baldwin Olds), who died at the age of 40.



of October the First Congregational Church was organized.”

“Such rapid progress incited the principal men to apply to the county commissioners to form a separate civil township. Their petition was granted, and the name of Strongsville was given to the new township, in honor of its most prominent citizen, John S. Strong.”

“In the spring of 1818, Mr. J. S. Strong brought his family from Connecticut [actually Marlboro, Vermont] except those who having reached man’s estate had already immigrated to Strongsville. The whole list embraced the names of Warner C., Lyman W., John, Chipman, Emery, Beuda, Franklin, and Lavinia Strong. Another large family which settled in Strongsville this year was that of Joseph Olds, among the members of which were Edson B. Olds (afterwards celebrated in Ohio politics), G. L., L. W., C. N., and Dr. Benjamin Olds. The last named immediately began practice at ‘the center,’ becoming the first physician in Strongsville.”

“During the same summer Mr. J. S. Strong erected a framed barn, the first framed building in the township. The raising was a great event, attended by all the men of Strongsville, and

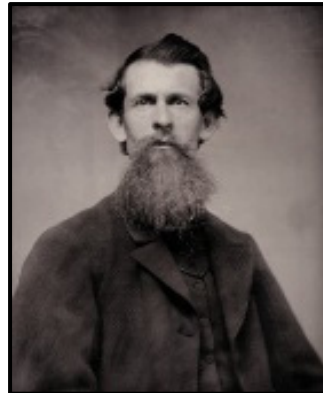
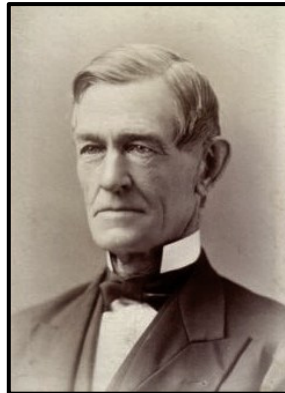
probably by some outsiders from Middleburg and Columbia. When the work was completed



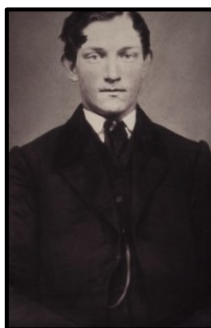
Top row from left: Cynthia Houghton (1792-1880; daughter of Benjamin Houghton, 6th Great-Granduncle), her sister, Dolly Houghton (1803-1888), and two of Dolly's children: William Henry Andrews (1840-1841) and Emma E. Andrews (1846-1915). Left: Rebekah Whitcomb Houghton (1813-1876), another sister of Cynthia Houghton, and her husband, Deacon Henry Harding Brigham (1814-1888). He was town clerk of Boylston, Massachusetts, for 38 years. Lower left: Their daughter, Henrietta Brigham (1838-1925) and her husband, John Thomas Andrews (1838-1900), who served as a Union soldier for five months. Bottom: Penniman Mason Brigham (1840-1928; left) and Calvin Henry Brigham (1845-1865; right), who died at the age of 20, sons of Rebekah Houghton and Henry Brigham.



the men ranged themselves on one of the plates, in accordance



with the ancient custom, passed a bottle of whisky from mouth to mouth until all had partaken, and then gave three rousing cheers, while the last man flung the bottle as far as his arm could send it.”



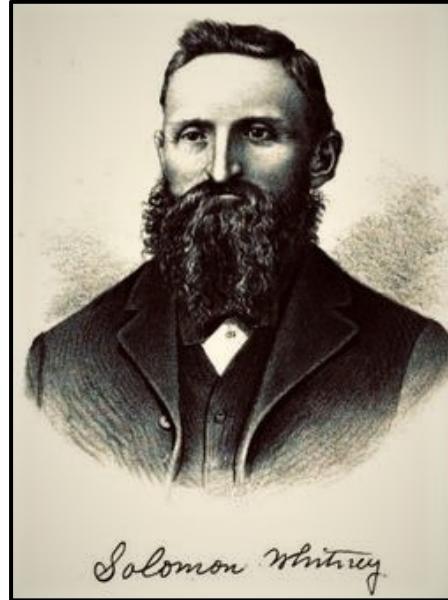
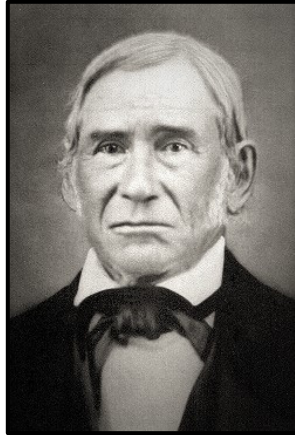
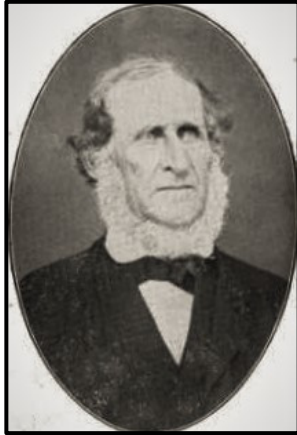
“In March 1819 the first death in the colony occurred, that of Stoughton Strong, at the age of nineteen. The second was that of Polly, wife of Lyman Strong, who died on the 8th of May 1819, at the age of twenty-one.”

“In 1820 the first tavern was erected by J. S. Strong; a frame building which is still [1879] used for that purpose at Strongsville Center.

This was the first framed residence in the township.”

“Up to this time the people had generally got their grinding done at Vaughn’s mill in Mid-

dleburg, or at Hoadley's in Columbia. When these were dry the hungry citizens were com-



Above left: Flavel Whitney (1804-1877; son of Guilford Whitney, son of Capt. Samuel Whitney 6th Great-Granduncle). Flavel came with his parents to Strongsville, Ohio, in October 1816. Above middle: Jabez Smith (1784-1874; husband of Charlotte H. Whitney, 1786-1875, daughter of Nathaniel Whitney, 6th Great-Granduncle, and Mary Houghton, 6th Great-Grandaunt, making her the equivalent of a 5th Great-Grandaunt). They married in 1851. Top right: Solomon Whitney Jr. (1832-1901; son of Solomon Whitney, 6th Great-Granduncle). Right: Home of Tamar W. Houghton Strong (1779-1856; equivalent to a 4th Great-Grandaunt) and her husband, John S. Strong (1772-1863), which was built in 1833 at the Center in Strongsville, Ohio. The town was named after John Strong who was its first and most prominent settler.



pelled to travel as far as Tallmage, Chagrin River, or even Painesville, to procure the needed work. That enterprising pioneer, John S. Strong, now thought it time that his township should have a mill of its own. In the fall of 1820, he accordingly erected a gristmill on Rocky River, at the point now called Albion. E. Lyman was the millwright and A. J. Pope did the iron work. Thaddeus Lathrop came from Middleburg and boarded the hands who worked on the mill and was afterwards the first miller in the new structure. A sawmill was built about the same time as the gristmill.”

“From one great pest of new countries the pioneers of Strongsville were comparatively free. There was much less sickness than is usual during the period in which the wilderness is subjugated. There was a little ague along the banks of Rocky River, but the high, dry, rolling ground, of which the township is principally composed, was almost entirely free from this and other forms of sickness.”

“In 1821 or 1822 J. S. Strong built a distillery near his mills, at what is now Albion. In the

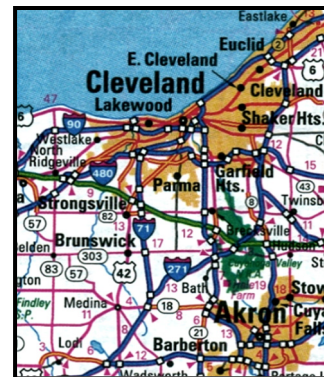
latter year occurred the death of Dr. B. B. Olds, the first physician, who had meanwhile



Above: Site of the gristmill and sawmill built by John Strong at Albion, Ohio, in the 1820's on Rocky River. Albion is about two miles from the Center of Strongsville, Ohio. Left: Gravestone of Jonas Whitney (5th Great-Granduncle), husband of Tamar Houghton (5th Great-Grandaunt), in Strongsville Cemetery, Strongsville, Ohio. His son-in-law, John Strong, founded Strongsville. The inscription reads: *"In Memory of / DE A. / JONAS WHITNEY / Was born / In Shrewsbury, Mass. / June 17, 1751. / died / April 28, 1842 / Aged 91."* Below: Location of Strongsville relative to Cleveland, Ohio. The city has experienced dramatic growth since 1960 and has a population of about 45,000 today (2021).

married a daughter of Mr. Strong. The same year Mr. Strong, having sold his property at Albion, proceeded to build another gristmill on Rocky River, nearly two miles east of the center. There could hardly have been business enough for two gristmills in the thinly settled township, but Mr. S. was of so enterprising a temperament that, as Mr. Haines says, 'He couldn't keep still.' He also built an ashery at the center, where he manufactured pot and pearl ashes for many years."

Because of Strongsville's rapid growth the proprietors raised the price of land from \$3 to \$5 dollars per acre. "But about the same period Congress perfected its system of surveys, and instead of selling land as before to wealthy men in large tracts, began offering it to everyone in quarter-sections at a dollar and a quarter an acre. Immigration to Strongsville quickly fell off before this competition, and for several years was very light; the proprietors being at length compelled to reduce their prices to \$2 per acre in order to sell their land."



"The first store in the township which occupied a separate building was established by Emory Strong about 1824."

"Dr. Olds was succeeded within a year or two after his death by Dr. William Baldwin, who practiced at the center for ten or twelve years. . . here were eighty-nine households in the township in 1826."

Worthy to Remember an Abridgment

“By 1830 there was a small settlement at the lower mill on Rocky River (since known as



Top left: Home of Nathaniel Whitney (5th Great-Granduncle; 1749-1829) and Mary Houghton (5th Great-Grandaunt; 1752-1844), built in 1777, in Marlboro, Vermont; 2006. Top right: View from the back door of Nathaniel's home and its fireplace. Above and right: Home and barn of Hiram Houghton (5th Great-Granduncle; born 1763), built in the late 1700s in Marlboro, Vermont.

Albion), but there was yet no hotel or store there. . . Emory and Warner Strong were then selling goods on the corner and old Mr. Strong about the same time established a store in a new brick building.” Albion boomed until 1843, “but a fire that year destroyed a large part of the village which inflicted a blow on the prosperity from which it never recovered. . . Meanwhile, Strongsville Center continued to grow on a more even tenor” (*History of Cuyahoga County, Ohio*, pages 520-528, published 1879).



“John S. Strong, in honor of whom the township of Strongsville was named, came from Marlborough, Vermont, to Cuyahoga County, Ohio, in 1816. After a short sojourn here, he went back to

Vermont, and with his family returned to the township which has since borne his name. Here he took claim to a large tract of land, on which he established his home and here he lived to the ripe old age of ninety-three years. This John S. Strong was an uncle of Retire Grove Strong. The latter was born in Stafford, Connecticut, June 25, 1797, and when eighteen years of age came out to Cuyahoga County, Ohio, and entered the employ of John S. Strong. For two years of service he was to have his choice of a farm in Strongsville Township and accordingly selected one in the northern part of the township. He settled on this farm in 1819 and here he spent the rest of his life and died; his death occurring May 14, 1859.”



“Here Grove Strong was married in this township, June 24, 1819, to Miss Vina W. Whitney, daughter of Deacon Whitney and sister of Flavel Whitney. She was born in Marlborough, Vermont, June 14, 1802, and died at her home in this township, June 2, 1842...Her sister, Vernica Whitney, was the only woman in Strongsville in 1816, and her son, Franklin Hillard, was the first child born in Strongsville township...Retire Grove Strong and Vina Whitney were the parents of thirteen children” (*Memorial Record of the County of Cuyahoga and City of Cleveland, Ohio*, pages 767-768, published 1894). (The Houghton Family, pages 55-62)

Top: Whetstone Inn in Marlboro, Vermont. It was built by Jonas Whitney (5th Great-Granduncle; 1751-1842), husband of Tamar Houghton (5th Great-Grandaunt; 1754-1831), in 1786. They lived here for the next 45 years and then six years after Tamar died, Jonas moved to Strongsville, Ohio, where he died five years later in 1842. Above: Old photograph of Town Common of Marlboro, Vermont, showing the Congregational Church (organized in 1776; right), the Whetstone Inn (center), and the Town Hall (built in 1822), which is used for town meetings. Newel Knight and Newel K. Whitney, both prominent in The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints, were both born in Marlboro.

Three Ancestral Homes from 1700s Still Standing in Marlboro, Vermont

Three homes built by great-granduncles are still standing in Marlboro Vermont. **Nathaniel Whitney** (5th Great-Granduncle; 1749-1829) built a house on the east side of town in 1777. He married **Mary Houghton Whitney** (5th Great-Grandaunt; 1752-1844). Whetstone Inn, located near the church, was built by **Jonas Whitney** (5th Great-Granduncle; 1751-1842)

in 1786. He married **Tamar Houghton** (5th Great-Grandaunt; 1754-1831) and after her death, moved to Strongsville, Ohio, in 1837. Jonas served as a Deacon of the Congre-



gational Church in Marlboro for more than fifty years, a Justice of the Peace for more than thirty years, and a member of the State Legislature for seven years. Jonas and Tamar had 13 children, 69 great-grandchildren, and 52 great-grandchildren at the time of his death. **Hiram Houghton** (5th Great-Granduncle) built a home in Marlboro between 1770 and 1790 and his mother, **Deliverance Houghton** (6th Great-Grandmother; 1735-1810), lived there during the last years of her life. (The Houghton Family, pages 15-16, 18; and the Whitney Family, pages 34, 42-43)

Left: Home of Eleazer Houghton (7th Great-Granduncle; 1690/ 1681-1790) at 758 Lancaster Avenue in Lunenburg, Massachusetts. He built this home about 1726. His gravestone (above) says that he died in the “Hundredth Year of his Age.” Below: Sign marking Bennington Battlefield. Philemon Houghton (5th Great-Granduncle; born 1770) and Roger Ross (6th Great-Granduncle; 1740-1820) fought in the Battle of Bennington, an important American victory.

Classic New England Saltbox Home from 1700s is Still Standing

Eleazer Houghton (7th Great-Granduncle; born 1691; died February 20, 1790, at Lunenburg, Massachusetts), son of **Robert Houghton** (8th Great-Grandfather), married Elizabeth L. Divoll (born 1693; died 1785, at Lunenburg) on March 11, 1718.

Elizabeth Divoll’s father, William Divoll, was a captive of the Indians in his youth, but was later ransomed. Eleazer and Elizabeth resided in Lancaster until 1726, when they moved to Lunenburg.

Eleazer was chosen with Samuel Johnson to be surveyors of the highway on March 6, 1737/1738. He and Josiah Bailey were chosen as constables. He was elected “Sealer of Leather” and was on many of the town’s important committees, such as the ones to “lay out the road” in 1753; and to “seat the meetinghouse” in 1760. One record reads, “That the way be altered which runs thru Eleazer Houghton’s land...and against Darius Houghton’s house.”

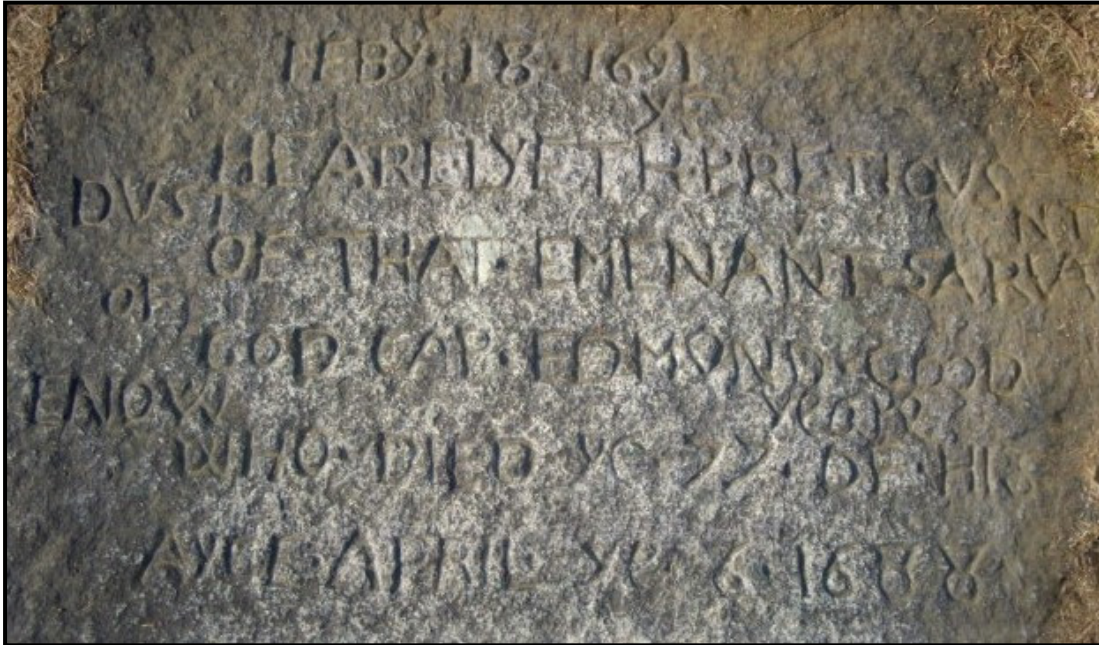


Eleazer was a tanner by trade, and his original frame house was still standing in 1907. The

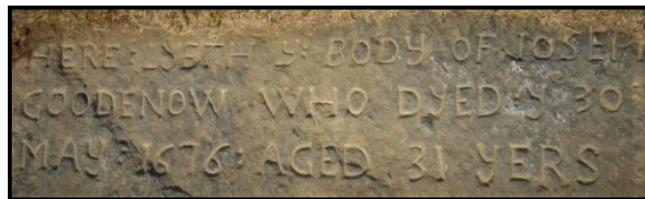
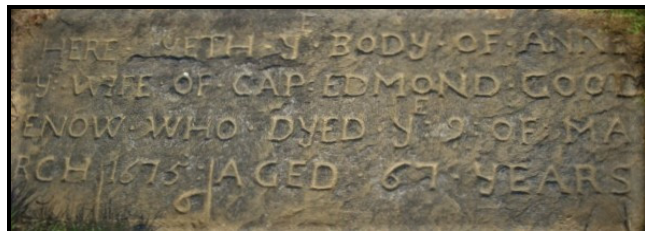
original farm was obtained by grant and purchase and amounted to two hundred seventy acres. In 1907 it was still owned by his descendants. (The Houghton Family, pages 42-48)

Fought in the Battle of Bennington

Philemon Houghton (5th Great-Granduncle; born 1761) and **Roger Ross** (6th Great-Grand-



This page: Inscriptions on the gravestones of Captain Edmond Goodenow (10th Great-Granduncle; 1610-1688/1691; brother of Thomas Goodenow, 10th Great-Grandfather—Brigham Young is also a direct descendant of Thomas Goodenow), above, his wife, Anne Barry Goodenow (1607-1675), middle, and their son, Joseph Goodenow (1645-1676), right, in North Cemetery in Weyland, Massachusetts. Edmond’s inscription reads: “FEBY 18, 1691 / HEARE LYETH YE PRETIOS DUST / OF THAT EMINANT SARVANT / OF GOD CAP. EDMUND / GOODENOW / WHO DIED YE 22 OF HIS / AGE APRIL YE 6. 1688.”



uncle; 1740-1817) both fought in the important Battle of Bennington on August 16, 1777. It was a decisive victory for the American cause early in the Revolutionary War, which was actually fought in Walloomsac, New York, about 10 miles from its namesake, Bennington, Vermont. This later culminated in the victory at Saratoga and the recognition of the United States as an independent nation by France. (The Houghton Family, pages 18, 21)

Three Gravestones from the 1600s in Weyland, Massachusetts

Three of the oldest gravestones in New England are located in North Cemetery in Weyland,

Massachusetts. **Edmond Goodenow** (10th Great-Granduncle; 1610-1688), his wife, Anne Barry Goodenow (1607-1675), and their son, Joseph Goodenow (1645-1676), are all buried next to each other. (The Houghton Family, pages 26-28)

Emigrated from Norwich, England, to New England in 1633

In 1633 **Simon Huntington** (9th Great-Grandfather; 1583/1598-1633) emigrated from



Norwich, England, to America with his wife, **Margaret Baret**

(9th Great-Grandmother; born about 1606), a daughter and three sons. He was a religious Puritan who had been under persecution at Norwich. That he was a man of some means is evident by his marriage to a daughter of a former sheriff and future mayor of Norwich.

This page: Norwich, England, in 2012. Top right: The Norman Castle and Cathedral and ground view of the castle (above). Top left: Elm Hill Street where “many sheriffs and mayors of Norwich lived” in the 1500s and 1600s. Left: St. Andrew’s parish church in central Norwich, England, where Simon Huntington and Margaret Baret (9th Great-Grandparents) were married on May 11, 1623. Their oldest son, Christopher, and youngest son, Henry, were baptized in St. Andrew’s in 1624 and 1631; Henry was buried here in 1632.

Tragically, Simon died of dysentery and high fever from smallpox in sight of the New England shore. Tradition states that he was buried at Saybrook or Lyme, Connecticut, but the church record of Rev. John Eliot at Roxbury, Massachusetts, records, “Margaret Hunt-



This page: The Guildhall of Norwich in 2012. It is the second largest guildhall in England, which was the civic meeting place in Norwich. It was built between 1407 and 1413. This is where Christopher Baret (10th Great-Grandfather; 1562-1649) met with city leaders when he was mayor in 1634 and 1647. His sons, Thomas Baret and Peter Beret, were also mayors of Norwich. Norwich was the second most important city in England in the 1600s.

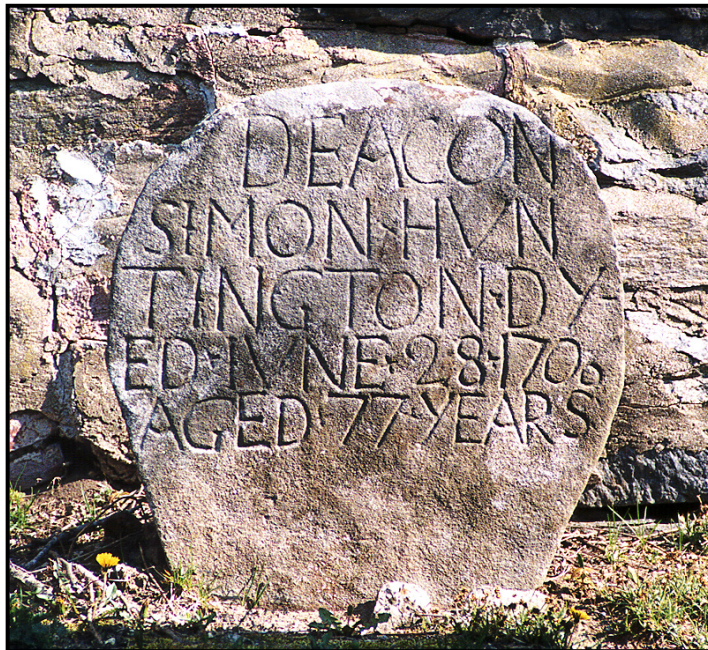
ington, widow, came in 1633. Her husband died by the way, of the smallpox. She brought—children with her.” The rest is left blank. The record indicates that the family landed in Massachusetts and not at Saybrook. “Margaret united with Roxbury church, and is afterward found at Windsor, Connecticut, as the wife of Thomas Stoughton, the family having moved there in 1635 or 1636” (*History of Norwich*, page 180). (The Huntington Family, pages 1-2)

Mayors of Norwich, England

Christopher Baret/Barrett (10th Great-Grandfather; 1562-1649) was baptized in St. Andrew’s at Westhall, Suffolk, England, in 1562 and moved to Norwich at a young age with his mother and stepfather. (“The Baret family had been settled for three generations in Westhall, where they were entered in the Visitation of Suffolk County in 1561.”) “He was bound as an apprentice and sent to London at the age of twelve for twelve years by his stepfather, Mr. Suckling. At the expiration of his term he located in Norwich as a grocer,” and married **Elizabeth Clarke** (10th Great-Grandmother), “daughter and sole heir of **Allen Clarke** (11th Great-Grandfather), gentleman, of Humberston, Lincolnshire, England.” He became the sheriff of Norwich in 1615, the mayor in 1634, and deputy mayor in 1647. (Norwich was second only to London in wealth and prestige in 1634.) He died in Norwich, where his will was proved on August 22, 1649.

Thomas Baret (9th Great-Granduncle) was “chosen mayor of Norwich on January 24, 1650” (*City of Norwich*, Chapter 30, by Francis Blomefield, published 1806).

Peter Baret (9th Great-Granduncle) wrote a letter to his nephew, Christopher Huntington (8th Great-Granduncle) of Saybrook, Connecticut, which is preserved in the state library at Hartford: “Cosen Christopher Huntington: Your letter date about the 20th September 1648, from Seabrook (Saybrook), I Received...140 pounds...is to be put into security and divided into five parts...two to yourself, one to Simon, one to Thomas, one to Ann...My father it hath pleased God to take away out of this world in August last. I pray God fit us for the like change.” He goes on to say that he has lost twenty pounds a year in income be-



Top right: Gravestone of Deacon Simon Huntington (8th Great-Grandfather; 1629-1706) in Old Norwichtown Cemetery. This is the oldest gravestone in Norwich, Connecticut. Simon was born in Norwich, England, in 1629 and came to America in 1633. Right: I'm with my son, Jonathan Martin (age 13), in Old Norwichtown Cemetery in 1995.



cause of an Act of Parliament, “that now I am removing myself towards London and so cannot by reason of these distractions think of sending you any commodities. Let this inclosed be conveyed to my

brother Stawcon (Stoughton). If I have time and leisure I will against the next spring send you over some...cloth...I shall not further inlarge myself, but my love to yourself and to your brothers and sister Remembered. Comitting you to the protection of the almightie rest, Your Loveing unckle Peter Baret, Norwich the 20th april, 1650. Send your letters to me by Mr. Edward French at his house in the George Yard on Lombard Street in London.”

Like his older brother, Peter Baret, also served the city of Norwich as mayor. This was a great honor. (The Huntington Family, pages 5-11)

Oldest Gravestone in Norwich, Connecticut

Simon Huntington (8th Great-Grandfather; 1629-1706) was baptized on July 6, 1629, in

St. Simon and St. Jude Church in Norwich England. About 1652 he migrated with his



Top right: St. Simon and St. Jude parish church in Norwich, England, which is located across the street from the cathedral in 2009. The church no longer has its tower. Simon Huntington (8th Great-Grandfather; 1629-1706) was baptized here on July 6, 1629. In the same year his father, Simon Huntington, Sr., was brought before the Bishop here because he would not “stand up at the Creed, nor bow at the name of Jesus,” typical Puritan infractions for the day. **Left:** Home and inn of Simon Huntington (8th Great-Granduncle; 1659-1736), built in 1689, on the village green in Norwich, Connecticut. The owner of the home in 1999 told my brother and me that the house was haunted (see text for her stories). **Above:** My brother, Ron, and me at the front door of the Simon Huntington home in 1999.

brother, Christopher, from Windsor to Saybrook, Connecticut. “In 1660 he joined the Norwich colonists and became one of the most important men in the management of the affairs, both secular and spiritual, of the colony. Shortly after his advent in the colony, he was chosen as deacon of the church of Mr. Fitch, serving in this office until the infirmities of old age compelled him to resign from these duties in 1696, when his son succeeded him. He was a large landowner and a man of enterprise and represented

Norwich at the general court of Connecticut in 1674 and from 1677 until 1685” (*New England History*, pages 1402-1403).

Simon’s estate was appraised at 275 pounds in 1706. He had a “fair size” library consisting of “a great Bible, another great Bible, Rogers’ seven treatises, A practical Catechize, William Dyer, Mr. Moody’s Book, Thomas Hooker’s Doubting Christian, New England Psalm Book, Mr. Adam’s Sermon, bound books of Mr. Fitch and John Rogers, and The Day of Doom.”

Simon married **Sarah Clark** (8th Great-Grandmother; 1633-1721) at Saybrook in 1653. She was the daughter of **John** or **Joseph Clark** (9th Great-Grandfather; about 1600-1678) of Windsor and later Saybrook, Connecticut.

Simon and Sarah were the parents of ten children, including **Simon Huntington** (7th Great-Granduncle; 1659-1736) and **Joseph Huntington** (7th Great-Grandfather; 1661-1747). (The Huntington Family, pages 17-19)



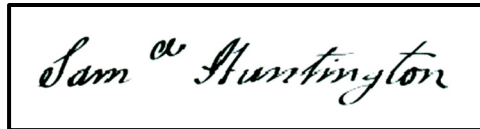
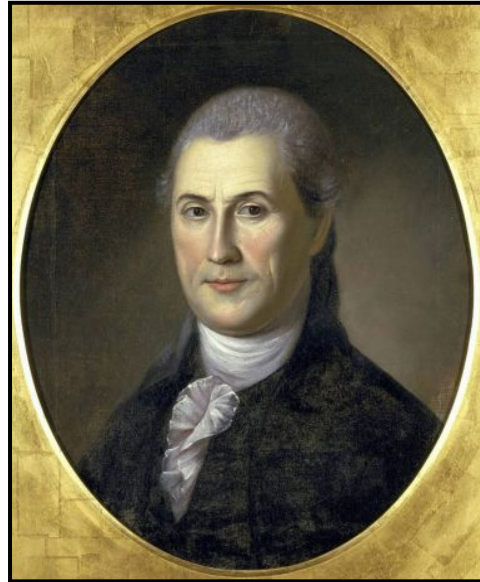
Above: Gravestone of Joseph Huntington (7th Great-Grandfather; 1661-1747) in Windham, Connecticut. He was a founder of Windham.

Haunted Inn from 1689 is Still Standing

Deacon **Simon Huntington** (7th Great-Granduncle; 1659-1736) was born in Saybrook, Connecticut, and moved with his family to Norwich in 1660. In 1696 he succeeded his father as deacon to the church and served capably in many of the most important offices in Norwich.

In the 1690s, Simon built his home off the village green in Norwich. In 1706 he opened his home as a tavern. Today the red house stands in excellent condition in Old Town Norwich on 2 Elm Avenue, Norwich, Connecticut, 06360. I met the current owner of the home, Patty Bell, in April 1999. She was very friendly and gave my brother Ron and me a tour of her home. When we were about to leave Mrs. Bell, a mother of four sons, said, “Do you know that the house is haunted?” She then told us about two experiences that she had personally and one that her husband had. One day, while she was alone in her home, she heard the footsteps of someone walking down the hallway on the second floor. She said it sounded like someone was walking up and down with heavy boots on. When she went upstairs there was no one there. Later one morning, her husband was looking in the mirror tying on his tie, when he saw someone standing behind him, pretending to be tying on his

tie as well. He turned around to see who it was, but there was no one there. The last experience happened during the evening. Mrs. Bell saw a light ascending the stairs as if



someone was walking upstairs and carrying a candlestick. She saw the light, but she did not see any person or candlestick. That was four years ago (1995) and since then no one in the family has had any extraordinary experiences. (The Huntington Family, pages 19-22)

A Founder of Windham, Connecticut

In 1692 **Joseph Huntington** (7th Great-Grandfather; 1661-1747) moved from Norwich, Connecticut, to Windham, Connecticut, to become one of the founders of that town. He married **Rebecca Adgate** (7th Great-Grandmother; 1666-1748), the daughter of **Thomas Adgate** (8th Great-Grandfather) and **Marie Marvin** (8th Great-Grandmother), and lived the rest of his life in Windham. See his gravestone on the previous page. (The Huntington Family, pages 27-28)

A Signer of the Declaration of Independence

Nathaniel Huntington (6th Great-Granduncle; 1691-1767) was the father of Samuel Huntington (1731-1796), a signer of the Declaration of Independence. In *Connecticut*

Above: Portrait of Samuel Huntington (1731-1796; son of Nathaniel Huntington, 6th Great-Granduncle) in 1783, when he was fifty-two years old. Top left: Home of Nathaniel Huntington (6th Great-Granduncle; 1691-1767) in Scotland, Connecticut, in May 2011. Samuel Huntington was born here in 1731. Left: Home of Samuel Huntington in Norwich, Connecticut that he built in 1783 and where he died in 1796. He served as Chief Justice of Connecticut, Governor, Delegate to the Continental Congress, and a Signer of the Declaration of Independence and the Articles of Confederation. He was elected President of the Second Continental Congress, from 1779-1781. He was one the great men of his time.

History and Culture, page 105, published 1986, is a biography that summarizes some



of Samuel Huntington's accomplishments: "Born into a moderately prosperous Puritan family, Samuel Huntington undoubtedly grew up working on the family farm. A self-taught youth, he was encouraged by the local minister, the Reverend Ebenezer Devotion (1714-1771), whose daughter Martha he later married, to use his library. Although nothing is known about

Samuel Huntington (1731-1796; son of Nathaniel Huntington, 6th Great-Granduncle) was a Signer of the Declaration of Independence in 1776, and was elected President of the Second Continental Congress, from 1779-1781. Only John Hancock served longer as president. The Pennsylvania State House (later known as Independence Hall) became the principal meeting place of the Second Continental Congress from 1775 to 1783. Top: The State House as it appeared in 1752, which shows the original bell tower. Middle: Independence Hall in 1799 without its wooden steeple, which was removed in 1781. A new steeple was not added again until 1828. Left: Assembly Room. Samuel Huntington would have sat in the center chair.

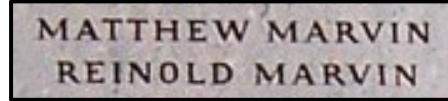
his legal training, he was admitted to the bar in March 1754, at first practicing in Windham, but soon moving to the larger and wealthier

town of Norwich with its more numerous economic and political opportunities."

"His law practice and reputation grew rapidly, both inside and outside Connecticut, and bore fruit in his being elected to important town and colony offices: the town's chief attorney; town tax collector; town-meeting moderator; justice of the peace; and in

1773 appointment to the superior court, the colony's highest court. In 1776 came other great honors—election to the small upper house of the General Assembly, having already served briefly as a deputy and appointment to the Council of Safety.”

“A man of cautious, reticent, and conservative temperament, he nevertheless joined the Sons of Liberty in opposition to the Stamp Act, although he was hesitant about further strong protest. The passage of the Coercive Acts in 1774 to protest the Boston Tea Party brought many moderates, including Huntington, into a more active role. Throughout the Revolution he served both in Congress and the Connecticut upper house. On July 4, 1776, he was one of Connecticut's signers of the Declaration of Independence.”



Above: The names of Matthew Marvin (9th Great-Grandfather; 1600-1678) and his brother (Reinold Marvin; 1594-1662) on the Founder's Monument in downtown Hartford, Connecticut.

“The esteem with which Congress held him was evidenced by his election in September 1779 to the first of two terms as president of the Continental Congress. While he was president in 1781, the Articles of Confederation went into effect, thus making him the first president of the United States. He served in this office during a dark period of severe economic problems and terrible military defeats, including the loss of Charleston, South Carolina.”

“In 1784 he was elected Connecticut's lieutenant governor, automatically becoming chief judge of the superior court, and in 1786 he became governor. He proved to be an extremely popular governor, winning each election until his death in 1796, with his chief concern being the economic and political welfare of the people. While serving as Connecticut's chief executive, he firmly advocated the ratification of the new Federal Constitution.”

“Aware of the need to diversify Connecticut's economy, he laid the foundations of Connecticut's future industrial expansion by espousing development of ‘useful Manufactures.’ The first manufacturing company to be incorporated in the United States was a silk manufacturing company in Mansfield in 1789. He labored actively for improvement of schools and roads, a more humane legal system, and fiscal reform.”

“He advocated toleration of all religious sects and the abolition of slavery. During his governorship, what is now the Old State House, was authorized and built. A modest, industrious, independent-minded, and pious man throughout his distinguished career, he exemplified the ideal of the Puritan magistrate dedicated to the betterment of society.” (Note: Samuel Huntington adopted and raised Samuel Huntington, the son of his brother, Rev. Joseph Huntington. Samuel later became Governor of Ohio.) (The Huntington Family, pages 29-33)

English Home is Still Standing; a Founder of Hartford and Norwalk, Connecticut

Matthew Marvin (9th Great-Grandfather; 1600-1678) was baptized in St. Mary's Church in Great Bentley, Essex County, England, on March 26, 1600. He was an officer of St. Mary's Church, wealthy, and owned his father's mansion, now called, *Eden's Farm* and other properties. Matthew sailed out of the port of London on the *Increase*, arriving in

America on April 15, 1635. He was one of the founders of Hartford, Connecticut, and his name is on the Founder's Monument in Rev. Thomas Hooker's church cemetery in



downtown Hartford. He resided on the corner of Village (now Pleasant) and Front Street on the lot facing east. After the death of his first wife, **Elizabeth** (9th Great-Grandmother; c. 1604-1645), he married Mrs. Alice Bouton of Hartford about 1646 and had three more children. Later, he moved to Norwalk, Connecticut, where he became, with his oldest son, one of the founders, and died a wealthy man. Matthew was the progenitor of half of the Marvin families in Connecticut. (The Huntington Family, pages 36-40)

Left: Sarah Martin (10th Great-Granddaughter of Matthew Marvin) inside St. Mary's Church in Great Bentley, England, in 1997. Above right: Front and back views of the home of Matthew Marvin (9th Great-Grandfather) and Edward Marvin (10th Great-Grandfather), known as *Eden's Farm* in Great Bentley, England; 1997. This was also the home of Mary Marvin (8th Great-Grandmother) until her sixth birthday.

Another Founder of Hartford, Connecticut

Thomas Selden (1617-1655; son of John Selden, 10th Great-Granduncle) was born March 17, 1617, in Wadhurst, East Sussex, England, and died December 19, 1655, in Hartford, Connecticut; buried in Ancient Burying Ground in Hartford, Connecticut. He married Hester Wakeman (1617-1693) Wakeman and was an early member of the First Church of Hartford, Connecticut. His name is on the Founders Monument of Hartford as an original proprietor. He was a freeman in April 1640 and constable in 1650. His will dated August 14, 1655, names his wife, Hister, his 'brother Mr. John Wakeman'

and his ‘Cousin **Thomas Hosmer.**’ Inventory was taken December 19, 1655, which totaled 292 pounds, 3 shillings, 4 pence.” (*Families of Early Hartford, Connecticut*, page 500.)



Above: Church of St. Mary in Ticehurst, Sussex, England, where William Selden (1548-1621) and Mary Appes (1552-1617) (11th Great-Grandparents) were married in 1612. Top right: The church of St. Peter in Upper Beeding, Sussex County, England, where William Selkeden (12th Great-Grandfather) was buried in the churchyard on October 4, 1551. His parents, William (died 1549) and Alice (died 1551) Selkeden (13th Great-Grandparents), were also buried here. Several generations of the Selden/Selkenden family lived in Upper Beeding. Right: Ecclesden Manor in Sussex County, where John de Selkeden (possible 23rd Great-Grandfather; 1210-1308) was born.



Thomas Selden’s grandparents were **William Selden III** (11th Great-Grandfather; born 1548 in Upper Beeding, West Sussex, England; died December 1621 in Wadhurst, Sussex County, England) and **Mary Appes** (11th Great-Grandmother; born 1552; died October 1617 in Wadhurst), who married on November 24, 1612, in St. Mary’s Church in Ticehurst, East Sussex, England. Both were buried in the churchyard of St. Peter and St. Paul Church in Wadhurst.

William Sheldon III was the son of **William Selden II** (12th Great-Grandfather; born 1512 in Sussex County, England; died 1551 in Upper Beeding, West Sussex, England) and **Alice Marian Bachelor** (12th Great-Grandmother; born 1518 in Upper Beeding; died 1572 in Hammerden, Sussex, England). William Sheldon II was the son of **William Selden/Selkenden** (13th Great-Grandfather; born 1485 in Sele Priory, Upper Beeding, Sussex, England; died April 1549 in Sussex County, England; he married **Alice** (1490-April 1551). William Selkenden was the son of **William Selkeden** (14th Great-Grandfather; born 1455

in Upper Beeding, Sussex, England, where he also died, date unknown; he married **Agnes**, who was born in 1463). William Selkeden was the son of **Thomas Selkeden** (15th Great-Grandfather; born in Sussex County, England; married unknown). Thomas Selkeden was the son of **Mr. Selkeden** (16th Great-Grandfather; born 1405 in Sussex County, England, where he also died). Mr. Selkeden was the son of **Richard Atte Selkeden** (17th Great-Grandfather; born 1380), who was the son of **John de Selkeden** (18th Great-Grandfather; born 1350), who was the son of **Robert de Selkeden** (19th Great-Grandfather; born 1320), who was the son of **William de Selkeden** (20th Great-Grandfather; born 1290), who was the son of **Richard de Selkeden** (21st Great-Grandfather; born 1260), who was the son of **William de Selkeden** (22nd Great-Grandfather; born 1235), who was the son of **John de Selkeden** (23rd Great-Grandfather; born 1210 in Ecclesden Manor, Sussex County, England; died 1308 in Sussex County, England). Virtually every generation was born in Sussex County, England, and died there. (Note: The ancestry of William Sheldon III is probably correct, but has not been confirmed by the compiler.) (The Buckingham Family, page 160)

Had a Fight in the Church

Edward Marvin (10th Great-Grandfather; about 1550-1615) was a man of substance who lived in the mansion house he named *Edons*, alias *Dreybacks*, located in Great Bentley, Essex County, England. The house, now known as *Eden's Farm*, is still standing in good repair, though showing evidence of various changes since Edward lived there. "It is unusual to locate the English ancestry of the first settlers in America and still more difficult and exceptional to be able to identify the very homestead where they lived, as in this case" (*New England Families*, page 1261).

Apart from his land in Great Bentley, Edward also owned several properties in Ramsey, Wrabness, Wix and Frating Green, England, some of which he conveyed to his sons before his death.

There is an interesting account of a conflict that Edward had with a fellow parishioner over who was the rightful occupant of a particular pew. "Parishioners had their own pews and this occasioned a clash between John Mercaunt and Edward Marvin in 1596."

"According to the churchwardens, Mercaunt 'crowded' Marvin out of his seat, and 'truly we think they were both in fault.' Marvin, in fact, deposed that 'sitting in his usual seat, Mercaunt did pull him by the shoulders, and he, intending to continue in his seat, did resist as far as he could.' Mercaunt for his part, admitted 'shouldering Marvin from a seat of old belonging to his father's house.'"

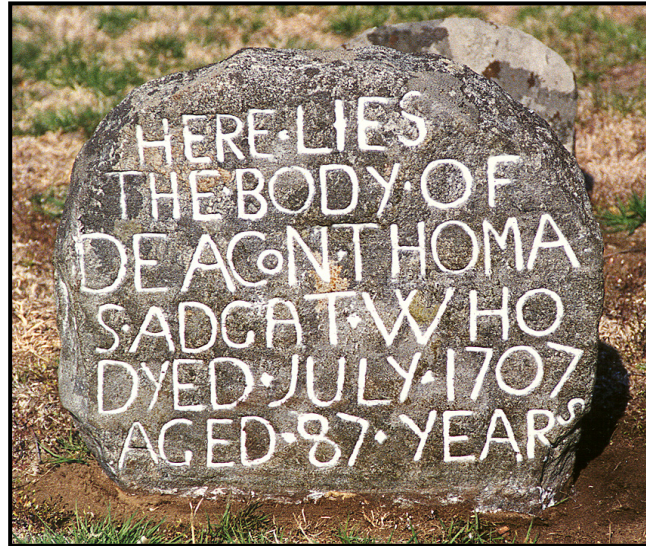
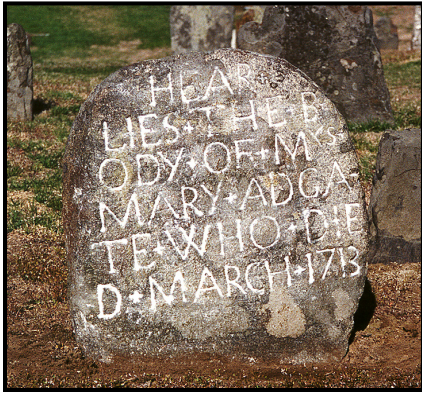
"In 1604 the churchwardens themselves complained of the seating difficulties in the church stating, 'the people sit confusedly without order, the youth prevent the married people of their seats'" (*The Parish Church of St. Mary the Virgin, Great Bentley, Essex*, pages 10-11, by Ian Doolittle, revised 1995).

Edward and his wife, **Margaret** (10th Great-Grandmother; c. 1559-1633), were the parents of eleven children, including Reinold Marvin (chr. 1594-1662) and **Matthew Marvin** (chr. 1600-1678). All of their children were born in Great Bentley, England, and baptized in St.

Mary’s Church. Edward and Margaret were buried in St. Mary’s Churchyard in Great Bentley, England. Their gravestones no longer exist. (The Huntington Family, pages 41-43)

Founders of Norwich, Connecticut

“The name of **Thomas Adgate** (8th Great-Grandfather; 1620-1707) appears among those

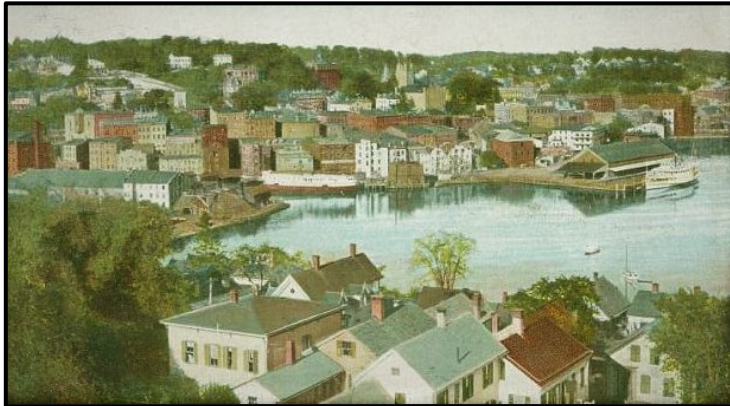


to whom land was granted at Saybrook, Connecticut, in 1650. He was active in the formation of the First Church in 1646 and was one of its Deacons. His wife died in 1657, and she lies in an unmarked grave in the Old Cemetery. He married in 1659,

Top: Gravestones of Thomas Adgate (1620-1707) and his wife, Mary Marvin Adgate (1628-1713) (8th Great-Grandparents), in Old Norwichtown Cemetery. Thomas’ gravestone is the second oldest in Norwich, Connecticut. The inscription on Mary’s monument reads: “HEAR+ / LIES+ THE+B / ODY +OF+MRS+ / MARY+ ADGA- / TE+WHO+ DIE / D+MARCH+1713.” Mary was baptized in St. Mary’s Church, Great Bentley, England. Above left: Ten of the men listed on the Founder’s Monument in Norwich, Above right: Gravestone of Deacon Christopher Huntington Jr. (1660-1735; son of Christopher Huntington, 8th Great-Granduncle): “HERE LYES INTERR'D Ye REMAINS / OF DEACON CHRISTOPHER HUNTING / TON OF NORWICH BORN NOV / BER Ye 1 1660 & FIRST BORN / OF MALES IN Ye TOWN HE SERVED / NEAR 40 YEARS IN Ye OFFICE / OF A DEACON & DIED APRRILL Ye / 24 1735 IN Ye 75 Yr OF HIS AGE / MEMENTO MORI.”

Mrs. Mary Marvin Bushnell (8th Great-Grandmother; 1628-1713), widow of Richard

Bushnell of Saybrook. In 1660, with his family, consisting of his two daughters by his first marriage, Elizabeth and Hannah, and his second wife's two sons, Joseph and Richard, he



Top: Leffingwell Inn (built circa 1675) located on 348 Washington Street in Norwich, Connecticut, in 2012. This was the home of Mary Bushnell (7th Great-Grandaunt; 1653-1745), wife of Thomas Leffingwell (1649-1723), who purchased it in 1700 and made it an inn the following year. He was the son of Lt. Thomas Leffingwell, 1624-1714, “who, answering the urgent call for help from Uncas and his small band of Mohegans, brought them supplies by canoe, thus raising the siege. For this service Uncas gave Leffingwell a deed for most of Norwich.” Above: 1906 postcard, showing the harbor of Norwich, Connecticut.

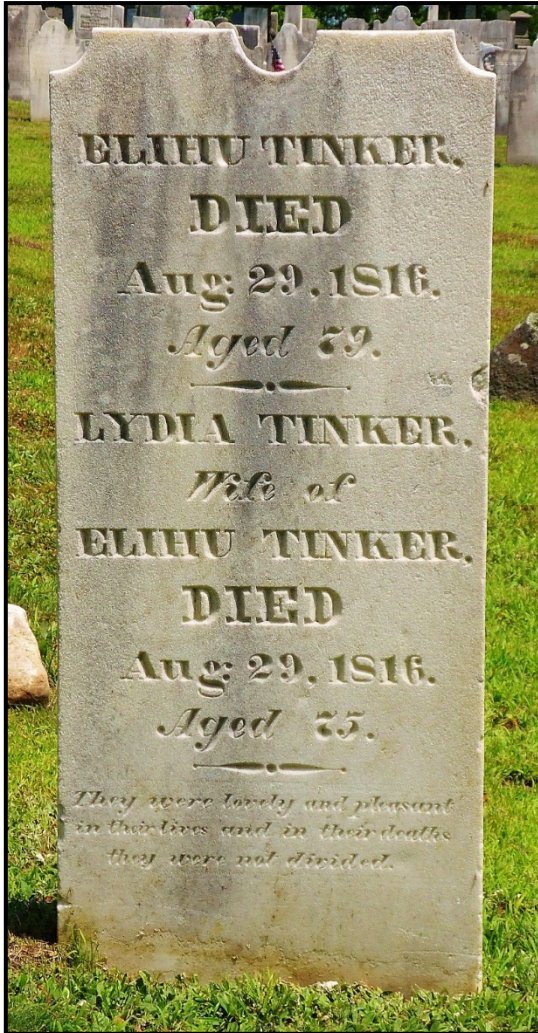
proprietors of Norwich, he married Ruth Rockwell, daughter of William Rockwell, on Oct. 7, 1652, in Windsor. They removed to Saybrook in the spring of 1654. In the spring of 1660, with a company of Saybrook residents including his brother **Simon**, they organized a church in the valley of the Yantie under the care of Rev. James Fitch and laid a foundation for the new town of Norwich, being one of twelve patentees of the new town. His home lot was on Washington St. corner of East Towne Street.” He has no gravestone. His son, Christopher Huntington (1660-1735), was the first white male born in Norwich, Connecticut (according to the inscription on his monument; see photograph on the previous page).

moved to Norwich. Deacon Adgate was one of the original proprietors of Norwich. In Norwich Thomas had four more children: Abigail (1661-1711), Sarah (1664-1705/1706), who married Christopher Huntington, the first white child born in Norwich; **Rebecca** (1666-1748), who married **Joseph Huntington** (ancestor of Governor Samuel Huntington, Signer of the Declaration of Independence) and Thomas Adgate, Jr. (1670-1760)” (*Glimpses of Saybrook In Colonial Days*, page 43, by Harriet Chapman Chesebrough).

Deacon Thomas Adgate and Mary were buried in Old Norwichtown Cemetery. The inscription on his gravestone reads: “HERE LIES / THE BODY OF / DEACON THOMAS ADGAT WHO / DYED JULY 1707 / AGED 87 YEARS.” Mary’s inscription reads: “HEAR / LIES THE BODY OF MRS / MARY ADGA / TE WHO DIE / D MARCH 1713.”

Christopher Huntington (8th Great-Granduncle) was also “one of the 35 original

It is interesting to note that among the prominent descendants of Simon Huntington (8th Great-Grandfather) is Franklin D. Roosevelt, 32nd President of the United States.



Above: Gravestone of Solomon Huntington (6th Great-Grandfather; 1700-1752) in Windham, Connecticut. The inscription reads: “Beneath this Monument Lies / Interred, the Body of ye prominent / & well Beloved & Godly / Man Mr. Solomon Hunting / ton, Whose Light so Shone / that others had Occation to / Glorify God & when Death / ye King of Terrors Erected him / he Apeared ye Prince of peace. / He Called his Family together / Counceld them, gave them up / to God, And resigned his Mor / tal Life to God that gave it / in Strong Faith. Apr. 30th 1752. Age 52.” Left: Monument of Elihu Tinker (1741-1816) and Lydia Huntington Tinker (1744-1816) (5th Great-Grandparents) in Worthington Cemetery in Worthington, Massachusetts. Photograph by James Bianco. They had moved to Worthington in the late 1790s, and died on the same day, August 29, 1816, of natural causes.

Lt. Francis Griswold (9th Great-Grandfather; 1629-1671), as noted earlier, was also a founder of Norwich. He died on October 1, 1671, at the age of 41 or 42 “of a sudden attack of disease,” leaving a young family.

Sergeant/Lieutenant Thomas Leffingwell (1624-1714), another founder of Norwich, was the father-in-law of **Mary Bushnell** (7th Great-Grandaunt; 1653-1745), who married his son, Ensign Thomas Leffingwell (1649-1723). He owned what became the Leffingwell Inn (built circa 1675) in 1701, which is located on 348 Washington Street in Norwich, Connecticut. Now painted in an attractive red color, it is one of the most prominent historical buildings in eastern Connecticut. (The Huntington Family, page 23)

On His Death Bed He Called His Family Together and Counseled Them

Solomon Huntington (6th Great-Grandfather; 1700-1752) moved from Windham, Con-



necticut, to Saybrook, Connecticut, where his wife, **Mary Buckingham** (6th Great-Grandmother; 1705-1778), had been born and raised. Between 1728 and 1744, they had eight children, all born in Saybrook, including **Lydia Huntington** (5th Great-Grandmother; 1744-1816). Later, Solomon and his family may have returned to Windham. They were both buried in Windham Cemetery. The inscription on Solomon's gravestone reads that on his death bed, "He Called his Family together / Counceld them, gave them up / to God, And resigned his Mor / tal Life to God that gave it / in Strong Faith." (The Huntington Family, pages 45-46)

Left: I'm standing behind the gravestone of Deacon Christopher Huntington Jr. (1660-1735), the son of my 8th Great-Granduncle, Christopher Huntington (see earlier), with my son, Jonathan Martin. Above: Jonathan, age 13, with his sister, Sarah, age 10, and baby Rebecca, age 4 months, in Windham, Connecticut, next to the gravestone of their 7th Great-Grandfather, Solomon Huntington (1700-1752; see previous page for monument), in November 1995. These are special photographs to me because it was one of the few occasions that my children accompanied me on a genealogical trip.

Died on the Same Day

In 1766 **Lydia Huntington** (5th Great-Grandmother; 1744-1816) married **Elihu Tinker** (5th Great-Grandfather; 1741-1816) in Windham, Connecticut. When the Revolutionary War began, Elihu enlisted as a private in a Massachusetts company. (D.A.R. Number 401555. My grandmother, Frances Massey Bowles was approved as a member of the "National Society of the Daughters of the American Revolution...by virtue of her descent from Elihu Tinker" on June 7, 1951.) Lydia and Elihu moved in the late 1790s to Worthington, Massachusetts, where they both died on August 29, 1816, and are buried under the same gravestone.

Lydia and Elihu were the parents of twelve children, all born in Windham, Connecticut, including **Ralph Tinker** (4th Great-Grandfather; 1781-1856). (The Huntington Family, pages 46-47)

Among the First to Settle in Virginia

Christopher Branch (11th Great-Grandfather; circa 1600-1681) “was an early English settler in Colonial Virginia, tobacco planter, and a member and justice of the House of Burgesses. He was a three times great-grandfather of United States President Thomas Jefferson.”

“Branch was born in England around 1600 or 1602. His parents were **Lionel Branch** and **Valentia Sparks** of London. He married **Mary Francis Addie**, daughter of **Francis Addie** of Darton, Yorkshire, on September 2, 1619 in St. Peter’s, Westcheap, London.”

“Christopher and Mary Branch sailed to Virginia on the *London Merchant* in March 1621 and survived the Powhatan attack of 1622 the following year. They were living at Colledge Land in Henrico by February 1623 when their son Thomas was nine months old. According to the *William and Mary Quarterly*, Thomas was born in 1623. They then had two more sons. William was born in 1625 and **Christopher** (10th Great-Grandfather) was born about 1627. His granddaughter **Mary** (9th Great-Grandmother) became the great-grandmother of President Thomas Jefferson, making him the three times great-grandfather of the president.”

“Branch acquired land in Henrico (now Chesterfield) County near Potter’s Creek beginning in or before 1634 and established the Kingsland and Arrahattock Plantations. Randolph first settled at Arrahattock on the north side of the James River. The Kingsland Plantation, which grew to 450 acres by 1639, was located across the river from Arrahattock. (Remnants of Kingsland Plantation can be seen from Kingsland Road, which runs from Highway 5 across old Kingsland plantation to the James.) Branch operated a tobacco plantation and due to a glut in the market, a limit of the tobacco crop to a percentage per planter was established by the Virginia General Assembly. The remainder of the tobacco crop was to be destroyed.”

“In 1639 he was a member of the House of Burgesses from Henrico County and was named a tobacco inspector that year. He was a member of the House of Burgesses again in 1641. In 1656, he was the Justice of Henrico County. He died in 1681 while living on the Kingsland Plantation. His wife, Mary, died many years earlier, likely before 1630.” (Wikipedia) (The Jefferson Family, page 52)

A Mayor and Master of the Fraternity of the Holy Cross

William Branch (13th Great-Grandfather; after 1524-1602) was a draper by trade. He served as mayor of Abingdon, England, for four terms, and master and governor of Christ’s Hospital. William lived on Littlebury Lane, which was shortened to “The Bury,” but is now called High Street.

Richard Branch (Braunche) (14th Great-Grandfather; about 1496-1544) was a man of



Top: Two views of Abingdon, England, and St. Helen's Church from the Thames River in 2005. For at least four generations, members of the Branch family were prominent citizens of Abingdon and attended St. Helen's Church. Above, first left, and middle right: 46 West St. Helen's Street, the home of John Branch (16th Great-Grandfather) in 1440. His son John Branch (15th Great-Grandfather) later sold the home. Richard Branch (14th Great-Grandfather) was born here. The family later moved to High Street, a couple of blocks away. Right: An old bridge that crosses the Thames River at Abingdon.



wealth and prominence. By trade he was a woolen draper. He was Master of the Fraternity of the Holy Cross for forty-four consecutive years. He and his three wives are buried on Katherine's Aisle in St. Helen's Church in Abingdon, England. He lived on Littlebury Lane in Abingdon and left his last wife three houses on the east side of St. Helen's Street. Richard left a will dated May 27, 1544.

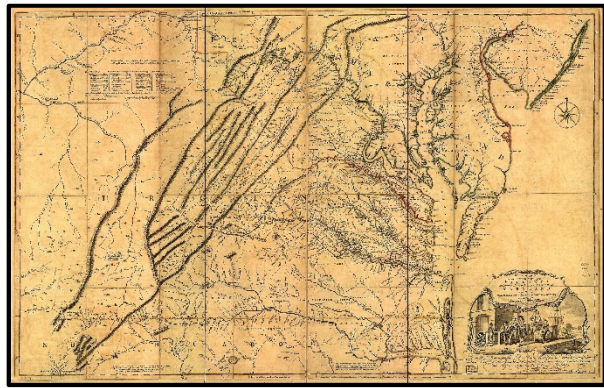
John Branch (Braunche) (15th Great-Grandfather) was a carpenter of Abingdon. He sold the home that he had lived in and his father before him since 1440. He and his mother, Avice, gave an annual sum to the Fraternity of the Holy Cross "for the souls of parents and all departed faithful." John married Margaret Edwards and died after 1521.

John Branch (Braunche) (16th Great-Grandfather) and his wife, **Avise**, “were the first of the Branch family on record in Abingdon, where they bought a small piece of land in 1437 and a year later a house in which the family lived for almost a century. The next three generations rose quickly in affluence and importance and were closely identified with the Fraternity of the Holy Cross of which Richard Branch, John’s grandson, was among the twelve masters.” Their home was located at 46 West Street, now called 46 West St. Helen’s Street. John Branch died about 1488, and Avise died about 1490. (The Jefferson Family, pages 3-12)



Father of Thomas Jefferson

Peter Jefferson (7th Great-Granduncle; 1708-1757). “Colonel Peter Jefferson had only the advantages of private schools, but he subsequently made up the deficiency by study and reading. He started business as a surveyor, and it was probably in this capacity that he first became acquainted with the Randolph family. He removed to Goochland County and was appointed one of the magistrates in 1731. In 1735 he patented 1,000 acres on the south side of the Rivanna River between Monticello and the Henderson land above Milton. Desiring a more eligible seat for his home he bought from his friend, William Randolph of ‘Tuckahoe,’ the further tract of 400 acres, the consideration paid being, ‘Henry Wetherburn’s biggest bowl of arrack punch’ (arrack punch is a mixture of fruit juices and rum). Henry Wetherburn kept the Raleigh Tavern in Williamsburg, and the consideration was doubtless suggested by the many merry moments spent by both in the home of the genial tavern keeper. On this tract call *Shadwell*, Peter Jefferson built his home and here he lived the balance of his days, except seven years which he spent at *Tuckahoe*.” (*Tuckahoe* is located just across the border from Henrico County in Goochland County, Virginia, off the River Road on the north side of the James River.) “When Albemarle County was formed from Goochland in 1744, his property fell within it, and Peter was appointed a member of the first county court. On May 8, 1745, he qualified as colonel of the county militia and in 1755 was appointed county lieutenant. In August 1754 he was elected a delegate to succeed



Top: The southern wing of the Tuckahoe Plantation. Peter Jefferson (7th Great-Granduncle; 1708-1757) lived with his family here from 1745 to 1752. Above: The “Fry-Jefferson Map” of 1751, which was created by Peter Jefferson and Joshua Fry. “It accurately depicted the Allegheny Mountains for the first time and showed the route of ‘The Great Road from the Yadkin River through Virginia to Philadelphia distance 455 Miles,’ which would later come to be known as the Great Wagon Road.”

Colonel Joshua Fry in the House of Burgesses and was present at the sessions of August 1754, May 1755, August 1755 and October 1755.”

“From about 1745 until 1752, Peter lived at Tuckahoe, having the care of William Randolph’s son.”



Above: Portrait of President Thomas Jefferson (1743-1826; son of Peter Jefferson, 7th Great-Granduncle—he was also the grandson of Jane Rogers, 5th Great-Grandaunt, making him close to a 6th Great-Granduncle by blood), who is considered by most historians as one of the greatest of the Founding Fathers of the United States. His life has benefited billions of people over the entire world for generations.

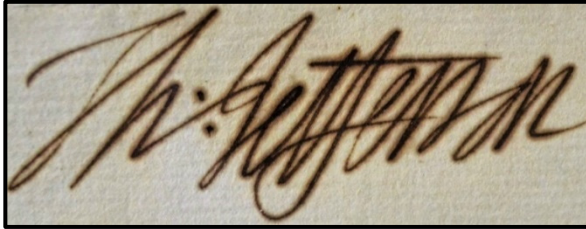
“He married Jane, daughter of Isham Randolph of *Dungenness* in Goochland County in 1739” and they had eleven children: Jane Jefferson (1740-1765), Mary Jefferson (born 1741), Thomas Jefferson (1743-1826), Elizabeth Jefferson (1744-1773), Martha Jefferson, Peter Field Jefferson (1748-1748), a son (born 1750), Lucy Jefferson (born 1752), Anna Scott Jefferson (born 1755) and Randolph Jefferson (born 1755), twin to Anna.”

“Peter’s most important work was when he ran the boundary line between Virginia and North Carolina, from Peter’s Creek to Steep Rock Creek, a distance of about ninety miles, with Colonel Joshua Fry in 1749. Later, Peter and Fry made a well-known map of Virginia, in 1751. They suffered many hardships, crossed rivers and swamps, slept in trees, and had to live on raw meat for a time. For their services Peter and Fry were awarded three hundred pounds sterling besides expenses. In spite of his above average strength, Peter died in Albemarle County, Virginia, when he was only forty-nine years old in 1757.”

“Peter had become a man of substantial property. The inventory of his estate showed that he owned 7,500 acres, many cattle, and two hundred hogs.”

Peter’s third oldest child, Thomas Jefferson, who was named after his grandfather, was the author of the Declaration of Independence and became the third President of the United States. He was born at *Shadwell*, in Albemarle County, Virginia, on April 2, 1743, and died July 4, 1826, at *Monticello*, his residence, to which he removed after the burning of *Shad-*

well. He was one of the most important individuals to have ever lived, and his work has positively affected the lives of billions of people. (The Jefferson Family, pages 63-65)



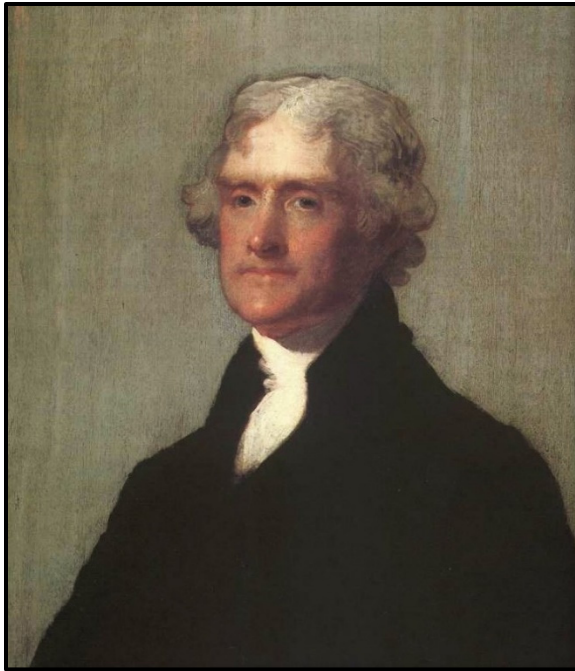

Author of the Declaration of Independence

Thomas Jefferson (born April 13 [O.S. April 2] 1743; died July 4, 1826; son of Peter Jefferson, 7th Great-Granduncle—special note: Thomas

Jefferson is also the grandson of Jane Rogers, the compiler's 5th Great-Grandaunt) "was an American Founding Father who was the principal author of the Declaration of Independence and later served as the third President of the United States from 1801 to 1809. Previously, he was elected the second Vice President of the United States, serving under John Adams from 1797 to 1801. A proponent of democracy, republicanism, and individual rights motivating American colonists to break from Great Britain and form a new nation, he produced formative documents and decisions at both the state and national level."

Above: Statue of six-foot-tall, Thomas Jefferson (1743-1826; son of Peter Jefferson, 7th Great-Granduncle) at the Monticello Visitor's Center. (I stood next to his statue in May 2014, and we were the same height.) Left: Portrait of Thomas Jefferson in 1788 by John Trumbull. Top left: Signature of Thomas Jefferson as Secretary of State under George Washington in 1791.

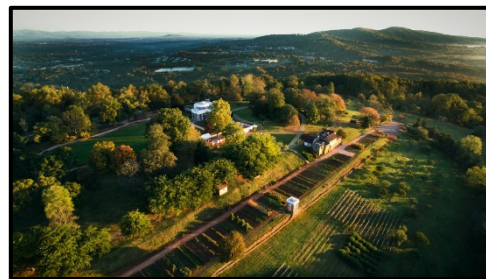
“Jefferson was primarily of English ancestry, born and educated in colonial Virginia. He



Above: Portrait of Thomas Jefferson, painted by Rembrandt Peale during Jefferson's second term as president in 1805. Top right: I took this photograph of Jefferson's home at Monticello on a late Saturday afternoon in May 2014. Middle: I'm standing next to the famous mansion. Right: Interior of Jefferson's home. He loved architecture and spent years making changes and improving his home. Lower right: Ariel view of Monticello, which is located just outside Charlottesville, Virginia. It originally had 5,000 acres.

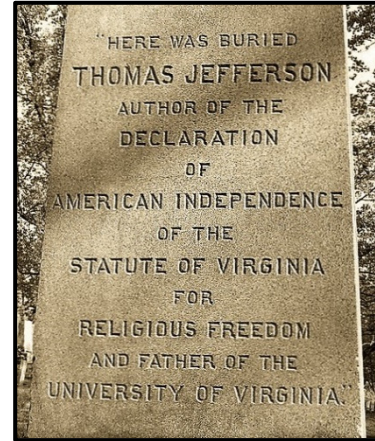


graduated from the College of William & Mary and briefly practiced law, at times defending slaves seeking their freedom. During the American Revolution, he represented Virginia in the Continental Congress that adopted the Declaration, drafted the law for religious freedom as a Virginia legislator, and served as a wartime governor (1779–1781). He became the United States Minister to France in May 1785, and subsequently the nation's first Secretary of State in 1790–1793 under President George Washington. Jefferson and James Madison organized the Democratic-Republican Party to oppose the Federalist Party during the formation of the First Party System. With Madison, he anonymously wrote the controversial Kentucky and Virginia Resolutions in 1798–1799, which sought to embolden states' rights in opposition to the national government by nullifying the Alien and Sedition Acts.”



“As President, Jefferson pursued the nation's shipping and trade interests against Barbary

pirates and aggressive British trade policies. He also organized the Louisiana Purchase, almost doubling the country’s territory. As a result of peace negotiations with France, his



Top left: Jefferson founded the University of Virginia in 1819 and designed its Rotunda. Highly successful, it produced 1,481 officers for the Confederate Army. **Middle:** View of Jefferson Memorial and Washington Monument from the Tidal Basin in Washington D.C. in March 2016. Photograph by Spienciak. **Left:** Mount Rushmore National Memorial in the Black Hills in Keystone, South Dakota, which features 60-foot sculptures of the heads of George Washington (1732–1799), Thomas Jefferson (1743–1826), Theodore Roosevelt (1858–1919), and Abraham Lincoln (1809–1865). Today it is an iconic symbol of the United States. **Top right:** Inscription on Jefferson’s monument, which he wrote himself. Interestingly, he didn’t include any of his political offices. **Above:** Jefferson and Monticello as depicted on the current Nickel.

administration reduced military forces. He was reelected in 1804. Jefferson’s second term was beset with difficulties at home, including the trial of former Vice President Aaron Burr. American foreign trade was diminished when Jefferson implemented the Embargo Act of 1807, responding to British threats to U.S. shipping. In 1803, Jefferson began a controversial process of Indian tribe removal to the newly organized Louisiana Territory, and he signed the Act Prohibiting Importation of Slaves in 1807.”

“Jefferson mastered many disciplines, which ranged from surveying and mathematics to

horticulture and mechanics. He was a proven architect in the classical tradition. Jefferson's keen interest in religion and philosophy earned him the presidency of the American Philosophical Society. He shunned organized religion but was influenced by both Christianity and deism. He was well versed in linguistics and spoke several languages. He founded the University of Virginia after retiring from public office. He was a prolific letter writer and corresponded with many prominent and important people throughout his adult life. His only full-length book is *Notes on the State of Virginia* (1785), considered the most important American book published before 1800."

"Jefferson owned several plantations which were worked by hundreds of slaves. Most historians now believe that, after the death of his wife in 1782, he had a relationship with his slave Sally Hemings and fathered at least one of her children. Historians have lauded Jefferson's public life, noting his primary authorship of the Declaration of Independence during the Revolutionary War, his advocacy of religious freedom and tolerance in Virginia, and the Louisiana Purchase while he was president. Various modern scholars are more critical of Jefferson's private life, pointing out the discrepancy between his ownership of slaves and his liberal political principles, for example. Presidential scholars, however, consistently rank Jefferson among the greatest presidents." (Wikipedia) (The Jefferson Family, pages 77-113)

Speaker of the Virginia House of Burgesses

Colonel Henry Soane (10th Great-Grandfather; about 1623-1661/1662) "was the founder of the Soane family in Virginia. Henry emigrated from England to Virginia by 1641, when he was granted 297 acres in James City County, Virginia. His land was located on the east side of the Chickahominy River and was known as *Hogg's Land*. In 1655, he was granted permission to employ two Indians."

"Henry continued to purchase large tracts of land. He purchased 400 acres on the Rapahannock River in 1652. By 1656 he owned 2,800 acres in New Kent County, Virginia. His main plantation was in James City County, where in 1656 he purchased 2,200 acres."

"His 2,800-acre plantation, *Mount Sterling*, on the Mattapony (in New Kent County), was home of the Soanes for 100 years. It was sold in 1771 to the Jerdones who built the present beautiful mansion in 1848. The old dependencies, still in use, are remnants of the Soane estate. Not far from Mount Sterling is Soane's Bridge across the Chickahominy, which has played a part in history and appears on Peter Jefferson's Map of Virginia, 1775."



Above: Seal of the Jamestown Society. For membership a person must be a descendant of a stockholder in the Virginia Company of London or a descendant of those who owned land or who had domiciles in Jamestown or on Jamestown Island prior to the year 1700. Descendants of Christopher Branch (11th Great-Grandfather; 1598/1602-1681) and Henry Soane (10th Great-Grandfather; circa 1623-1661/1662) qualify for membership.

“Henry represented James City County as Burgess from 1652 until 1655, 1658 and 1660. From 1660 until 1661, he was Speaker of the House. Henry died before the House of Burgesses reconvened on March 23, 1662.”

“Speaker Soane was apparently a friend and neighbor of Francis Morrison, for his daughter **Judith** was married ‘at the house of Col. Morrison on Decr the 12th 1661,’ to Henry Randolph (1623-1673) who had become clerk to the assembly in 1656. During Soane’s Speakership the assembly had ordered that ‘Colonel Francis Morrison and Henry Randolph, clerk of the assembly, review all the acts...and present a draft of them with such alterations and marked amendments as they shall find necessary to the next assembly, and that there be paid them for their pains fifteen thousand pounds of tobacco’” (*Speakers and Clerks of the Virginia House of Burgesses 1643-1776*, pages 61 and 62, by Jon Kukla).

Henry received tobacco worth 50 L (pounds) for having “faithfully performed the great trust imposed upon him and by that done a singular service to the country.”

His wife, **Judith** (10th Great-Grandmother; about 1626-after 1695), outlived her husband by many years and was still living in 1695.

Henry and Judith were the parents of five children: **Judith Soane** (1646), John Soane (about 1648), Elizabeth Soane (about 1650), William Soane (1652-1714) and Henry Soane (about 1654). Their three oldest children were born in England, but William and Henry were probably born in James City County, Virginia. (*Historical Southern Families*, Volume 5, pages 86-90, by John Boddie, published 1960.) Note: The author of *Speakers and Clerks of the Virginia House of Burgesses* list Henry Soane’s children in a different order.

In 1651 Henry sponsored the passages of his wife, Judith, and their three children, Judith, John and Elizabeth. (*Early Virginia Immigrants*, page 307, by George Greer.)

William Soane (9th Great-Granduncle; 1652-1714) was a Burgess from Henrico County, Virginia, in 1695. He was a large landowner. In 1698, he was granted 3,150 acres on the south side of Falling Creek. By 1704, he had acquired 3,841 acres of land in Henrico County.

Henry Soane, Jr. (9th Great-Granduncle; born about 1654) was captain of the militia of James City County. He was also a Burgess and a sheriff of Charles City County, Virginia. Henry “acquired large tracts of land in Virginia.”

Some genealogical sites state that Henry Soane was baptized November 17, 1622, in St. Nicolas, Brighton, Sussex County, England, and that he married **Judith** circa 1642/1643 in Lewes, Sussex, England. They state that his daughter, **Judith Soane** (9th Great-Grandmother), was probably born in Litlington, Sussex, England. If this is correct, then Henry Soane was the son of **Henry Soane** and **Elizabeth Worger**.

(It is believed by some researchers that **Judith’s**, 10th Great-Grandmother, surname was **Fuller** and that she was born about 1614 in Lewes, Sussex County, England, and died after

1695 in James City County, Virginia. Her daughter, **Judith Soane** (9th Great-Grandmother) married **Peter Field** (9th Great-Grandfather) in Charles City County on October 21, 1676. Good circumstantial evidence says that her daughter, **Elizabeth Soane** (9th



Above: William Byrd II (1674-1744) and his wife, Lucy Park (died 1715), brother and sister-in-law of Mary Elizabeth Byrd (1683-1721), who married James Duke I (son of Elizabeth Soane, 9th Great-Grandaunt). William was one of the richest men in Virginia and kept a fascinating, detailed, “secret” diary wherein he mentioned visiting his sister many times. Although obviously in love with his wife, he had many extramarital affairs, which he recorded. Below: Colonel William Byrd I (1652-1704), father of Mary Elizabeth Byrd.

Great-Grandaunt; 1651-1679), married Henry Duke about 1667 [see below].)

The popular modern-day actress, and academy award winner, Jennifer Lawrence, is an 11th Great-Granddaughter of Henry Soane. (Famouskin.com) Descendants of Henry Soane are eligible for membership in The Jamestown Society.

Elizabeth Soane (9th Great-Grandaunt; 1651-1679, daughter of Henry Soane, 10th Great-Grandfather) was born 1651 in James City County, Virginia, and died February 19, 1679, in James City County, Virginia. She married Col. Henry Duke, Esq. (1642-1714) in 1670 in James City County, Virginia, and had four known children, including **James Duke I**



(born 1677 in James City County, Virginia; died April 1751 in Charles City County, Virginia. James married Mary Elizabeth Byrd (born February 26, 1683, in Westover Plantation, Charles City County, Virginia; died 1721 in Charles City County, Virginia;

daughter of Col. William Evelyn Byrd I [born 1652 in London, London, England; died December 4, 1704, in Charles City, County, Virginia; buried in Westover Plantation; has tomb] and Mary Maria Horsmanden [born 1652 in Lenham, Kent, England; died November 9, 1699, Charles City County, Virginia; buried in Westover Plantation; has tomb]) in July 8, 1700 in Charles City County, Virginia, and had seven children).

Great-Grandmother of Thomas Jefferson

Judith Soane (9th Great-Grandmother) was born 1646 in possibly Littington, Sussex



County, England, and died 1703 in Henrico County, Virginia. She married first, Henry Randolph (1623-1673; see below), the first of the Randolphs to come to Virginia, on De-



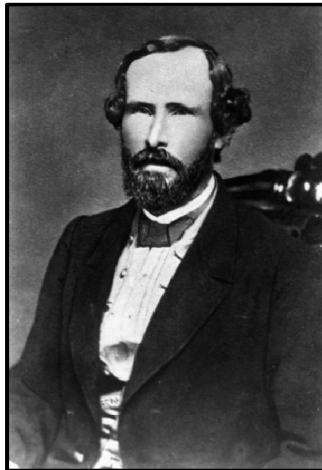
Left: Westover Plantation in Charles City County, Virginia. Mary Elizabeth Byrd, wife of James Duke I (son of Elizabeth Soane, 9th Great-Grand-aunt), was born at Westover Plantation on February 26, 1683. She was the daughter of Col. William Byrd I. Above: Portrait of William Randolph (1651-1711; nephew of Henry Randolph, first husband of Judith Soane, 9th Great-Grandmother), who with his wife, Mary Isham, were referred to as “the Adam and Eve of Virginia” because of their many prominent progeny and marital alliances. William was also a great-grandfather of President Thomas Jefferson.

ember 12, 1661, in Virginia and had three children: Martha Randolph, Henry Randolph (baptized January 16, 1665), and Judith Randolph (baptized in 1671).

“Henry Randolph was the half-brother to the poet Thomas Randolph, and uncle to William Randolph of Turkey Island. He immigrated to Virginia in 1642. His first office was Clerk of Henrico County, which he accepted in 1643 and held until 1669. He became Clerk of The House of Burgesses in 1660 and held the office until his death. In 1669, he made a visit to England but soon returned to Virginia and again resumed his colonial duties and died while in office in the year 1673. Henry Randolph had an extensive library which he probably brought from England. In an inventory of his son’s estate, it was found that he had over 200 volumes. Many of these came from his father. He died at his home Appomattox, Henrico County, Virginia, and was buried on his land.” (Find a Grave)

Judith married second, **Peter Field** (9th Great-Grandfather; 1647-1707), on October 21, 1678, in Charles City, Charles County, Virginia, and had two daughters: **Mary Field** (born

February 2, 1679, in Virginia; died August 13, 1715, in Henrico County, Virginia; married **Thomas Jefferson** [1678-1730]), and Martha Field (1681-1776). Judith and Peter Field



Left: George W. Randolph (1818-1867; son of Martha Jefferson, daughter of President Thomas Jefferson, son of Peter Jefferson, 7th Great-Granduncle). He was a brigadier general and Secretary of War for the Confederate States of America in 1862. **Above: George W. Randolph as depicted on the 1863 Confederate \$100 banknote in the lower right.**

were the great-grandparents of Thomas Jefferson, author of the Declaration of Independence. (The Jefferson Family, pages 35-36)

Image was on the Confederate \$100 Dollar Bill

George Wythe Randolph (1818-1867) “was Thomas Jefferson’s grandson, the youngest child of Martha Jefferson Randolph and Thomas Mann Randolph. ‘Geordie’ was born at Monticello and named for George Wythe, Jefferson’s law mentor.”

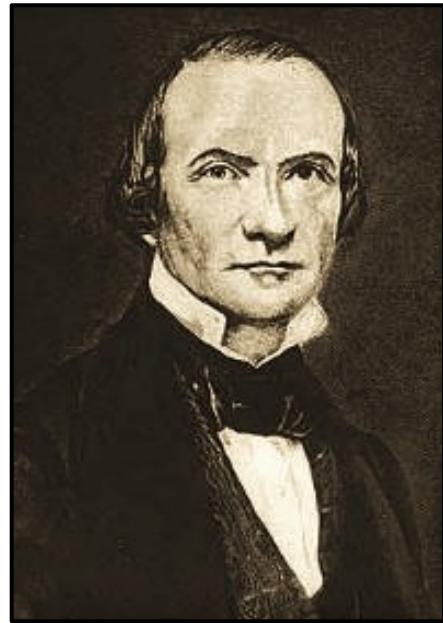
“From age eight, George was educated in Massachusetts, under the care of his sister Ellen Randolph Coolidge. He enlisted as a teenager in the United States Navy and served throughout the 1830s as a midshipman. Late in the decade, he entered the University of Virginia and in 1840 graduated with a Bachelor of Law degree. He practiced law in Albemarle County for ten years, before moving to Richmond in 1851. On April 20, 1852, Randolph married Mary Elizabeth Adams Pope, a wealthy widow, and took up residence in one of Richmond’s elite neighborhoods. The couple had no children.”

“Randolph maintained a successful law practice in Richmond and, assuming civic responsibility, became an officer of the Virginia Historical Society. In 1858, as national politics grew more and more heated, he took up a position on Richmond’s City Council. The following year, in response to John Brown’s raid at Harper’s Ferry, Randolph founded the

Richmond Howitzer Company. Subsequently, he was elected to the Virginia Convention of 1861 as a secessionist.”

“Commissioned a major in the Virginia militia, Randolph rose to the rank of Confederate Brigadier General. In March 1862, he was appointed third Confederate Secretary of War. Randolph soon thereafter found himself in constant conflict with Jefferson Davis. The poor working relationship, and his own ill health, led Randolph to resign on November 15, 1862.” (Thomas Jefferson Monticello)

“In 1864, Randolph ran the U.S. naval blockade and took his family to Europe, receiving medical treatment in England and southern France. He took the oath of allegiance to the United States on April 1866 in Pau, France. The Randolphs then returned to Virginia. Randolph died of tuberculosis on April 3, 1867, at Edgehill. He is buried at Monticello in the Jefferson family graveyard.” (Wikipedia) (The Jefferson Family, page 116)



Above: Francis Wayles Eppes (1801-1881; son of Mary “Maria” Jefferson, daughter of President Thomas Jefferson). He was the only surviving child of his mother, Maria Jefferson. Francis moved from Virginia to Tallahassee, Florida, where he served seven terms as mayor. He was the leader in creating what became Florida State University in Tallahassee. He had 13 children.

Chief Founder of Florida State University

Francis Wayles Eppes (September 20, 1801–May 10, 1881) “was the son of President Thomas Jefferson's daughter, Maria Jefferson Eppes, and John Wayles Eppes, former Senator from Virginia and member of Virginia House of Representatives. He was born in Eppington, Chesterfield County, Virginia. On November 28, 1822. At ‘Ashton,’ Albemarle County he married his first wife, Mary Elizabeth Cleland Randolph. She passed away April 15, 1835, near Tallahassee, Leon County, Florida.”

“Francis moved his family to Tallahassee, Florida, after his grandfather died. He was a planter and served several terms as intendant (mayor) of Tallahassee, Florida. He was very active in the Episcopal Church holding meetings at his home before a church was built. He was instrumental in creating FSU in Tallahassee, and there was a bronze statue of him on the grounds until it was removed in 2020 because he was a slaveholder. There is also a scholarship named for him. In 1996, the Jefferson-Eppes trophy was established to be awarded to the winner of the Florida State/University of Virginia football game. The trophy consists of a silver pitcher presented to Eppes in 1842 by the citizens of Tallahassee. It sits on a block of the ‘McGuffey Ash’ that was planted on the grounds of the University of Virginia in 1826—about the time of the opening of the University.”

“He was appointed justice of the peace in Leon County, Florida, on February 17, 1833.

On March 15, 1837, Francis remarried, a widow, Mrs. Susan Margaret Ware Crouch, daughter of Governor Nathaniel Ware of Georgia. He served seven terms as Mayor



of Tallahassee, and was involved in the founding of the Diocese of Florida and served as the Diocesan Secretary for many years. He had 13 children with two wives and is buried with his second wife in Greenwood Cemetery in Orlando, Florida. There is an Eppes-Shine plot in that cemetery.”

“In 1864 Eppes sold his plantation and invested the proceeds in the Confederate cause. After the Civil War he was in financial ruin. In 1869, he sold his Tallahassee home and all his belongings to pay off his debts and started a new life as a citrus grower. He moved his family to Orange County, Florida near Orlando. He was still active in the Episcopal church. He died in 1881 at ‘Pine Hill’ among his orange groves on the west side of Lake Pineloch south of Orlando at the age of 80. It was a long way from the Eppington, Monticello, and Poplar Forrest plantations of his boyhood.”

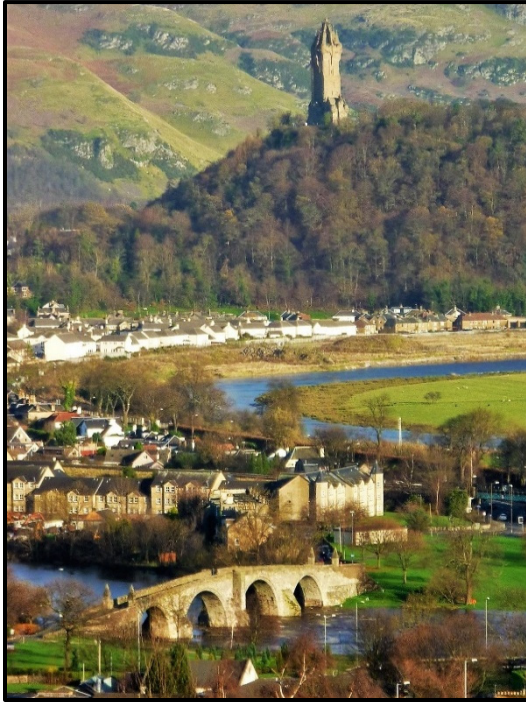
“He was known as Francis Wayles Eppes VII not Senior. All the Francis Eppes before him have a number, and they go way back to I.” (Find a Grave) (The Jefferson Family, pages 122-127)

Fought in Battles of Sterling Bridge and Falkirk

Sir Adam de Bostock, knight (23rd Great-Grandfather), “was born 1270 in Bostock,

Top left: Poplar Forest, “a plantation and plantation house in Forest, Bedford County, Virginia, that Thomas Jefferson designed and built. The plantation was used as a private retreat and a revenue-generating plantation. Jefferson inherited the property in 1773 and began designing and working on the plantation in 1806.” Francis Wayles Eppes (1801-1881) inherited Poplar Forest from his grandfather in 1826. It was the only Jefferson property to pass to the intended heir. Jefferson’s debts disrupted the rest of his bequests after his death in 1826.” Left: Florida State University in Tallahassee, which Epps helped to found in 1851. Above: Statue placed on the University’s campus in 2002 to honor Epps as the main founder of the school but removed in 2020 because he was a slaveholder.

Cheshire, England, and died in 1338 in Cheshire, England. He was lord of the manor of



Left: Sterling, Scotland, with Sterling Bridge in the foreground, and the Wallace Monument in the background. Adam de Bostock (23rd Great-Grandfather; 1270–1338) probably fought at the Battle of Sterling Bridge on September 11, 1297 (a major Scottish victory). Above: Scene from the 1994 movie *Braveheart*, depicting the Scottish Army at the Battle of Falkirk. Adam de Bostock fought at Falkirk on July 22, 1298 (an English victory) and was knighted by King Edward I after the battle.

Bostock. He may have been in the Battle of Stirling (Scotland) on September 11, 1297,” and definitely fought in the Battle of Falkirk, the following July for he was knighted by King Edward I in 1298 after the battle. (The Jefferson Family, pages 168-169)

Rare Painted Portraits

William Bostock (15th Great-Grandfather; born 1482) married **Margery** (born 1482) and had three sons and a daughter: Humfry (born 1507), Ralph (born 1509), John (born 1511) and **Elizabeth Bostock** (14th Great-Grandmother), who married **Richard Branch** (14th Great-Grandfather).

Humfry Bostock (14th Great-Granduncle; 1507-1578) married Barbara (born 1509) and had two known children: John (born 1530) and Lionell (born 1533; see his portrait and that of his son, William Bostock, on the next page). Lionell became exceedingly rich.

Humfry Bostock was a woolen draper, who was the third mayor of Abingdon, Berkshire, England, 1558–1559, which was then a newly chartered town (see the Branch family, earlier). He was also the first governor of Christ’s Hospital in Abingdon, 1553–1578, which was founded in 1553.

“Bostock influence in Abingdon reached its peak with Humphrey’s son, Lionell (1533-1600). Lionell Bostock became rich as a woolen draper, but in later life, having bought the Fitzharris estate in Abingdon (located just to the north of the historic center of the town; the house was demolished in 1953) and other properties elsewhere, he gave up his trade to

Worthy to Remember an Abridgment

live as a landed gentleman. He was a great benefactor of Christ's Hospital, of which he was governor and twice master, and was four times mayor of the town."



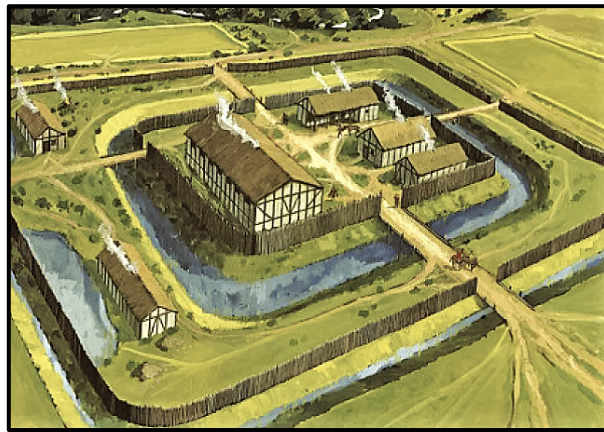
Left: Lionell Bostock (1533-1600) of Fitzharris (the name of his estate, which he purchased, above) in Abingdon, Berkshire, England. He was the son of Humfry Bostock (14th Great-Granduncle; 1507-1578; Humfry was a woolen draper, Governor of Christ's Hospital in Abingdon, and Mayor of Abingdon), who was the son of William Bostock (15th Great-Grandfather; born 1482). Today, Lionell's portrait is in Christ's Hospital in Abingdon. Lionell "was four times mayor of Abingdon, and governor and master of Christ's Hospital. In earlier life he was a woolen draper and malt maker." By "his own industry he grew to the greatest estate for wealth and riches of any tradesman of his time." Lower left: William Bostock (1572-before 1643; son of Lionell Bostock) in 1602. He was Governor of Christ's Hospital in Abingdon, England, "but fell into poverty and disrepute and was ejected from Governor in 1624." Paintings by Sampson Strong, courtesy of the Governors of Christ's Hospital.



"Lionell was noteworthy as a puritan. In 1577, together with Sir John Fettiplace of Appleton, he financed a weekly 'lecture' essentially a sermon organized independently of the church authorities, but which townfolk would be encouraged, or even compelled, by the municipal authorities to attend. The lecturers were chosen from among the most eminent of Oxford theologians, and Abindon people would be exposed to the most advanced religious thinking of the day. The lectures continued until 1660."

"The family's reputation declined in the time of Lionell's son William (1572-before 1643).

William became governor of the Hospital and was master in 1606. He was described as ‘a very powerful and contentious person,’ and popularly known as ‘mad William Bostock.’



Top: Coat of arms of Robert de Venables (6th Baron of Kinderton; died 1261) in Westminster Abbey (top left; painting from 1749). He received this honor for contributing to the building of the abbey circa 1255. **Left:** Rebecca Martin, his 26th Great-Granddaughter, standing below his arms on May 19, 2017. **Above:** Manor of Kinderton in Middlewich, Cheshire, England, which Roger de Venables constructed in the mid-1200s. Its appearance has been verified by archeological studies.

William lost money, sold land, and left Abingdon about 1622, to die at Windsor in relative poverty. The Fitzharris estate passed to a cousin, Edmund Bostock (died 1643).” (The Bostock Family, Internet) (The Jefferson Family, pages 179-180)

Coat of Arms in Westminster Abbey

Roger de Venables, 6th Baron of Kinderton (25th Great-Grandfather) was the heir of Hugh Venables in 1240. He fought alongside Henry III in the Barons’ War.

“Roger de Venables, with other wealthy benefactors, contributed to the building of Henry III’s church, Westminster Abbey in Westminster, now a part of London. Their contribution was memorialized by carved shields of arms in the choir aisles and far eastern bays of the nave. On the south side is the shield of Roger de Venables.”



Roger de Venables was the first to reside at the manor of Kinderton in Middlewich, Cheshire, England. (The Jefferson Family, pages 184-185)

Roger de Venables was the first to reside at the manor of Kinderton in Middlewich, Cheshire, England. (The Jefferson Family, pages 184-185)

Half-brothers of William the Conqueror

Robert, Count of Mortain (30th Great-Grand-

Left: Odo (30th Great-Granduncle; died 1097) fought in the Battle of Hastings as shown in the Bayeux Tapestry, which he commissioned. Above: Count Robert of Mortain (30th Great-Granduncle; circa 1031-1090) as also depicted on the Bayeux Tapestry. “Robert was proficient in every duty William [the Conqueror] assigned him.”

uncle; circa 1031-1090) and his full-brother, **Odo, Earl of Kent and Bishop of Bayeux** (30th Great-Granduncle; died 1097), half-brothers of **William the Conqueror** (30th Great-Grandfather), both fought with him at the Battle of Hastings on October 15, 1066.

“In early 1066, Robert was present at both the first council of Lillebonne, that of William’s inner circle, and the second larger council held to discuss the duke’s planned conquest of England. Robert agreed to provide 120 ships to the invasion fleet, which was more than any other of William’s magnates. Robert was one of those few known to have been at the Battle of Hastings in 1066. He is pictured at a dinner at Pevensey on the Bayeux Tapestry, seated with his brothers William and Odo on the day of the landing in England.”

“Robert’s contribution to the success of the invasion was clearly regarded as highly significant by the Conqueror, who awarded him a large share of the spoils; in total 797 manors at the time of Domesday. The greatest concentration of his honours lay in Cornwall where he held virtually all of that county and was considered by some the Earl of Cornwall. While Robert held land in twenty counties, the majority of his

holdings in certain counties was as few as five manors. The overall worth of his estates was £2100.”

Robert married **Matilda (Maud) of Montgomery** (30th Great-Grandaunt; circa 1050-circa 1085; daughter of **Roger of Montgomery**, 1st Earl of Shrewsbury, 31st Great-Grandfather; 1020-1094) and had four children. Matilda was a descendant of Charlemagne (747-814).

“Odo was, for a time, second in power after the King of England. In 1067, Odo became Earl of Kent, and for some years he was a trusted royal minister. On some occasions when William was absent (back in Normandy), he served as regent of England, and at times he led the royal forces against rebellions (e.g. the Revolt of the Earls), but the precise sphere of his powers is not certain. There are also other occasions when he accompanied William back to Normandy.”

In 1082, Odo was suddenly disgraced and imprisoned for having planned a military expedition to Italy. His motives are not certain. Chroniclers writing a generation later said Odo desired to make himself pope during the Investiture Controversy while Pope Gregory VII was in severe difficulty in his conflict with Henry IV, Holy Roman Emperor, and the position of pope was in contention; but the contemporary evidence is ambiguous. Whatever the reason, Odo spent the next five years in prison, and his English estates were taken back by the king, as was his office as Earl of Kent. Odo was not deposed as Bishop of Bayeux.

“On his deathbed in 1087, King William I was reluctantly persuaded by his half-brother, Robert, to release Odo. After the king’s death, Odo returned to England. William’s eldest son, Robert Curthose, had been made duke of Normandy, while Robert’s brother William Rufus had received the throne of England. The bishop supported Robert Curthose’s claim to England. The Rebellion of 1088 failed and William Rufus permitted Odo to leave the kingdom. Afterwards, Odo remained in the service of Robert in Normandy.”

“Odo joined the First Crusade and started in the duke’s company for Palestine, but died on the way at Palermo in January or February 1097. He was buried in Palermo Cathedral.” (Wikipedia) (The Jefferson Family, pages 287-290)

Led a Norman Army in the First Crusade

Robert Curthose (30th Great-Granduncle; 1051-1131) was the eldest son of **William the**



Above: Medieval miniature of the Siege of Jerusalem in 1099. Robert Curthose (30th Great-Granduncle; 1051-1131) was one of the leaders of the Crusader Army that took the city on July 15, 1099.

Conqueror and succeeded his father as Duke of Normandy in 1087, reigning until 1106. Robert was also an unsuccessful claimant to the throne of the Kingdom of England.



This page: Effigy of Robert Curthose, Duke of Normandy (30th Great-Grand-uncle; 1051-1131) that was made about 1231 in Gloucester Cathedral, England. It is made of bog-oak, one of the most long-lasting woods on earth, sometimes thousands of years old. He came home as a hero from the First Crusade but was later imprisoned for life for challenging the king.

In 1096, Robert formed an army and left for the Holy Land on the First Crusade. To raise money for the crusade he mortgaged his duchy to his brother William (King of England) for the sum of 10,000 marks. He fought in many battles and sieges during the crusade and succeeded on July 15, 1099, in taking Jerusalem. (The crusader army had been greatly reduced to approximately 12,000 men when the attack on Jerusalem began. Robert was one of the eight main leaders of the army.) Interestingly, Pope Urban had issued a “get out of jail free card” by stating, “Whoever for devotion alone, not to obtain honor or money, sets out to liberate the church of god in Jerusalem, this (act) will be counted for all his penance.” A very good deal for believers at that time.

He returned in glory to Normandy but later tried to take the English crown and was defeated decisively at the Battle of Tinchebray by Henry I in 1106. Captured after the battle, Robert was imprisoned in Devizes Castle for twenty years before being moved to Cardiff Castle wherein died in his early eighties in 1134. His medieval effigy, created 100 years after his death, in Gloucester Cathedral, is one of the finest to survive to the present day. (Wikipedia)

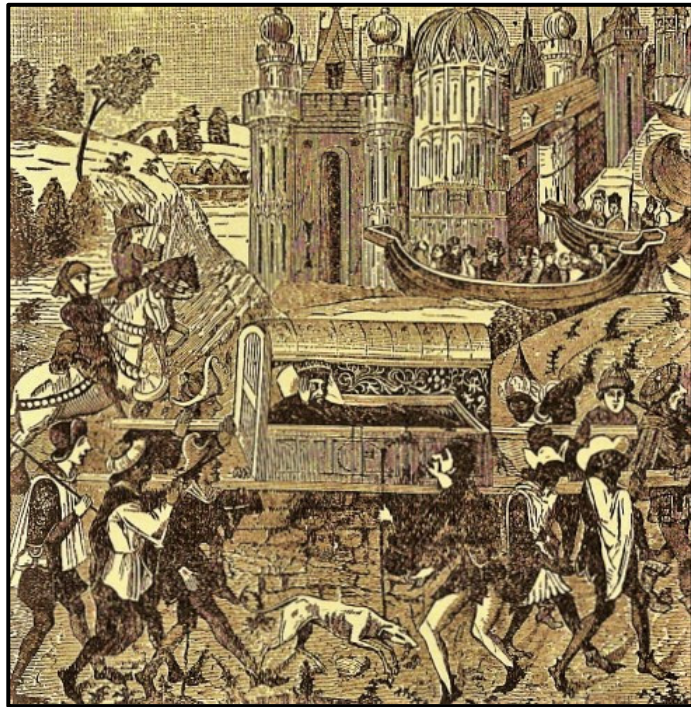
Died Returning from his Pilgrimage to Jerusalem

Robert the Magnificent (French: *le Magnifique*) (32nd Great-Grandfather; June 22, 1000–

July 1/3, 1035), “was the Duke of Normandy from 1027 until his death.” He made a



Right: Old illuminated manuscript (date unknown), showing Robert the Magnificent (32nd Great-Grandfather; 1000-1035) being carried on a litter into Jerusalem. Robert made a pilgrimage to the Holy Land in 1035, but on his return journey, died in Nicaea on July 2, 1035. His eight-year-old son, William I, later to be known as “the Conqueror,” succeeded him. Above: Interesting medieval depiction of Robert the Magnificent sitting at a chess board. Below: Rollo (36th Great-Grandfather; 846-930) was a leader in the Viking attack on Paris in 885-886 (depiction below). Although unable to take the city, they successfully attacked many other parts of France during this time.



pilgrimage to the Holy Land in 1035, but on his return journey died in Nicaea on July 2, 1035. His eight-year-old son, **William I**, later to be known as “the Conqueror,” succeeded him. (Ther Jefferson Family, pages 330-332)

First Viking Ruler of Normandy

Rollo (36th or 35th Great-Grandfather [36th by Jefferson descent, and 35th by Farrar descent]; circa 846–circa 930)

“was a Viking who became the first ruler of Normandy, a region of France. He is sometimes called the 1st Duke of Normandy.”

“Rollo emerged as the outstanding personality among the Norsemen who had secured a permanent foothold on Frankish soil in the valley of the lower Seine. Charles the Simple, the king of West Francia, ceded them lands between the mouth of the Seine and what is now the city of Rouen in exchange for Rollo agreeing to end his brigandage, and provide the Franks with protection against future Viking raids.”



“Rollo is first recorded as the leader of these Viking settlers in a charter of 918, and he

“Rollo is first recorded as the leader of these Viking settlers in a charter of 918, and he

continued to reign over the region of Normandy until at least 928. He was succeeded



Top right: Effigy of Rollo (36th Great-Grandfather; 846-930) in Rouen Cathedral (above). Rouen, France, was the de facto capital of Normandy from Rollo until William the Conqueror moved his residence to Caen. **Right:** Opening scene of the Bayeux Tapestry, depicting Edward the Confessor (1003-1066; son of Emma of Normandy, 33rd Great-Grandaunt). This is an exact copy, handsewn by Karen Piquet Martin, the compiler's wife, in 2005.

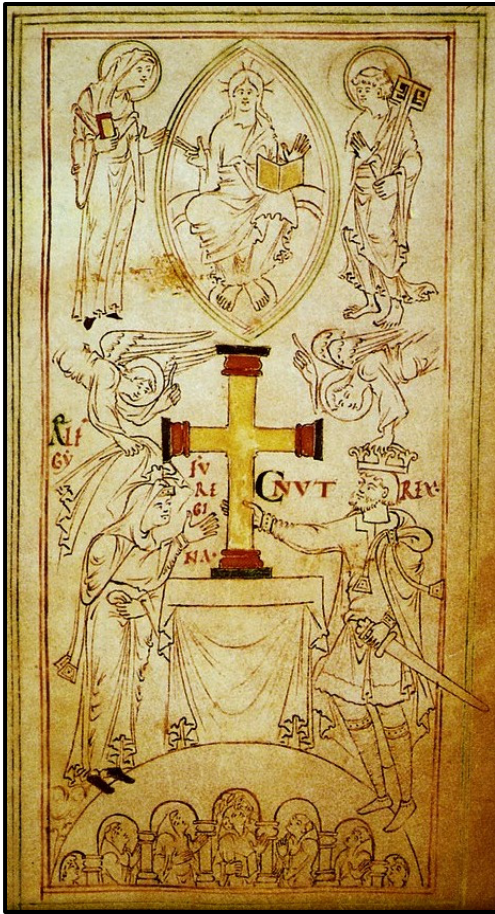
by his son, **William Longsword**, in the Duchy of Normandy that he had founded. The offspring of Rollo and his men became known as the Normans. After the Norman conquest of England and their conquest of southern Italy and Sicily over the fol-

lowing two centuries, the descendants of Rollo and his men came to rule Norman England (the House of Normandy), the Kingdom of Sicily (the Kings of Sicily) as well as the Principality of Antioch from the 10th to 12th century, leaving behind an enduring legacy in the historical developments of Europe and the Near East.” (Wikipedia) (The Jefferson Family, pages 342-345)

Mother of Edward the Confessor and Wife of Cnut the Great

Emma of Normandy (33rd Great-Grandaunt; circa 984–March 6, 1052) “was Queen of England, Denmark and Norway through her marriages to Æthelred the Unready (1002–1016) and Cnut the Great (990-1035). She was the daughter of the Norman ruler, **Richard the Fearless**” (34th Great-Grandfather and grandson of **Rollo**). A contemporary history, suggest that Emma and Cnut’s marriage, “though begun as a political strategy, became an affectionate marriage.”

“During the reign of Æthelred, Emma most likely served as little more than a figurehead, a



Left: Contemporary depiction of Emma of Normandy, 33rd Great-Grandaunt and her husband, King Cnut the Great (990-1035). Angels crown Cnut as he and Emma present a large gold cross to Hyde Abbey in Winchester, England. Above: The Alfred Jewel (871-899), which “is probably the single most famous archaeological object in England.” The old English inscription cut into the frame reads: “AELFRED MEC HEHT GEWYRCAN— ‘Alfred ordered me to be made.’” It is now displayed in the Ashmolean Museum in Oxford. Lower left: A coin of Alfred, King of Wessex, London, 880. The opposite side reads: “AELFRED REX” (King Aelfred). Alfred the Great (37th Great-Grandfather; 849-899) was King of Wessex from 871 to 899 and is considered one of the greatest English kings of all time.



physical embodiment of the treaty between the English and her Norman father. However, her influence increased considerably under Cnut. Until 1043, Emma ‘was the richest woman in England...and held extensive lands in the East Midlands and Wessex.’ Emma’s authority was not simply tied to landholdings—which fluctuated greatly from 1036 to 1043—she also wielded significant sway over the ecclesiastical offices of England.”

Emma was the mother of Edward, the Confessor, (circa 1003-1066), King of England, who died childless, leading to the Battle of Hastings and the Norman Conquest of England. Edward reigned from 1042 to 1066. About a century after his death, “Pope Alexander III canonized the king. Edward was one of England’s national saints until King Edward

III adopted George of Lydda as the national patron saint in about 1350.” (Wikipedia) (The Jefferson Family, pages 347-348)

One of Only Two English Monarchs to be Called “The Great”

Alfred the Great (37th Great-Grandfather; 849-October 26, 899) “was King of Wessex from 871 to 899.”



Above: William E. Massey (2nd Great-Grandfather; 1840-1910) with his second wife, “Jennie” Henderson, about 1905. He was wounded and captured during the Civil War.

“Alfred successfully defended his kingdom against the Viking attempt at conquest, and by the time of his death had become the dominant ruler in England. He is one of only two English monarchs to be given the epithet ‘the Great,’ the other being the Scandinavian Cnut the Great. He was also the first King of the West Saxons to style himself ‘King of the Anglo-Saxons.’ Details of Alfred’s life are described in a work by the 10th-century Welsh scholar and bishop, Asser.”

“Alfred had a reputation as a learned and merciful man of a gracious and level-headed nature who encouraged education, proposing that primary education be taught in English, and improved his kingdom’s legal system, military structure and his people’s quality of life. In 2002, Alfred was ranked number 14 in the BBC’s poll of the 100 Greatest Britons.” (Wikipedia) (The Jefferson Family, pages 353-354)

Wounded and Captured During the Civil War

William E. (Everett or Everard or Edward) Massey (2nd Great-Grandfather; 1840-1910) was born at four a.m., on November 15, 1840, in Jackson, Madison County, Tennessee. After his father died, his uncle, Joseph Massey, raised him. William fought on the side of the South during the Civil War from 1862 to 1865. Records show that William E. Massey was a private in Company C. of Napier’s Battalion, Tennessee Cavalry, Confederate States

of America. He enlisted on November 10, 1862, at Waverly, Tennessee. This battalion by consolidation formed the 10th Regiment (DeMoss) Tennessee Cavalry, C.S.A.



Left: Rebecca and Michael Martin, Third Great-Grandchildren of William Massey standing next to his monument in Little Rock, Arkansas, in August 2006. Above: Signature of William E. Massey (1840-1910) on a letter dated November 4, 1908. Below: Rare photograph of a stagecoach in Siloam or Heber Springs, Arkansas, about 1904. William E. Massey is standing on the ground, fourth man from the left (or second from the stagecoach). His trunk is on top of the “Hack or Cab.”

“William E. Massey, private Company C, 8th (should have been the 10th) Regiment Tennessee Calvary, C. S. A. received June 29, 1863, at Military Prison at Alton, Illinois, captured at Ft. Donelson, Tennessee, February 4, 1863. He was discharged February 17, 1863, for transfer to Point Lookout for exchange.”

This history is also confirmed (with some minor differences in dates) by Army Medical



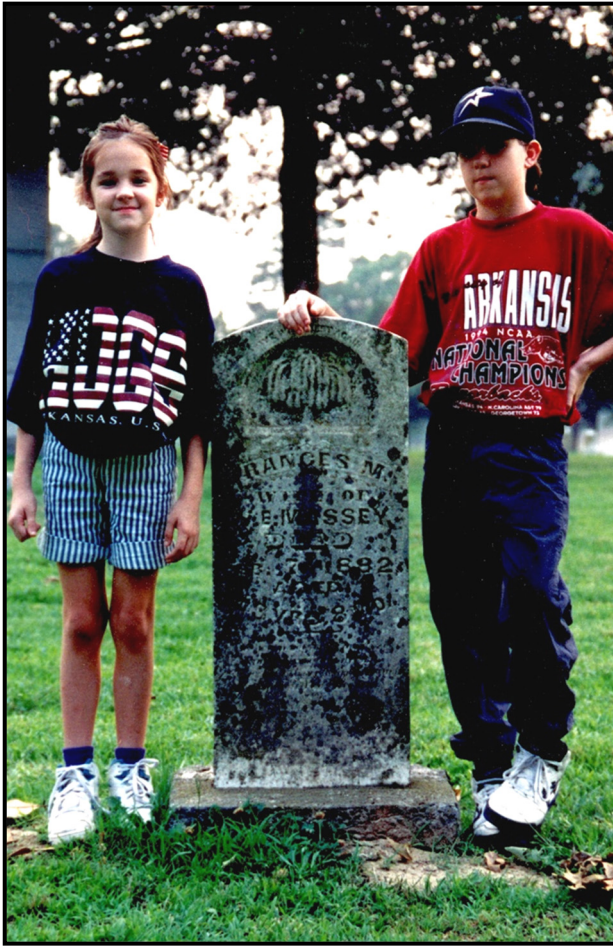
Records that show that W. E. Massey was admitted to St. John’s U.S.A. General Hospital at Paducah in McCracken County, Kentucky, February 7, 1863, to April 11, 1863. He was placed in the hands of the Provost Marshall for exchange, May 19, 1863. He had been shot in three places.

William subscribed to and swore the Oath of Allegiance on April 4, 1865, at Nashville, Tennessee. The record said that his residence was Humphreys County, Tennessee.

After the war, William married on September 6, 1866, at four p.m. **Frances “Viny” Melvina Anderson** (2nd Great-Grandmother; 1838-1882) at the home of her brother, John Anderson, in Waverly, Tennessee.

William and “Viny” had six children, but three died when babies. Their three surviving children were: Lucy Gentry Massey (1867-1948), **John William Massey** (1875-1946), and Isaac

Ewell “Eudie” Massey (1881-1919). Lucy was born in Humphreys County, Tennessee, but John and “Eudie” were born in Poplar Bluff, Missouri. (The Massey Family, pages 3-7)



Above: Sarah (age 9) and Jonathan Martin (age 11) standing beside the gravestone of Frances Anderson Massey (1838-1882), their third great-grandmother, in City Cemetery, Poplar Bluff, Missouri, in June 1994. Frances had six children but died at the age of 42/43.

boat capsized. One of the mules kicked Frank Anderson in the head as men, horses and mules thrashed about and he was drowned. He and Elizabeth had two sons: Isaac M. Anderson (born 1861 in Tennessee) and Joseph F. Anderson (born 1862 in Tennessee). After Frank died, Elizabeth married a Mr. Craig and moved to Texas, “with her brothers. (The Massey Family, page 14)

Died in the World-Wide Pandemic of 1918-1919

Isaac “Eudie” Ewell Massey (Great-Granduncle; 1881-1919) was born in Poplar Bluff, Missouri. Eudie was a very handsome man who worked as a conductor for the railroad. He married Charlie Lee Manchester (1889-1976) on December 17, 1913, in Jena, Louisiana, and they had three children. While working in Winnfield, Louisiana, for the railroad during

Buried Alone in Poplar Bluff, Missouri

Frances “Viny” Melvina Anderson (2nd Great-Grandmother; 1838-1882) moved before 1875 with her husband, William E. Massey, from Waverly, Tennessee, to Poplar Bluff, Missouri, where William worked for the railroad. The family bible records, “Frances M. Massey departed this life February 7th in the year of our Lord 1882 at six o’clock and 30 minutes p.m. age 42 years 8 months.” She died of pneumonia and was buried in Poplar Bluff City, Missouri. No one else in the family was ever buried in Poplar Bluff. (The Massey Family, pages 1, 7-10)

Killed by a Mule While Crossing the Tennessee River

Isaac Franklin Anderson (Great-Granduncle; 1842-1862/1865) married Elizabeth Massey (born 1845) the daughter of Joseph B. Massey (Great-Granduncle). When the Civil War started Isaac, called “Frank,” joined the Confederate Tennessee Infantry. A boatload of soldiers was being towed across the Tennessee River and the

the world-wide influenza epidemic (1918-1919), Eudie caught the disease and died of pneumonia following influenza. His third child, John Jefferson Massey (1919-1922), was



Right: Isaac Ewell “Eudie” Massey (Great-Granduncle; 1881-1919). Eudie was a railroad conductor during the great influenza epidemic of 1918-1919. His frequent contact with passengers increased his chances of contracting the disease. (It was an unusual virus because it tended to kill the healthiest first.) He died from the influenza in 1919, leaving a young wife and two children. A third child was born two months after he died. **Above:** Sarah Martin (age 8; great-great-grandniece of Eudie), standing next to his monument in downtown Winnfield, Louisiana, in 1993, and the gravestone of his son, Leonard Massey (1915-2001), who served in Europe during World War II. He married later in life.



born two and a half months after he died. In 1993 my daughter, Sarah, and I visited Eudie’s grave in Winnfield, Louisiana. He was the only family member to die in Winnfield, and his gravestone stands alone on the far side of a medium-sized cemetery near downtown Winnfield.

Leonard Ewell Massey (1915-2001), Eudie’s second child, served in the European theater during World War II. He was an active Mason. Leonard was nicknamed “Boogie,” and married Willetta McNeely (1918-2001) as her second husband. They did not have any children. (The Massey Family, pages 19-21)

Railroad Conductor who Loved the Circus

John William Massey (Great-Grandfather; 1875-1946) was born in Poplar Bluff, Missouri. He was a conductor for the Missouri Pacific Railroad for forty-three years. While he was

working as a conductor in Malvern, Arkansas, he was introduced by another railroad



Right: John William Massey (Great-Grandfather; 1875-1946) with a cigar and wearing an overcoat, when he was about 43 years old. Top left: Photograph of John Massey on January 24, 1891, when he was sixteen years old. His daughter, Frances Massey, wrote that it was “perfect of him at the time.” Above: Union Railroad Station in Little Rock, Arkansas. John Massey worked for the Union Pacific Railroad for 43 years, most of the time as a conductor. He came in and out of this railroad station hundreds of times during his career.

worker to **Miss Jessie Isaac Smith** (Great-Grandmother; 1876-1923). (She already knew the porter and bribed him with a cake to introduce her to the “handsome conductor.”) They fell in love and were married on January 26, 1901, in Little Rock, Arkansas. After a honeymoon trip back east to Washington D.C. and “other interesting places,” they visited Jessie’s relatives in Malvern and Dallas County, Arkansas. They made their home at 1115 West Fourth Street in Little Rock, Arkansas, until May 1, 1912, when they moved to 722 Marshall Street. Ten and a half years later, on January 26, 1923, Jessie died of cancer of the womb. John sold his house on Marshall Street to his son-in-law, Thomas Bowles, and moved to his last home at 404 Cedar.

John and Jessie were the parents of two children, both born in Little Rock, Arkansas: **Frances Ewell Massey** (1904-1974) and Smith Massey (1911-1918).

John married Eva Blassingame (1895-1952) as his second wife, August 1, 1927, in Hot Springs, Arkansas. John was twenty years older than Eva, but they had a happy marriage. They had one child: **Willie Lois Massey** (Great-Aunt; 1929-2007).

Willie Lois wrote me a letter in 1996: “I can see and hear them talk about the first time my dad met his father-in-law, Robert Blassingame. My father, John William Massey, was a conductor for the Missouri Pacific Railroad. Papa, as I was taught to call my grandfather, got on my dad’s train to go home from Little Rock to Ward, Arkansas. In those days the trains stopped for all sorts of deliveries. Papa was drunk and was looking for trouble. He liked to fight when drunk, they always said. Aunt Lillie tried to



Above, left, to right from back: Lucy Massey Klein (Great-Grandaunt), sister of Charles Klein, Jessie Smith Massey (Great-Grandmother), Eudie Massey (Great-Granduncle; center), Charles Klein (husband of Lucy Klein), Frances Massey (Grandmother), age two or three, and John Massey (Great-Grandfather) in 1906/1907. Left: John Massey enjoyed owning new cars. He bought several new models in his lifetime, including this 1925 Dodge sedan. Photograph taken on May 8, 1925. John’s daughter wrote that he was like a little kid when the circus came to town and they would always go together.

get him to sit down and be quite. My dad said, ‘Sit down or I will stop the train and put you off.’ This he did. How do you think he felt when in a week or so he went to meet his new in-laws and it was the man he had just put off the train? They used to laugh a lot when they talked about it.”

“My mother met my father on the train. She worked in Little Rock at Kareheis Candy factory. She would go home on the weekends to Ward, Arkansas. She lived with her sister and her family.”

“She nearly always took Blanche, her niece with her. They were both dark—black hair and eyes and Dad thought Blanche was my mother’s daughter. When he found out she was not her daughter he asked her for a date. He was a lot older than my mother, but they got along great.”

Willie Lois said that her father, John William Massey, “loved the Christmas Season. He would buy a big carton of chocolate covered cherries, his favorite candy, and give boxes to all that came to the house as long as they lasted. In those days a box cost twenty-five cents.”

Willie Lois wrote me another letter dated August 27, 1997: “I can remember Dad (John William Massey) talking about him running away from home at sixteen to join the circus. Even after I came along, he was still like a little kid and always took me with him to the circus. My mother did not care to go.”

“After a month or so and the money got low, he wired his dad for money to come home on. His dad wired back: ‘WALK.’ So, he went to work for the old Missouri Iron Mountain Railroad. This was about 1893 or 1894, I think. This railroad, I understand, later became the Missouri Pacific. He worked for them forty-four years.”

“He always got high marks from Checkers who would ride the trains to check on the employees. He wore celluloid collars—would take two or three with him on his ‘run.’ I can

Top right: Willie Lois Massey (Great-Grandaunt; 1929-2007; right) with her half-niece, Nancy Bowles (1930-2016; left), about 1949. She wrote me a number of letters about her father, John Massey (Great-Grandfather). Right: Smith Massey (Grand-Uncle; 1911-1918), who contacted whooping cough from the doctor who visited him in his home. He was a handsome, much-loved son and brother, but died in his seventh year. His unexpected death was a great loss to his family.

see them now with a brush—bar of soap—scrubbing the collars. They just fit on a white dress shirt—always clean and neat. Had a white handkerchief in his suit pocket. Shoes shined. A suit maker in North Little Rock made his blue suits—one or two a year. His last run was from here to Popular Bluff—spent the night then back through Little Rock, and he’d call Mother, then on to Hot Springs, spend the night and back home the next day. Had a rooming house that knew his schedule and saved the bed for him on those nights at each end of the run.”



Willie Lois wrote her last letter to me on February 4, 2006: “Let me tell you this— My daddy’s birthday was January 24. He was born in 1875. Would have been 131 years old [in 2006]. He died in 1946. He has been gone 60 years. He was a wonderful man and I miss him today. He was 55 when I was born. Frances was born February 17, 1904. She would be 102. Time gets away, Love Willie Lois.” Willie Lois died the following year in 2007. She was a gentle, kind, humble lady. In her whole life she never journeyed outside Arkansas, Oklahoma, and Texas. (The Massey Family, pages 21-30)

Infected by His Doctor

Smith Massey (Great-Uncle; 1911-1918) was a handsome boy with blond hair and blue eyes. Smith became ill and a doctor who lived across the street from the family on West Fourth Street visited him. The doctor had whooping cough and gave it to Smith. He died of pneumonia following measles and whooping cough on January 11, 1918. He had started to go to school on September 14, 1917. It was a very cold winter. (The Massey Family, page 23)

Rare Personal Journal

Frances Ewell Massey (Grandmother; 1904-1974) was born on Wednesday, February 17, 1904, at 1115 West Fourth Street in Little Rock, Arkansas. (The house was dismantled in June 1968 and is now the home for Fox Studios in Little Rock.) She began attending Pea-body School, at 5th and Gaines, on September 10, 1910, and graduated from eighth grade, in February 1918. Frances graduated from twelfth grade at Little Rock High School, July 15, 1921. She met Thomas Holland Bowles through a friend and immediately liked him. Grandfather said, “Her eyes got real big” when she first saw him. They eloped, marrying without the knowledge of their parents, on Sunday, August 14, 1921, at the home of Rev. Calvin Waller, a Baptist Minister in Little Rock, Arkansas. They registered their marriage at the Lonoke County Courthouse, probably to avoid publication of the marriage in the Little Rock newspaper. Frances then went off to attend Crescent College in Eureka Springs, Arkansas, an all-girls’ college. Today the college building is a prominent historical landmark known as the Crescent Hotel. After a year of college, Frances and



Above: Frances Ewell Massey (Grandmother; 1904-1974) when she was about eleven years old in 1915.

Tom announced to her parents that they had secretly married months before. Needless to say, they were not pleased. Her mother, Jessie, was able to accept the news better than



her father because he thought that his daughter could have done better. When Jessie became ill with cancer, Tom and Frances were constantly at her bedside. Tom said that his mother-in-law was “a wonderful, wonderful person.” Frances was pregnant with her first child and Jessie wanted to be able to live to see the baby, but the disease was too advanced, and she died fifty-two days before Mildred was born on March 18, 1923.

Frances and Tom had four children: Mildred Jane Ellen Bowles (1923-2000), Thomas John Massey Bowles (1925-2002), **Patricia Anna Elizabeth Bowles** (1927-2006), and Nancy Virginia Bowles (1930-2016).



Frances once ran a family store at their home on 722 Marshall Street in Little Rock that was called Tom and Frances.

Top Frances Ewell Massey being proposed to when she was about six years old in 1910 or 1911. Above: Frances with friends on a wagon about 1920.

Frances began working for the Arkansas History Commission in the west wing of the Old State

House (completed in 1842) in downtown Little Rock on September 1, 1957, as a research assistant. Two months later she had a blood clot and had to go to St. Vincent’s Infirmary for eight days. The director replaced her with another person, but two years later on September 1, 1959, Frances was rehired at \$195 dollars a month, but in four months was raised to \$225 dollars a month. Frances wrote, “My pay when I retired was \$359 dollars a month. On April 15, 1970, I retired from my job as a microphotographer. State retirement of \$51.38 received April 30, 1970—first check. Received \$130.90 on May 25, 1970, as first check from Social Security.”

My grandmother loved genealogy. She not only researched her own family lines, but also those of her sons and daughter-in-law. She began her research about 1947. The fact that she began so early is important because she was able to write letters to many older living relatives who knew what the family history and traditions were. By the late 1950s many

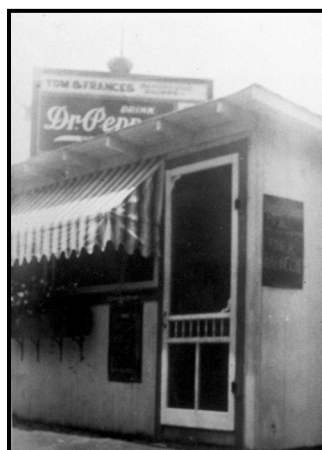
of these great-aunts/uncles and cousins were no longer living. Genealogical research is made easier if family traditions and names of distant family members are known. Then these oral traditions can be established by checking written records, which also allows one to extend their lines further back. Otherwise, it is sometimes impossible to know where to begin. Her early research was a great benefit to my efforts, which began in 1970.

I remember how my grandmother would relate stories about our family. She had a way of speaking that was interesting and enthusiastic. Sometimes as she spoke, she would relax her right hand so that it would bend at the wrist. Also, she would sometimes place two fingers and her thumb together and touch her closed lips, while she listened to someone else speak. My sister, Nancy Sharp Martin Lamb, had this same mannerism as does my cousin, Julia Bowles Short.

Frances loved history. In 1971 my mother, Patricia Bowles, my aunt, Mildred Bowles and Grandmother made a trip back east to Virginia. They made the trip in my mother's red Dodge Challenger. The car had a 400 cubic inch engine, wire wheels and black interior. It was on the cutting edge of sports car technology at that time. They visited some family sites and Grandmother was able to do some research in the Richmond Library. It was one of the happiest times of her life.

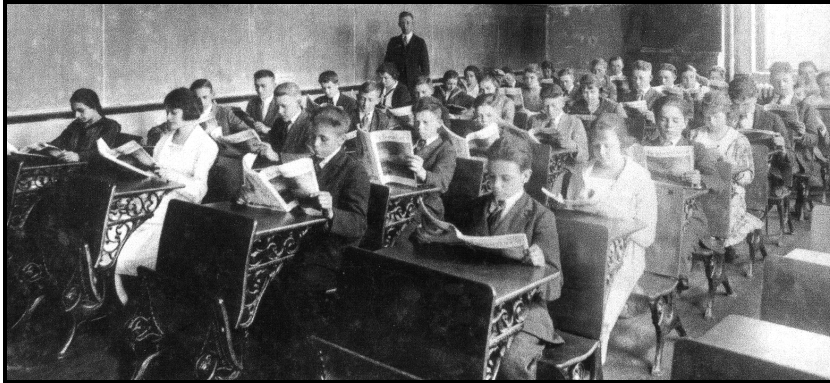
I often wrote letters to my grandmother. In 1970, when I was sixteen, I became very interested in family history and began to copy Grandmother's research. I would copy late into the early morning hours after everyone else had gone to bed. She would answer my questions and was pleased that I was interested in the work she had done. After she died, I received her original records and have prized them ever since.

The last time I saw my grandmother was in the summer of 1973. My mother, Aunt Millie



Top: Old postcard of the Crescent Hotel in Eureka Springs, Arkansas. Frances Massey attended Crescent College, an all-girls school, which met in this building in 1921 to 1922. It later became a hotel. **Above right:** Frances at the railroad depot in Eureka Springs when she was in college. **Above left:** Frances opened and operated this store that she called Tom & Frances in 1930.

and I drove from Houston, Texas, to Little Rock, Arkansas, to spend a week. One day that week I was riding in the back of the car with Grandmother on our way to have dinner



at Uncle Buddy's. She looked at me and said, "I use to be innocent like you, but then I got married and that did it. I never cussed, but then they make you so mad you can't help it."

This page: Frances graduated from Little Rock High School. Above: Frances' history class in Little Rock High School in 1919. She is sitting in the fifth seat from the front on the third row from the wall. Future movie actor and producer, Dick Powell, is sitting in the first seat on the third row. Frances' good friend and cousin, Mona Collins, is sitting in the first seat on the second row. The teacher is Mr. J. H. Atkinson, who died in 1973.



I was leaving soon to serve two years as a missionary and would not be seeing her again until the end of that time. Grandmother took me to family cemeteries and we visited our cousins. It was as if she knew that this was the last time that she would be able to share these people and places with me before she passed away. Frances Massey Bowles passed away nine months later on May 5, 1974.

Journey back east. When Grandmother was fourteen years old, she took a trip back east with her mother, Jessie Smith Massey (Great-Grandmother), her aunt, Mabel Smith Klein (Great-Grandaunt), and Mabel's husband, Charlie Klein. She kept a detailed account of her journey from July 18, 1918, until August 17, 1918, in a red leather book. I saw the journal for the first time when I visited my uncle, John Bowles, in May 2000. The journal is over one hundred and sixty pages long and is very well-written.

They traveled by train from Little Rock, Arkansas, to St. Louis and visited the cities of Washington D.C., Georgetown, New York, Buffalo and Baltimore. She had a wonderful trip, and although she would have loved to revisit these places, she never saw them again for the rest of her life.

The first day she noted how rough the train was and how her train car would fill with smoke when they went through a tunnel. As she crossed the Mississippi River she saw some "large river boats" and some "cute house boats." She wrote, "I asked the porter to give me the table that goes with the Pullman seat. Mama and I played Pitch for six or

seven games and then Uncle Charlie played with her while I read the *Woman's Home Companion*...At about 1:20 I saw the dome of the capitol and Washington's Monument in the distance." They were met at the train station by a cousin named Mabel, who said that she had just finished lunch when "something told her we were coming on the 1:30 train," instead of the 6:00 train, "so she rushed down."

They ate at a boarding house in Washington D.C. where a Mrs. Elliot "only charged 50 cents a meal for loads to eat." Frances noted that all of the "houses looked alike, two story and brick, so that if you got drunk you could not tell which one was yours."

Mabel would not let them pay for their housing because "mama had given her a beautiful crepe waist, which cost \$10.75, and Aunt Lucy gave her a voile waist and made her a dress." They traveled by trolley car and visited the capital and other major sites. On Sunday they visited a reproduction of the catacombs in Rome and then were invited to a Greek Orthodox Church service. When the music started, "Mama cried as usual." Frances wrote, "I had on my dark blue silk dress and traveling hat and I thought that I looked real cute."



Above: Frances Massey (1904-1974) when she was 17-year-old in 1921. She went to a church service on her trip back east and wrote, "I had on my dark blue silk dress and traveling hat and I thought that I looked real cute."

On Tuesday, armed with her Kodak, Frances went to the National Zoological Park. She wrote, "I took a picture of the swans swimming in a stream and the storks in a big cage. We nearly walked our legs off and then a kangaroo was about the only animal that I hadn't seen before, and it would make its baby get in its pocket."

On Wednesday, "Uncle Charlie and I decided to go rambling and Aunt Lucy and Mama were going to clean house and meet us at 2:30 at the Washington Monument." Instead, they met Lucy and Jessie at 4:10 because "they had been shopping." They took the elevator to the top of the monument, "and we had a fine view of the city from the four windows at the top." They only stayed a few minutes on top because everyone else wanted to do more shopping. Frances and Uncle Charlie went to the Columbia Theater to

see Marguerite Clark in *Uncle Tom's Cabin*. "The show wasn't very good and when we came out Uncle Charlie was all turned around, but I insisted that he go with me and I'd



soon catch myself. He followed like a baby and I went down to the 13th Street and caught a 13th and D car which was the proper one, but Uncle Charlie got upset till we passed Pension Building," with its Civil War soldiers,

Top left: House at where Frances Massey was born at 1115 West Fourth Street in 1904. Left: 1925 photograph of Second Presbyterian Church in Little Rock where Frances regularly attended meetings. Her father was not a churchgoer. Lower left: Photograph of Frances microfilming at the Arkansas History Commission, which was in the Old Statehouse (built in 1842; above in 2012) in 1963.

which he recognized. Cousin Mabel had received many "compliments on the purple satin skirt that Mama gave her. She had put it on as soon as she got home and was dreadfully stuck on herself. We talked and I wrote in this book until 8:00 when I went to bed. I took a picture of the monument with some tall buildings in the background."

The next day they visited the Congressional Library and at dinnertime, "Mama and I went up and got us a caramel sundae." It started raining and "storming hard and the thunder resounded something terrible." Frances wrote, "I gave Miss Rest a roll of Kodak film and 20 cents to have them developed."

On Friday, July 26, 1918, Frances and the others paid 25 cents each to "have a big sightseeing car take us to all the important places" in Arlington National Cemetery. She walked through the Lee Mansion and noted that there was a fine view of Washington D.C. from the grounds. The same day they dressed up and went to visit their congressman, who was a personal friend of Uncle Charlie's, but he never showed up for his appointment. An

assistant said he would take them on Monday to see the House and Senate in Session and “we were tickled to death.”



Right: Frances with her husband, Thomas Bowles (Grandfather; 1902-1993). Above: A family reunion in June 1957. Frances is sitting on the front row holding her grandson, Richard Sharp (me).



On Saturday they rushed and made it to the train “just as the conductor was hollering, ‘all aboard!’” The train took them to Chesapeake Beach, where they rented some bathing suits for a deposit of \$12. “Bill, Mabel, Miss Clifford, Uncle Charlie and I put on the suits and got in while Mama and Aunt Lucy sat on the beach and kept our things. I just played in the water as I get scared and can’t swim because it frightens me to take my feet off the bottom. I got on Bill’s back, and he swam out with me and dived under, getting my hair wet. Once I got away from the rest and went under, I got awfully scared, but at last got on my feet. We left at 2:00 and got a seat, but I had to wear my hair down with a paper pinned on me. Mama took a picture of us in the water with our toes sticking up. We got home for supper.”

On Sunday they traveled to Baltimore. They went by some restaurants, but the “prices were so high we decided to go to Bay Shore. We caught a Bay Shore car to the beach where lunches of fish and swimming and things of that sort were...we saw many beautiful homes in the suburbs along the way. When we got to Bay Shore, we went straight to a restaurant and found that they had the same prices as Baltimore restaurants. We then decided to go to the cafeteria across the street and had a good dinner.”

On Monday July 29, 1918, they dressed up and went to the capital again. Frances wrote, “I was crazy about Washington and knew where everything was. We left for Philadelphia in the afternoon and I hated to leave. The only places we didn’t see were those closed to the public because of the war.”

After arriving in Philadelphia Frances wrote, "Although the depot was small, dirty and it was raining, it [Philadelphia] had an air which made me like it at once...The doorman



Above: Frances Massey Bowles in her 40s.

lifted me out of the taxi, and we went into the hotel. Uncle Charlie got us two rooms for \$3 a day...Mama and I had a lovely room, which was 406. We saw some women with blue suits on, and the clerk told Uncle Charlie that there were 24 of them and they were Red Cross Nurses who would sail the next day for France. It was late so we went downstairs to the Café but liked to have never been waited on and when it came, we were disappointed and it cost awful." That evening everyone settled accounts and "Uncle Charlie found out about the boats and trains to Atlantic City where I was going to swim, being crazy about swimming after doing so at Chesapeake Beach in Washington."

On Wednesday July 31, 1918, they decided not to go to Atlantic City because it was raining, but to see Philadelphia instead. They took a

ferryboat and saw a ship being built and "saw seven camouflaged ships. They were painted all colors and looked very warified. The ferryboat we rode on had a place for wagons and cars underneath and people rode above." Frances wrote, "We walked under an elevated train (which was the first I had ever seen) which was run by electricity. The whole train was red. The streets we walked on were cobblestone and very rough. We walked up a narrow street and passed a fish market. Every kind of fish imaginable was there and right next to it was a fruit market...There were pieces of ice on top, about every ninth fish." Frances and her family saw Carpenter's Hall and Independence Square. They took a sightseeing tour that cost \$1 for a round trip. "We had to wait about 30 minutes for a crowd to come up, then we all four got on the back seat and I wrapped the big blanket around me as it was cold, and I didn't have any coat. People looked at me, but I didn't mind." After seeing thirty-seven different sites, all enumerated in Grandmother's journal, the guide said, "There are 1,900 saloons and 900 churches in Philadelphia." The guide offered 25 post cards for 25 cents and Frances bought them.

“As we could think of nothing else to do, we decided to catch the train and go to New York. We got our luggage and went to the Depot” and the train was only five minutes



Above: The family of Frances Massey Bowles on March 25, 1940, in Little Rock, Arkansas. Left to right, beginning in back: Thomas John Massey Bowles (called “Buddy” in the family, but by everyone else he was called “John”; 1925-2002), Mildred “Milly” Jane Ellen Bowles (1923-2000), Patricia “Pat” Anna Elizabeth Bowles (1927-2006;-my mother), Thomas “Tom” Holland Bowles (1902-1993), Nancy Virginia Bowles (1930-2016), and Frances Ewell Massey (1904-1974).

late. “We went through the well-known Hudson tunnel. I choked as usual, but there wasn’t any smoke. My ears felt awfully funny.” They went into the huge Penn Railroad Station and “gave a porter our baggage and told him, ‘Hotel Chelsea.’ The Porter didn’t know the place but said he would take us to ‘one that was fine.’” They walked a number of blocks in the rain “while Mama went under the red umbrella with me...The porter walked in the rain and carried our three heavy grips” to the Hotel Strand, 12 stories high. After arriving at the hotel, Frances told Uncle Charlie that the Porter had not been paid. “Uncle Charlie said he didn’t believe in tipping porters, so I guess he thought the porter was carrying our baggage for his health. We unpacked and went to bed tired out. Mama left the top of the window up because she was afraid she would walk in her sleep. I can still hear (November 20, 1919) the sound of the rain and distant rumble of Broadway as

Worthy to Remember an Abridgment

heard then” (Note: Much of the journal was completed a year or more later from notes Grandmother had taken.)

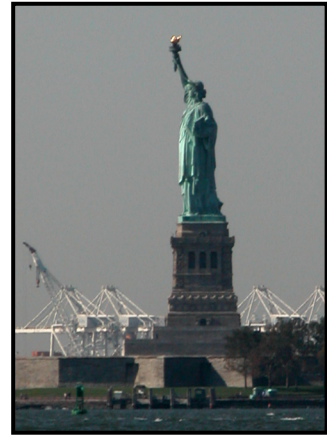


Sunday July 21, 1918.
They woke me up real early and said they had decided to go to see the Great Monastery. Miss Best ate breakfast with us and Mabel asked a Miss Clifford to go with Miss Best and us. They all came to our house and we got a lunch and started. It was about 12:30 when we left because everybody but Mama & I had gone to church and we had lunch before we left too. We took a 73 rookly car and rode to the end of the line. We had to walk half a mile to the monastery. I took a picture of it when we first saw it and mama took a picture of us standing beside it. I had on my dark blue silk dress and travelling hat and thought that I looked real cute. We went on the inside and saw all the

On Thursday, August 1, 1918, they went shopping for a new hat for Aunt Lucy. “She got the one that I wanted her to get...I told Mama that I would go up the moving stairway to the elevated and wait for them there. This was on Broadway and Sixth Avenue. Mama didn’t hear what I said and as I started up, she grabbed me and screamed, ‘Oh! Frances!’ and she just stood there and shook sore. It had scared her to death.” They rode a train to the aquarium, located at “the very end to the south of Manhattan Island. The most interesting thing I saw was a little sea horse, which was about three inches long. It had a head like a horse and a tail like a mermaid.” They then took a ferry to see the Statue of Liberty and from there took a ferry to Staten Island. On the boat they could see the skyscrapers of the “Manhattan Island skyline” in the distance and Frances noted that it “was lovely to see.” They went back to their hotel, “Washed up and refreshed ourselves, and then went to *Child’s* for dinner. After a good dinner we all went to sleep...My head was swimming from riding on boats and the elevated and my eyes hurt, but I had enough sense to notice what a fascinating, lovely, monotonous noise the distant rumble of Broadway and the misty drip made.”

Top left, left to right: Julia Bowles (granddaughter), Patricia Bowles Crocker (daughter), Maxine Bowles (daughter-in-law), Frances Massey Bowles, Mildred Bowles Brooks (daughter), Jane Bowles (granddaughter) and John “Buddy” Bowles (son), in June 1973. Left, left to right: Patricia Bowles Crocker (daughter), Mildred Bowles Brooks (daughter), Arline Smith (cousin) and Frances at Arline’s home in Dallas County, Arkansas, in June 1973. Above: A page from the journal of Frances Massey, dated July 21, 1918.

The next day they all went to Wall Street and watched the brokers trade on the exchange

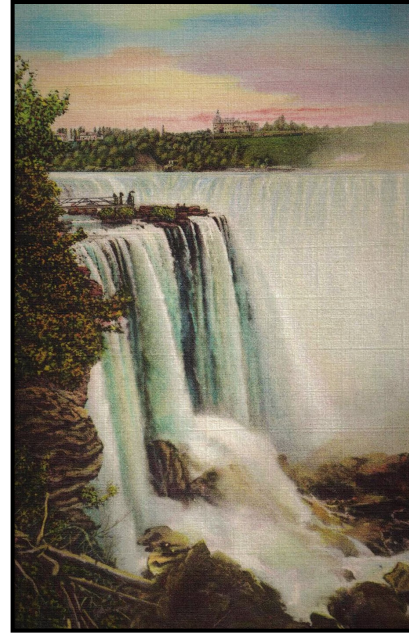


Top: New York City in 1918. **Above left:** Brooklyn Bridge in New York. **Above middle:** The Woolworth Building, the tallest skyscraper in the world when Frances visited New York in 1918. **Right:** View of the Manhattan Island skyline from the Brooklyn Bridge in October 2003. Frances saw the Woolworth Building, which she wrote “was very beautiful and the tower was grand.” She also saw the Brooklyn Bridge, and the Manhattan skyline, which she wrote, “was lovely to see.” **Middle right:** The Statue of Liberty. I took this photograph from a cruise ship as my sister, Nancy, and I returned from Bermuda to New York in October 2003. Frances and her mother, Jessie Smith Massey, took a ferry from Manhattan Island to see the famous statue in 1918.

the tower was grand.” From there they took a ferry to Coney Island. “Aunt Lucy and I bought some hot, salted, buttered corn on the cob, which was certainly good. We went down to the beach and so when mama saw a woman and man drunk sitting in plain sight loving each other, she got up and said we must go home and go home we did. Mama said that she was as tired as a bear and Aunt Lucy said so too. They insisted that we all go to bed, but Uncle Charlie said that we were going to two picture shows that he was crazy to see and we’d be in by midnight. So, as I tell it now (this is March 19, 1920), I can’t help but laughing at the trick that we played on them, for Uncle Charlie wanted to show how a

“for about half an hour.” Uncle Charlie rode up the elevator to the 56th floor of the Woolworth Building, the elevators “that were as fast as lightning. Even a slow one at home frightens me. It was very beautiful and

real New Yorker has a good time and I sure saw. Uncle Charlie and I started out down Broadway and soon got into a big crowd of merry-makers. It was then about 8:00 o'clock



Above: Old post card of Washington D.C. Frances, her mother, Jessie Smith Massey, her aunt, Lucy Massey Klein, and Mabel's husband, Charlie Klein, went to the top of the Washington Monument in 1918. Right: Old post card of Niagara Falls. They took an elevator to the foot of the falls, which Frances wrote were "wonderful." Lower right: Carpenter's Hall in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania. Frances wrote that she saw Carpenter's Hall and Independence Square as well as "seven camouflaged ships. They were painted all colors and looked very warified."



and the lights were just being turned on. After hurrying along for three or four blocks...I saw a sign advertising Anheuser-Busch and it was perfectly glorious. It was a large eagle flapping its wings. The wings were made to flap by turning on and off electric lights. We looked into a large handsome dining room where ladies in low evening dresses were having dinner. We saw everything there was to see on Broadway and then went down 42nd Street...Uncle Charlie bought a box of candy, and we went to see *Going Up*. We had seats on the second balcony and Uncle Charlie bribed the usher to give us ones on the 1st balcony. We laughed until our sides hurt, and when Uncle Charlie asked a question, I was laughing so hard that I couldn't answer him. It certainly was fine...After the show was over we went back to the hotel and found that it was nearly 12:30. I told mama about the show while undressing and she didn't mind our going, but Aunt Lucy frowned a little, but not nearly as much as she would have had she known all about all we did. I slept good the rest of the night and dreamed about the play, with the songs running through my head."

On Saturday, August 3, 1918, everyone went to the library and the Metropolitan Museum of Art and saw many more famous sights within the city. In the afternoon they saw *The Kiss Burglar*, a play on 42nd Street. Then they packed and caught a 9:20 evening train to Buffalo, New York.

On Sunday morning Frances was in the dressing room on the train when she saw "the

prettiest Japanese lady in the darlinest blue silk kimono with embroidered flowers all over it. When she went out of the dressing room I followed her and she went to the seat back of us and sat down with a little Japanese man, who wore glasses and was very ugly. Aunt Lucy and Uncle Charlie, who disagree on every subject and who love to argue, said the man was a Chinaman. Mama didn't know nor care which he was (she never does because she doesn't like to fuss and lets me fuss for her) so I had it out alone with them. We dropped the subject when mama mentioned breakfast."

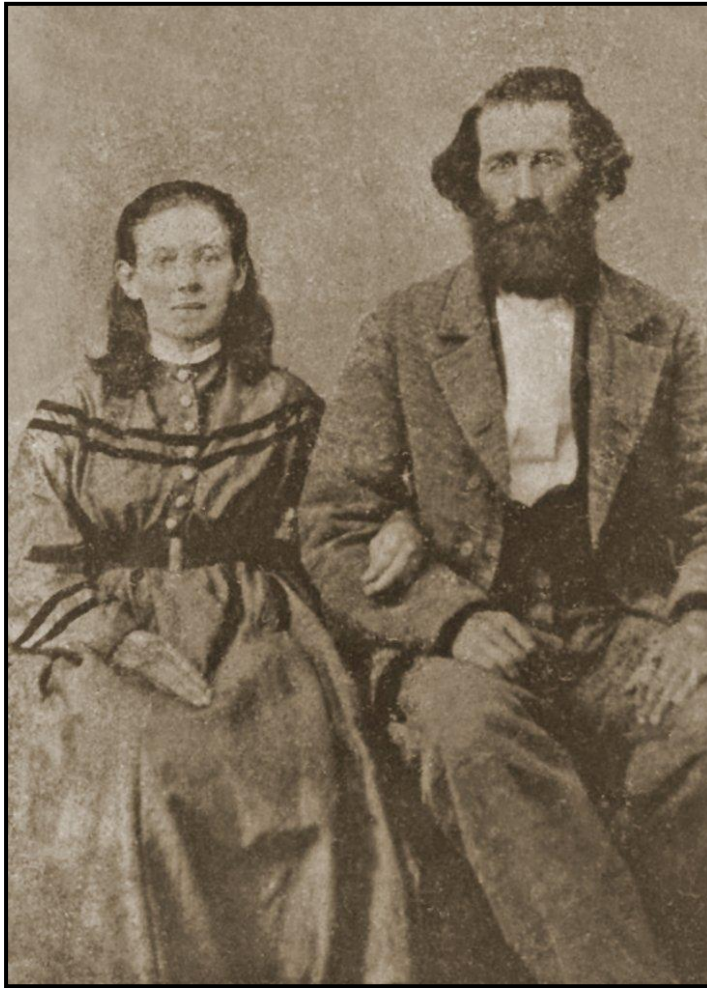
They got off the train at "the ugly, small, dirty underground railroad station" in Buffalo and waited for Uncle Charlie's brother, "Uncle Fred," and who looked "like him sort of," to pick them up. They rode around Buffalo in his automobile and saw "Delaware Avenue, the most beautiful street in the city and then went home to dinner. After dinner we decided to go to Niagara Falls." Fred had a daughter named Alice that was a year younger than Frances. "Alice and I cut up all the way out and back... We went to the Falls, which are wonderful. We rode the elevator and looked up at the falls from the side at the foot of the Falls. The water looked a light green and crystal white in places. Then Uncle Fred drove into a shady place where we had lunch. Then we went out to Prospect Point and got another good view of the Falls. Mama, Alice and I got on a streetcar and rode across a bridge into Canada. We went all up in Canada for 20 miles and then crossed back over the river into the United States on a great suspension bridge. All the men on the streetcar had to tell their age and swear to it, for officials were afraid that they were resisting the draft."

"Coming back we stopped at Lewistown and a man selling books and post cards got on the car. He gave everyone a book to look at and when he came back to take them up Mama told him that she would like one only she had just a dime. He gave her one with his compliments and didn't want to take the dime. The next time when he gave out the cards, he gave Alice a set of 10 cards. As that was the last car, he came back to Niagara Falls with us. He and Mama had a grand time talking of Little Rock, Hot Springs, and the rest of Arkansas. As it was late I took a bath and went to bed. I slept with Helen, and she gave me an ice cream cone that Uncle Charlie had brought home. I gave Jim, the dog, my cone and I ate the ice cream."

Grandmother spent the rest of her trip in Buffalo. She visited with relatives and friends of the family and made some little side trips. One boy liked her, but he already had a girlfriend, so Frances did not try to impress him. She wrote, "Lloyd didn't like it because I didn't talk to him, but I didn't have anything to say, and I knew he could dream of his girl." While Frances was saying her goodbyes "Lloyd kissed me (nearly knocked me over I was so surprised)." They took the train to Erie, Pennsylvania, then to Cleveland and arrived in Little Rock on August 17, 1918. Frances wrote, "Everything looked just as usual and Dad better [than usual] when he came home the next day. I sure was glad to get on solid ground and stop moving."

On March 25, 1921, Frances wrote, "Now I'm restless and would give anything to be on the move again. Signed F. E. M. The End."

In the back of her Journal, Grandmother wrote in her notes that this was “the first big trip I’ve ever taken. I visited three months in Nashville, Arkansas, the summer of 1916; Rochester, Minnesota, and Chicago, Illinois, in September 1919; and Ferndale, Arkansas, on a two-week camping trip in June 1920.”



Above: George Whitfield Morgan (1825-1879) and Harriet Ophelia Lay (1839-1913) (2nd Great-Grandparents) on their wedding day in 1866. George and his brother, Nelson Morgan (born 1815), were Confederate soldiers and fought in the Battle of Port Hudson in 1863.

As far as I know, Grandmother never went on any other major trips outside of Arkansas until she went to Virginia with her daughters, Mildred Brooks and Patricia Crocker, in 1970. She loved history and there are many places she would have loved to have seen, but it was not arranged, and she died at the age of seventy in her home in Little Rock, Arkansas, on May 5, 1974.

The history of a person’s life usually ends at the death of that individual, but a rare and wonderful event took place seventeen years after she died in June 1991. Frances appeared to two of her grandchildren. William Wooten had had a falling out with his mother and did not speak to her for about ten years. One night he had a dream in which Grandmother appeared to him and said that he needed to talk to his mother. My sister, Cathy Martin, had been living

alone in Laredo, Texas, and had not been in touch with her family for a while. Apparently, the same evening that Grandmother visited William, she also appeared to Cathy and said that the family needed to get closer together or that Cathy needed to get closer to her family. Cathy called mother and told her what had happened and when Mother talked to her sister, Nancy Bowles Wooten, she learned that William had recently called and said that Grandmother had also appeared to him. Nancy cried when William finally called her. (The Biography of Frances Bowles, pages 81-104)

On the Losing Side in the Longest Siege in American Military History

George “Whit” Whitfield Morgan (2nd Great-Grandfather; 1825-1879) moved with his

father's family from Montgomery County, North Carolina, to Pontotoc County, Mississippi, before moving farther west to Drew County, Arkansas, in 1858.

During the Civil War, he enlisted March 3, 1863, at Auburn, Arkansas, as a private in Company F, 18th Regiment Arkansas Infantry under Captain John Brent and Colonel R. H. Crockett. His older brother, Nelson Morgan (born 1815), was later in the same company. Both brothers fought in the Battle of Port Hudson and were paroled after their army surrendered on July 14, 1863.

“The siege of Port Hudson began on May 23, 1863. Roughly 30,000 Union troops, under the command of Major General Nathaniel P. Banks, were pitted against 6,800 Confederates, under the command of Major General Franklin Gardner.”



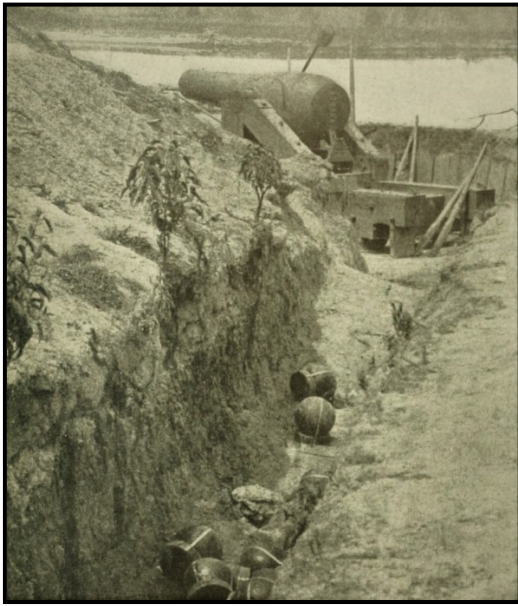
“On the morning of May 27, and again on June 14, the Union army launched ferocious assaults against the four-and-a-half-mile long string of earthworks protecting Port Hudson. These actions constituted some of the bloodiest and most severe fighting in the entire Civil War.”

Top: Ron Martin (1948-2012), second great-grandson of George Whitfield Morgan, kneeling beside his grave in February 2000. Above: Signature of George Whitfield Morgan on his military papers in July 1863.

“As the siege continued, the Confederates nearly exhausted their ammunition and were reduced to eating mules, horses and rats. When word reached Gardner that Vicksburg had surrendered, he realized that his situation was hopeless and nothing could be gained by continuing the defense of Port Hudson. Surrender terms were negotiated, and on July 9, 1863, after 48 days and thousands of casualties, the Union army entered Port Hudson. The siege became the longest in American military history” (*Port Hudson State Commemorative Area*, pages 1-3).

The men on both sides fought valiantly and suffered greatly. Captain Richard L. McClung of the 15th Arkansas Infantry Regiment wrote, “We lived on fire and excitement. We stayed in the ditches in the mud and water in the sunshine—in the blood of fallen comrades—till the night of the 8th July and on the ninth were surrendered. It was here that I was bespattered with the blood and brains of my comrades—stepped across their bodies to give orders—lay on the very boards at night on which they had fallen and tinged them gory red...” Confederate Lieutenant John I. Kendall wrote, “Exhausted by long hours on duty, the men would frequently fall asleep at their posts, and after the fierce rays of the

sun had beat down on them for an hour or so they would wake up delirious. Some fell asleep in the sun and never woke again.”



Confederate Lieutenant Howard C. Wright wrote, “On the 1st of July a wounded mule was killed and cut up for experimental eating ...Rats...were also caught by many officers and men, and were found to be quite a luxury...The stock of sugar and molasses was put to good use by the troops in making a weak description of beer...kept at the lines by the barrel full and drunk by the soldiers in preference to the miserable water...Continuous exposure to the sun, rain and night dews brought on much sickness, materially reducing our effective strength. Our stock of medicines proved to be even shorter than our stock of provisions, and with a large and constantly increasing list of chills and fever cases the quinine was exhausted.”

Above: Photograph of one of the biggest Confederate canons on the Mississippi River at Port Hudson taken soon after the battle. Right: Confederate improvised structures for the garrison at Port Hudson. The soldiers suffered terribly but fought valiantly on both sides. Even though they were outnumbered five to one, the Union suffered much greater losses with 10,000 casualties compared to the South’s 1,000 casualties. Whit and Nelson Morgan survived and, according to the terms of surrender, were paroled and released to go home.



After the war, Whit married **Harriet Ophelia Lay** (2nd Great-Grandmother; 1839-1913) in 1866, when he was forty-one and she was twenty-seven years old.

He moved to Tyro in Lincoln County, Arkansas, where he owned eighty acres of land and took care of his widowed mother. They had seven children, including **Anna Morgan** (Great-Grandmother; 1869-1955).

Whit’s health failed him and his doctor advised a sea voyage. Whit was financially secure, so in 1873 he took his wife, Ophelia, and their three small children from Arkansas to New Orleans, where they boarded a ship. They journeyed around the southern end of South America and up the west coast to California, where they stayed for three and a half years. As his health did not improve, they returned to Tyro, Arkansas (probably by train), where Whit died on November 29, 1879, and was buried in Tyro Cemetery. (Anna Morgan had fond memories of California, and after her husband died moved from Arkansas

to California with some of her daughters in 1939. She died in Southern California in 1955.)

After Whit's death, Ophelia married **William Jackson Bowles** (also a 2nd Great-Grandfather; 1819-1887) of Desha County, Arkansas, a wealthy planter and merchant. He was sixty-one and she was forty-two years old at the time of their marriage in 1881. They were married six years, until William's death in 1887. (The Morgan Family, pages 13-19)

Built the Finest House in Lavaca County, Texas

In 1836 **Allen Garrison Lay** (3rd Great-Granduncle; 1810-1864) married **Mildred E. Dancy** (3rd Great-Grandaunt; 1818-1898) and moved from Tennessee to Holly Springs, Mississippi, before moving in 1850 to near Columbus, Colorado County, Texas. A year later the family moved from Columbus into the Cheney settlement in Lavaca County, Texas, on the Navidad River. Allen Lay died in 1864 while returning from Mexico and was buried on the King Ranch in south Texas. James Erastus Lay (1843-1916), son of Allen and Mildred Dancy Lay, a Civil War soldier, medical doctor and artist, wrote his autobiography for the *Hallettsville Herald*, in 1907, and it was reprinted when he died on the front page of the December 22, 1916, issue. James was so prominent and well thought of that every business in Hallettsville closed for his funeral.



Above: **James Erastus Lay** (equivalent to a 2nd Great-Granduncle; 1843-1916). He was a pioneer of south, central Texas, a Confederate soldier, and a medical doctor, who once owned the finest home in Lavaca County, Texas. He was thoughtful and as he reflected on his life wrote, "In conclusion, I wish to speak a word of praise for the Negroes...They were trustworthy and proved to be the strong right arm of the white man in subduing these wilds... During the Civil War...they cultivated our fields and actually saved us from ruin." James was so well thought of, that when he died, the entire city of Hallettsville closed all of its businesses for his funeral.

Autobiography of James Erastus Lay (equivalent to 2nd Great-Granduncle; 1843-1916): "Almost the entire span of my life has been passed in this county, being only a small child when we arrived here. We emigrated from Tennessee; came overland in wagons, about two months being required to make the journey. We reached the Turner farm about eight miles above Columbus on the west side of the Colorado River, just a few days before Christmas 1850. There we made our first crop. It was a fruitful year, but we sold our cotton for about five cents. Father, however, desired to push on further, where land was cheaper and believing this county to be the right place, settled here in December 1851. We lived three years on the west side of Navidad River, on the Gerald

farm, now the property of R. B. Allen, Esq. In the year 1854 we bought two sections of land on the east side of the river opposite to where we first settled paying 75 cents per acre for it, on which the family resided till 1878. When we removed to that place my



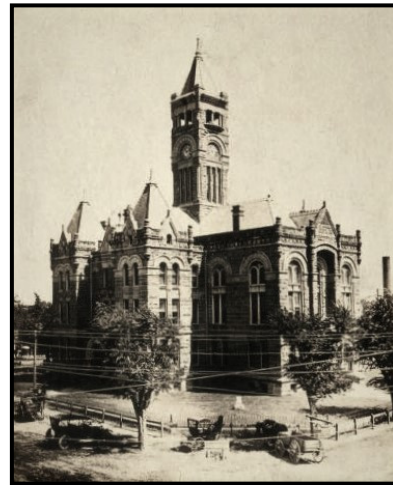
Above: Old photograph of downtown Hallettsville, the county seat of Lavaca County, Texas. James Erastus Lay (equivalent to a 2nd Great-Granduncle; 1843-1916) settled in Hallettsville after the Civil War. He did well as a medical doctor for the community and built a new home northeast of the county courthouse in 1878-1882. It was considered the finest home in Lavaca County during his lifetime and was placed on the National Register of Historic Places in 1971. **Below:** The Lavaca County Courthouse, which was built in 1897. It was also placed on the National Register of Historic Places in 1971.

father said, ‘*Now here we will make our home, for we have at last found rich lands, good range, excellent timber, lasting water, an abundance of wild game (he was a great hunter) and the finest climate in existence*’ [italics mine]. Here my life began in this wild, primitive region, amidst the howl of wolves, the growls of ferocious bears and an occasional scream of the panther.”

“In this rough life, far removed from schools, civilization and all that tends to luxury and ease, I spent my youth.”

“Sometimes, when I cast a glance back across this gulf of buried peoples and things of more than fifty years, I feel as one who had lived through two mornings of time on earth.”

“That half-century was fraught with more mighty deeds and changes affecting the human race than any other fifty years since history began. One may imagine that those were times of ease and contentment; they were not. On the contrary, they were years of arduous labor, hardships and danger. We had to clear away the primeval forests for our farms; houses, shelter, and fences had to be constructed from the timber and that too, with very imperfect tools and implements. Our children could not be schooled, and this was a source of continual anxiety, as it was impossible to procure teachers and other necessities for instruction. Books were scarce and high priced. Newspapers—our great source of education—were simply out of the question.”



“With our new lands, and our imperfect implements and unacquainted with a proper mode of cultivation, occasionally a crop of corn failed, and this meant for us of a necessity

a season without bread for none could be imported as now. In those seasons of dearth, we would use jerky and dried beef and venison for bread and the flesh for meat. The last was always abundant as game and wild cattle were plentiful almost everywhere. The wild cattle and horses were so troublesome in leading astray our gentle stock that the neighbors would occasionally set a day and all go with dogs and guns and kill them. I remember on one hunt about a hundred were killed in a single day—fine fat cattle—shooting them in the drive as they came up with them and letting them lie for the wolves to devour, and for three or four nights one would have thought that all the imps in pandemonium had been turned loose, so fearful were their howlings over this rich feast.”



Above: An early 1900s photograph of a gas station in downtown Hallettsville, the county seat of Lavaca County, Texas. It was just a few block away from the home of James Erastus Lay (equivalent to a 2nd Great-Grand-uncle; 1843-1916). James wrote, “Sometimes, when I cast a glance back across this gulf of buried peoples and things of more than fifty years, I feel as one who had lived through two mornings of time on earth.” He died in 1916 so he lived through possibly the greatest changes in the history of mankind. He witnessed the beginning of flight, automobiles, movies, telephones, and electricity.

“Our colony consisted of only four or five families: John Cheney, familiarly known as Uncle Dick, lived about four miles southwest on the west side of the Navidad River, on the farm now occupied by his son, Polk Cheney; Rabon Cheney, son of John Cheney lived about two miles to the west on the opposite side of the river on a farm now owned by R. B. Allen; a daughter, Mrs. Henry Thomas, was a late resident of our city; Dock Cheney and Mrs. Mattie Nichols, daughter and son, are also residents of our city; Mrs. Mimi lived about four miles from us on the west side of the river. Ben Force, Joseph Lowe, Felix Green, A. J. Rickman and a few others came two or three years later and settled in the same district; Jack Woodward lived about seven miles west on the place now occupied by Ernest Pagel; Manoah Willis came soon after and settled the place on which lives Lep Maschek; his son, T. J. Willis, is a citizen of our city. That constituted about all the inhabitants near us for some years. East of us there was no one nearer than the Colorado River; over the north and west parts of the county settlers were scattered along ten to twelve miles apart. In those days all within twenty or thirty miles were considered neighbors. I have often known them to come from that distance to a house raising or some such occasion, and I assure you that they would have a jolly time especially if they had some dram. Occasionally altercations would occur, but usually a fist fight would end it and all part friendly to meet at the next gathering, wounds all healed and differences forgotten.”

“I remember the many stories told at such gatherings. As a boy I was, and am still fond of

the marvelous, so I would intensely listen to the tales of bear and panther hunts, of Indian fights and escapes—to the wonderful things seen and deeds performed at San Jacinto and



Above: Home of James Erastus Lay in Hallettsville, Texas, in June 2003. Built between 1878 and 1882, it was once considered the finest home in Lavaca County, Texas. Below: Monument of Dr. James Lay and his second wife, Ada Bowen (1859-1931), in Hallettsville Cemetery, and the gravestone of his first wife, Jennie Cheney Lay (1850-1880), in Hallettsville Memorial Park.

of hardships endured during the ‘runaway scrape’—that was the name given the pell-mell retreat before Santa Anna’s invasion in 1836. No great while had elapsed and the deeds that set them free from their thralldom were still green in their memories.”

“We had arrived after these mighty occurrences and of course were considered green from the States. Some of our friends had lost relatives in the ‘runaway scrape,’ among whom was Uncle Dick Cheney’s wife, the grandmother of Mrs. Nichols and Dock Cheney.”

“Petersburg, our county seat...consisted of half a dozen business houses of different kinds, the principal one being a general merchandise store by A. K. Judd. A very rudely constructed building in the center was used for the courthouse. The little village continued to thrive until its rival won the ascendancy and our city (Hallettsville) became the capital. Petersburg as a town is no more...”

“The Zumwalts lived not far from Petersburg on Rock Creek, and for some years we hauled corn and cotton to his mill, which ran by water power. Think of hauling cotton twelve miles over rough roads to be ginned by a mill that could by a strenuous effort turn out two bales per day.”

“...In early days with rough living, common food and open houses, few people were sick, and if one chanced to fall ill they learned to medicate themselves with the indigenous herbs, such as button-willow, squaw weed, will peach and many other kinds and were quite successful...”

“The moral status of the country was little thought of. Once in a great while the people



would gather at a neighbor's house to hear Uncle Johnnie Cook or some traveler preach. No discussion of different points of doctrine in those days, very much as at present, very few cared what another believed—or indeed if he believed at all, but listened attentively to the sermon simply because it was preaching. . . Mrs. Mary Green taught the first Sunday school I ever saw—away down in the wild woods under a rudely constructed board shelter, she patiently endeavored to instill into our young minds the rare beauties and good news of the old, old story. How different the Sunday schools then and now. And



Above: Family of James Erastus Lay, Jr. (1878-1917; son of Dr. James Erastus Lay, Sr., 2nd Great-Granduncle) about 1910. Standing from left to right: Dr. Lay, James E. Lay, III (1902-1989), Leila Lay (1903-1966), and Catherine Emildred Lay (1906-1925). Seated: Mary Frances Byrnes Lay (1878-1968), holding Annie Louise Lay (1909-1996). Below: Louella Bowen “Lulu” Lay (1884-1982; half-sister of James Erastus Lay, Sr.

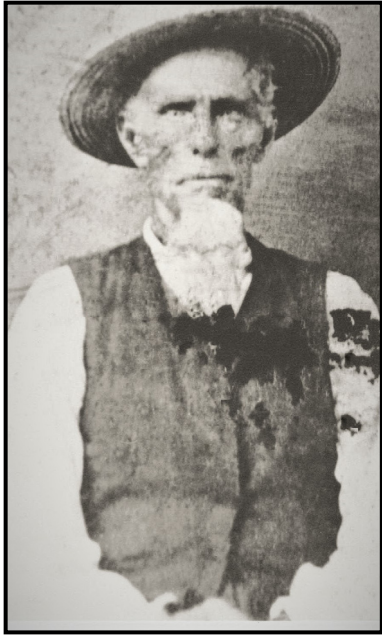
I really do not think those of that primitive time would suffer by the comparison. We had no music, only the songs of wild birds and the whispering winds that wooed the sun-kissed leaflets; no printed or illustrated helps, only one book—the Bible.”



“In conclusion, I wish to speak a word of praise for the Negroes. We all owned more or less in our little colony. They were obedient and trustworthy and indeed proved to be the strong right arm of the white man in subduing these wilds and fitting them for the coming generation. During the Civil War, when so many of our young and old men were called to the front, leaving our wives and mothers to manage, and in many instances, they were left widows, the Negroes stayed at home and cultivated our fields and actually saved us from ruin.”

“At this time, when I look abroad upon our lovely, beautiful lands, with its fruitful fields and comfortable, lovely homes—schools thronging with bright eyed children, with nothing to hurt or make them afraid—with churches whose bells, chiming their music and raising the hearts of men toward God—I pause in wonder and ask, ‘How came it to be so?’ My mind then reverts to the Halletts, the Browns, the Mays, the Moores, the Vollen-tines, the Foleys, the Smothers, the Pontons, the Zumwalts, the Pohls, the Laas, the Bennetts and to many others. Yes, I think of those brave sturdy, indomitable pioneer men and

women who laid deep the foundations that made this great progress, this civilization of today possible.” (James Erastus Lay, *Hallettsville Herald*, 1907; reprinted on the front page of the *Herald* at his death on December 22, 1916)



The *Hallettsville Herald* wrote “In Memoriam” for James Lay on the front page of the town’s newspaper.

Left: John L. Richard Cheney, Jr. (1796-1868; father-in-law of James Erastus Lay. Sr., equivalent to a 2nd Great-Granduncle). A historical marker 11 miles southeast at the intersection of FM 530 and CR 124 reads: “The community of Vienna has roots that reach back to the Republic of Texas. Maryland native John Cheney (1796-1868) brought his family to Texas in 1830 when Native Americans, including his wife Lucy, were expelled from their home in Georgia. Cheney served as Constable and Justice of the Peace in what was then Colorado County. His home on the west bank of the Navidad River, once including more than 7,000 acres, became known as Cheney Settlement. The Cheney family sold off portions of the family farm, and an influx of German, Austrian and Czech immigrants arrived. In 1873, Benjamin Milby opened a post office named Vienna in honor of the Austrian capital.” Today only a church remains of this once viable community.

“In 1861 James Erastus Lay enlisted in the Civil War in Walker’s division, soldiering four years and missed only three days of active service because of a sprained ankle. He was mustered out of service at Vicksburg, Mississippi, at the close of the war, 1865. He came home, and the rest of that year he read medicine under Dr. Homan of Morales. Then he entered the Tulane Medical College—completing the medical course in two years—1867-1868 and began the practice of medicine in his home community on the Navidad. Here he was happily married to Miss Jennie Cheney in the fall of 1868, and in the fall of 1869 he and his young wife, braving the hardships of these times, moved to Hallettsville, locating their home on the crown of the beautiful hill where he lived the rest of his useful life...”

“As a practitioner of medicine, he was one of the most efficient, sympathetic with the suffering ones, and faithful. The nights never got too dark, nor the roads too muddy, nor the weather too cold, and many times on horseback he swam the Lavaca and Navidad Rivers to relieve suffering humanity. But at last, he reached the point in his own physical condition where physicians could not relieve his sufferings nor prolong his life, hence he heroically but calmly submitted to the inevitable.”

“He first professed religion some time during the war in Louisiana. Afterwards for a short while he lapsed into skepticism. But his first wife, being a consecrated Christian woman—a woman of prayer and great faith in God—died such a triumphant death, it made such an impression on his mind, he soon became a Christian man again and lived a faithful life, identified with the Christian church till he was called from labor to rest, December 13, 1916, at 12:10 a. m. He leaves to mourn his departure a wife, five children, and one brother, who is employed by the state at the Harlem plantation as a physician, and four sisters, Miss Angie D. Lay, Hallettsville, Mrs. L. H. Hardy of Throckmorton,

Texas, and two sisters in California, and many friends in tears. But they mourn not as those who have no hope.”

James Lay built “on a knoll overlooking

Right: Battle Flag of Walker’s Texas Division (courtesy of the Texas State Library and Archives Commission), which shows, Mansfield and Pleasant Hill, the two major battles that it fought in. James Lay (1843-1916) was a sergeant in Company A, 12th Texas Infantry, in Walker’s Division, which fought in the Battle of Mansfield on April 8, 1864. It was a Confederate victory. The next month his regiment fought in the Battle of Pleasant Hill. The army sustained heavy losses, but the Federals retreated the next day. It was the north’s last major battle in Louisiana and put an end to Banks’ Red River Campaign. **Below: Gravestone of William Lay** (son of Vincent Lay, 4th Great-Granduncle), and his wife, Sytha, in Santa Clara Utah. William made many sacrifices, traveling thousands of miles to new, previously uninhabited lands. Many of his descendants are still active members of The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints.



the Lavaca River a substantial and imposing house, Norman French in architecture and design. The home was the grandest home in Lavaca County, Texas, which was designed by Victor Hugo, a Frenchman who was a customs officer in the Maximilian regime, stationed at Matamoras. Upon the fall of Maximilian in 1867, he escaped across the Rio Grande, and eventually made his way to Hallettsville, where he settled down. Some years after his arrival, he suffered a prolonged illness and was treated by Dr. Lay. On his recovery, he volunteered to build the house in payment for his services, and in its construction, he used the designs and techniques he had learned as a builder in France” (*Headwaters of Lavaca*

and *Navidad*, page 80). One county historical map of Texas listed this home as the most interesting building to see in Lavaca County. The house was still standing in 2021. (The Morgan Family, pages 23-32)

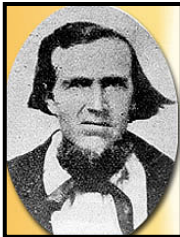
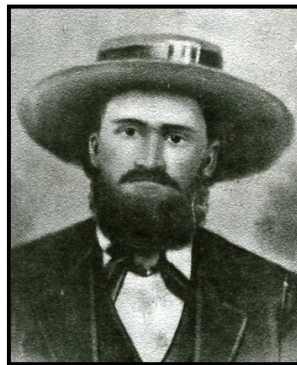


and *Navidad*, page 80). One county historical map of Texas listed this home as the most interesting building to see in Lavaca County. The house was still standing in 2021. (The Morgan Family, pages 23-32)

Joined the Historic Movement of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints West

Vincent Lay (4th Great-Granduncle; about 1791-1836/1840) lived in Mississippi before

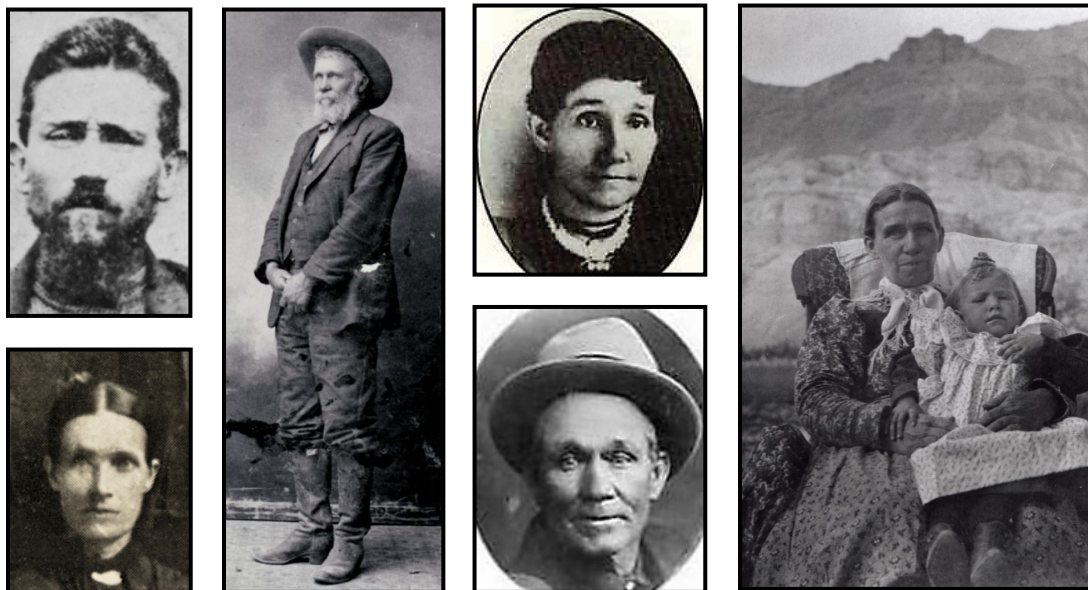
moving to Lawrence County, Tennessee, where he died. He married Rhoda Baker of



South Carolina and they had six children, including William Lay (1817-1886), who married Cynthia Crosby on December 18, 1841, in Monroe County, Mississippi. While living in Aberdeen, Monroe County, Mississippi, she converted to The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints (Mormon), and although William never was baptized into the church, they took part in the church's historic movement west and he followed Brigham Young's instructions.

Top right: Monument in Monroe County, Mississippi, at Mormon Springs where Cynthia Crosby, wife of William Lay (1817-1886; son of Vincent Lay, 4th Great-Granduncle), was probably baptized before 1845. Top left: St. George Temple in Southern Utah, in 2016. Cynthia Crosby Lay was the fourth woman to go through the temple in 1877. Above: Rhonda Elizabeth Lay (1842-1934; daughter of William Lay, son of Vincent Lay, 4th Great-Granduncle) and her husband, Francis Marion Hamblin (1839-1881). His brother was Jacob Hamblin (1819-1886), the famous "Apostle to the Indians (left is his portrait and home)." Francis moved with Rhonda to Kanab, Utah, in 1871, where he ran a dairy, making cheese and butter. From what I have read about Francis, I like him. "He was a tall, slender, well-built man and a bit of a dandy." He lived the Word of Wisdom and never profaned. In 1871-1872, Francis accompanied Major John Wesley Powell's expedition of exploration down the Colorado River. He had only one wife and declared that he wanted no more. He loved to dance and sang at most of the entertainments. Unfortunately, he died in 1881, leaving a wife and nine children, the youngest only two months old. Left: There gravestones are in Kanab, Utah.

William and Elizabeth, with their four surviving children, moved west to Council Bluff, Iowa, where their sixth child, Joseph Lay, was born on June 14, 1848. They moved on to



Above, from left to right: John Taylor Lay (1845-1913; son of William Lay, son of Vincent Lay, 4th Great-Granduncle) and his wife, Rachel Ellen Wiltbank (1852-1931), and John Taylor Lay's brothers and sisters: Joseph Coleman Lay (1848-1917; standing), Nancy Solena Lay (1850-1926), William Vincent Lay (1857-1941), and Emma Jane "Janey" Lay (1852-1938; sitting outside at Lee's Ferry, Arizona, in 1897/1898, with her daughter Bessie Dean (1896-1968).

Salt Lake City, Utah, where their seventh child, Nancy Lay, was born April 7, 1850.

"In 1851, William and Elizabeth settle in San Bernardino, California. They followed a difficult route across the Mojave Desert and faced the privations of settling again. But this time they established a profitable farm in the fertile California soil. Here they had two more children: Emma Lay on March 2, 1852, and Sarah Lay on June 6, 1854. The advance of Johnston's Army in 1857 and the so-called Utah War, prompted a call for the settlers to return to Utah." Most again gave up their homes in obedience to Brigham Young's call.

"The Lays spent the rest of their lives farming in arid southern Utah. He donated a team to help build the St. George Temple, and Sytha was the fourth woman to go through the dedicated temple."

William Lay died in Santa Clara, Washington County, Utah, on March 7, 1886. He and Cynthia ("Sytha" on their monument) are buried in Santa Clara Cemetery. (The Morgan Family, pages 30-31, 34)

Immigrated to America in 1715

Abraham Lay (6th Great-Grandfather; 1700-1785) was born, according to family tradition, in County Cork, Ireland, but no proof has been found. Abraham made a deposition before the court in Fairfax County, Virginia, on May 25, 1771: "Abraham Lay, age 71

years, stated that in June 1715, he came to this country in capacity of Cabin Boy in ship *Robert and John*, Charles Broadwater, Commander, and as well as he remembers, thinks



Left: Broken gravestone of Isaac Dancy (4th Great-Grandfather; 1783-1863), which was buried for many years. It was rediscovered about 20 years ago. He is buried in the trees (above) on his farm, which is located about a mile north of the town named after him: Dancyville, Tennessee.

that the ship was recommended by Messrs. Rozer and Adison or otherwise consigned to them to procure a load of tobacco. He went back to London and sometime in May 1717, he returned to Virginia with Captain Broadwater in the same ship. Lay lived with Broadwater about four years in his dwelling place...and for another three years remained apprentice in caulkers business...and as overseer at Quarter of Broadwaters for himself in the capacity of an overseer, a freeman or hired, that he lived in said Broadwater's service. Deponent made deposition on May 25, 1771, having traveled from Loudoun County, some 29 miles away" (*Lay Family Genealogy*, page 587, by J. Gilbert Lay, published 1971).

Abraham worked for Broadwater, except for three or four years when he worked for himself, until Captain Broadwater's death between 1730 and 1735.

Abraham married **Sarah Grimes** in Loudoun County, Virginia, after it was formed from a part of Prince William County. In 1741 Abraham was a registered voter in Prince William County, Virginia.

During the Revolutionary War, Abraham was a patriot by furnishing supplies for the American army. In 1781 he provided 300 pounds of beef, a wagon, lock and gear for four horses, and a sorrel horse for the army.

Abraham's will was probated in Leesburg, Loudoun County, Virginia, in 1784. Sarah's will was probated in Fairfax County, Virginia, in 1799. Abraham's will reveals that he was very wealthy and owned many slaves. Unfortunately, most of the records of Abraham Lay were destroyed during the Civil War. (*The Morgan Family*, pages 34-36)

Town Named After Him

Isaac Dancy (4th Great-Grandfather; 1783-1863) lived in Dinwiddie County, Virginia,

where he owned 109 acres on “Cox Road” (located eleven miles northwest of the courthouse), three slaves, two horses and a “clothes press.” In 1815/1816 he moved to Wil-



This page: Dancyville Methodist Church that dates from 1850, the oldest in Western Tennessee. Lower left: I’m standing next to the church about 1987. This is where Isaac Dancy (4th Great-Grandfather; 1783-1863) went to church from the time it was a log structure in 1837 until his death in 1863. Dancyville was a prosperous village in the 1800s with schools, churches, “a blacksmith shop run by Isaac Dancy,” and other businesses.



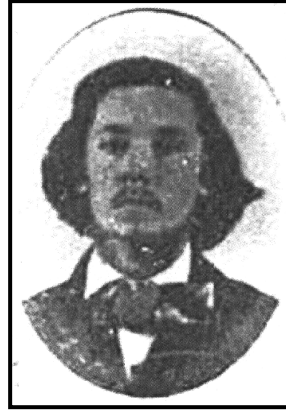
liamson County, Tennessee, before moving with the John Lemon family to Haywood County, Tennessee, in 1831. He lived in Dancyville just two hundred yards from the first Methodist church built in West Tennessee. In the 1840 Haywood County Census, he is shown as the owner of ten slaves. He was buried on his farm at Spring Hill, about a mile north of Dancyville in 1863.

“Dancyville, named after Isaac Dancy, an old settler, is a post village thirteen miles south of Brownsville,” says Goodspeed’s History of Tennessee, published in 1887. Goodspeed continues, “It was established in 1837 by Fennel T. Carpenter and John Southerland, who were its first merchants.”

“Legend has it that when these merchants bought their first stock of merchandise in St. Louis, they were asked where it should be shipped. There was no post office, and the community did not have a name. When the merchants told this, they were asked if there were any kind of businesses in the community. They answered, ‘Nothing except a blacksmith shop run by Isaac Dancy.’ The wholesalers replied, ‘We will call it Dancyville, and ship the goods there.’ So that’s how the boxes were addressed—Dancyville, Tennessee—and they went by boat down the Mississippi and up the Hatchie to Lowery’s Landing. From there they were hauled by ox cart to Dancyville.”

“A petition for a charter to incorporate Dancyville was presented to the County Court in Brownsville in 1854 and approved. There were thirty signers to this petition.”

“Early in the Civil War two companies of soldiers were formed in Dancyville. Quoting



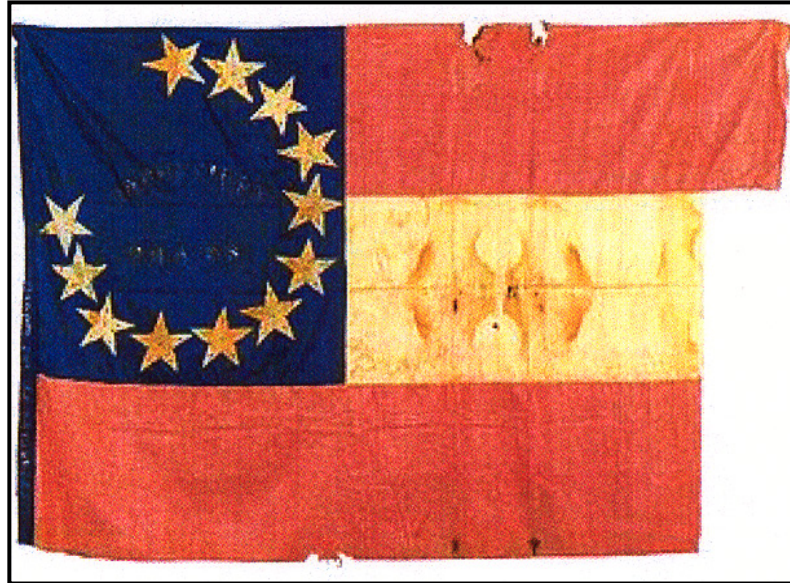
Above: Children of Isaac Dancy (4th Great-Grandfather), left to right: Edward Dancy (1805-1845), Ann Dancy, and Alexander “Sandy” Dancy (1837-1862). Sandy enlisted in the Dancyville Grays (Company A, 9th Tennessee Infantry, C.S.A.) in 1861 and fought in the Battle of Shiloh before dying in the Battle of Perryville on October 8, 1862. Below: Battle Flag of the Dancyville Grays, which was found in an old trunk on a family farm and sold at auction by Sotheby’s for \$48,000 on January 16, 2004. In the center of the silk stars are the words DANCYVILLE GRAYS, rendered in silver-gilt thread. The flag measures seven feet by five and a half feet.

Goodspeed’s history relative to the Civil War, ‘The Dancyville Grays was organized in the spring of 1861 at Dancyville and assigned its position as Company A, Ninth Tennessee Infantry, and Company L, Tennessee Infantry in March 1862

with about sixty-five men. The principle battles in which they were engaged were Shiloh, Perryville, Murfreesboro, Chickamauga, Atlanta, Franklin and Nashville.’” (The Morgan Family, pages 37-47)

Rare Battle Flag Found

Alexander “Sandy” Dancy (3rd Great-Grand-uncle; 1837-1862) was a soldier in the Confederate Army during the Civil War. He enlisted in the *Dancyville Grays*, which was Company A, Ninth Tennessee Infantry, on August 14, 1861. He fought with his company in the Battle



of Shiloh on April 6 and 7, 1862, and then in the Battle of Perryville, where he died on October 8, 1862. Later the regiment fought in the battles of Murfreesboro, Chickamauga, Atlanta, Franklin and Nashville.

“Most members of the company were farmers who came from Haywood and Fayette Counties, Tennessee. Recently, their company flag was found in a trunk on a family farm. It was made by Martha Douglass McFarland and originally presented by the

'Ladies of Dancyville to the *Dancyville Grays*' in 1861. The ladies would be the wives, sisters, sweethearts and mothers of the soldiers of the regiment. Sotheby's of New York City sold the flag at auction, January 16, 2004, for \$48,000. It measures 7 feet by 5.5 feet. In the center of the silk stars are the words DANCYVILLE GRAYS, rendered in silver-gilt thread."

George Washington Martin, son of Abner H. Martin and **Rebecca Dancy** (3rd Great-Grandaunt), was the grandson of Isaac and Sarah Dancy (4th Great-Grandparents). He served the entire war with Company A., from his enlistment at Dancyville to his discharge in 1865. He was wounded at Perryville, captured and "exchanged at Vicksburg about Christmas 1862." He served as a "fifth sergeant." In a questionnaire that he answered at the age of eighty he said, "I have belonged to the Methodist Church for sixty five years and have tried to live a Christian life." He said that his parents owned 180 acres of land, lived in a poplar log home with four rooms, and owned ten slaves.



Above: Gravestone of Alexander "Sandy" Dancy (3rd Great-Granduncle; 1837-1862) in the Dancyville Methodist Cemetery. Sandy is not buried in Dancyville, Tennessee, but in a mass grave in Perryville, Kentucky, where he was killed on October 8, 1862.

John Samuel Martin, son of Jim Martin and **Mary Dancy** (3rd Great-Grandaunt) and grandson of Isaac Dancy and his second wife, Mary Lamb enlisted in February 1863, in Company F, 12th Calvary Regiment of Forrest Division. In the Civil War Questionnaire that he answered when he was seventy-six years old, he called his grandfather Capt. Isaac Dancy, said he was of Scotch-Irish descent, and came from Virginia. He stated that his parents owned a log building with four rooms and did not own any slaves. He walked two miles to school and attended for two years. In the war his total "compensation was a little old hat and jacket perhaps gathered from the waste basket and fifteen dollars in Confederate money." His first engagement took place at Somerville a few days after his enlistment. He was discharged at Gainesville, Alabama, and made the trip home on a mule: "My trip home was on a mule taken from the wagon train and of course had trouble crossing the lines." (The Morgan Family, pages 51-55)

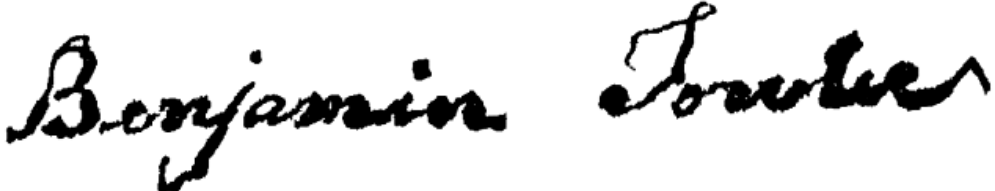
Revolutionary War Soldier at Yorktown

Benjamin Towler (5th Great-Grandfather; 1752-1837) was born in Charles City County, Virginia, in 1752. He moved to Dinwiddie County, Virginia (where he owned land on Hatcher's Run), then to Rutherford County, Tennessee, in 1810, where he settled on Overall Creek near Murfreesboro.

Benjamin was a Revolutionary War soldier and enlisted while he was living in Dinwiddie County. He was at the Battle of Yorktown and witnessed the surrender of Cornwallis.

Benjamin Towler's Application for Revolutionary War Pension was made on October 2, 1832. Transcribed from the original, some parts are impossible to read.

“He stated that he is eighty years of age, and was born in the county of Charles City, state of Virginia, and moved afterward to Dinwiddie County, Virginia, when he was drafted



Above: Signature of Benjamin Towler (5th Great-Grandfather; 1752-1832) in 1832 on his application for a Revolutionary War Pension, which he was awarded. Right: Gravestone of Benjamin Towler in Bowler’s Cemetery, Brazil, Tennessee. Below: Surrender Field at Yorktown, Virginia, where Benjamin Towler witnessed the surrender of the British Army in 1781.



and in the company commanded by Capt. William Lewis—at Petersburg and after being encamped here for some time, he was taken sick, and was placed in the hospital at Petersburg. Dr. Lyon and some other physician or surgeon, he thinks Dr. Levington had charge of the sick at this time. After remaining here for some time he with the other sick was moved up the county through



Chesterfield and into Powhatan and was there stationed until his tour expired, which was three months or—and was dismissed and went home. In the same year he thinks, this he cannot say with certainty he was again called out, and joined the company commanded by Capt. Baker Pegram in the county of Dinwiddie, and—at Petersburg marched through Prince George County to the City Point here we met the enemy and there was a—for a good part of the month, there were other troops there but who commanded them or what troops, they was in he does not recollect.”

“After his commander he—by his Capt. Marched back to Petersburg and then to—and Mackey’s Wells and the Hundred on James River and was marched to a place called Smithfield, he thinks he was in the service under Pegram these months in 1781. He was again called into service before the—of Wallace at York under Capt. Baker Pegram and—at Petersburg and kept on duty and was moved to York and was there three months

at the surrender of Cornwallis. He cannot recollect his Capt. who commanded at York and returned home. He thinks he was in service of this Capt. for two or three months.”

“He is old and infirm he cannot recollect, who in—the service or this uncertainty or circumstances, what according and having lost his discharge, he had no document or record in his possession to—his memory or to call to his recollection the scenes of which he was speaking.”

“He knows of no person now living by whom he can prove his said—which was with him in the service. If ever declarant got discharged for his different periods of service he has lost them. He—every claim whatever to a pension or annuity except the present and—that his name is not on this pension roll of the agency of any state. Sworn to and subscribed the day and year aforesaid.”

“We John Loves clergyman residing in the neighborhood and William Elder and Joseph Farmer residing in the same hereby certify that we are well acquainted with Benjamin Towler, that we believe him to be eighty years of age, which he is reported and believed in the neighborhood, which he resided, to have been a soldier of the revolution, and this we concur in that opinion.”

“Sworn to and subscribed this day and year aforesaid. JOHN LOVES, Clergyman WILLIAM ELDER, and JOSEPH A. FARMER.” (*Roster of Soldiers and Patriots of the American Revolution Buried in Tennessee*, compiled by Lucy Womack Bates, published 1974. Note: Unreadable places in Benjamin Towler’s Application are noted with a —.) (The Morgan Family, pages 56-61)

Had Fifteen Children

In 1883 **Anna Morgan** (Great-Grandmother; 1869-1955) married **Walter Ivanhoe Bowles** (Great-Grandfather; 1853-1937) when she was fourteen and he was thirty years old. “He was a well-to-do merchant, short in stature with thick wavy hair and a Mason.” They lived in Reedville, Arkansas, for six or seven years before moving to Tyro in Lincoln County, Arkansas.

Anna and Walter lived in Tyro for ten to twelve years before moving to Monticello, Arkansas, in 1901. Soon after moving to Monticello their youngest daughter, Valeria Bowles, died on June 15, 1901. The family remained at Monticello, where **Thomas Holland Bowles** (Grandfather; 1902-1993) was born, for about five years before moving to Hermitage, Arkansas. At Hermitage, Walter operated a large dry goods store and lost his fortune of about \$100,000. He allowed customers to buy on credit, but they failed to repay him.

The family moved to Nashville, Arkansas, for a few years and eventually to Little Rock, Arkansas, where Walter died in 1937. His widow, Anna Morgan Bowles, moved to Los Angeles, California, on January 8, 1940, with her daughters, Hallie and Jeanne, and grandson, Billie Craven, whom she had reared. Two of her other daughters were already living in California. Of Anna’s fifteen children, eleven lived to be adults.

Worthy to Remember an Abridgment

Anna Morgan Bowles wrote a letter from California, dated February 3, 1949, to her son, Thomas H. Bowles, and his wife, Frances.



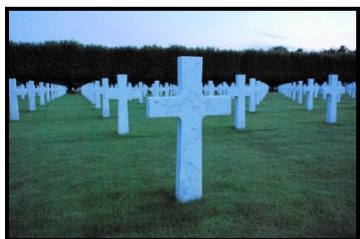
This page: Photographs of Anna Morgan (Great-Grandmother; 1869-1955), Right: Anna with her youngest daughter, Annabeth Bowles, about 1915. She had fifteen children, including my grandfather, Thomas Bowles (1902-1993). Eleven lived to be adults.

“Dear Tom and Frances, I received your Birthday Card and Frances’ letter. I was sorry to hear of Mrs. Kline passing away. Well, we all have to go sooner or later. I am glad to hear that you are getting better. Just you keep right on getting better.”

“I wish you could all have been here for my birthday party. Annabeth gave the party at her apartment with a big cake with 80 candles on it, some blown out. Had lots of fried chicken, roast beef and all the other things to go with it. There were 14 of us. Just my own family. You know five of my girls are living counting Hallie and three grandchildren and three great-grandchildren. They all went in and paid for the party, and we all had a good time. I received a letter from Jane Ellen yesterday. She was thinking of moving to a trailer. Lots of people live in trailers out here and she was so glad you was getting better she said she was just wild to go and see you. We are all well at the present time and hope all your family are well too.”

“Well Frances I don’t know much about the Violins my grandfather (Hardy Morgan, 3rd

Great-Grandfather) made. My father said only two sons learned to play. My father (George Whitfield Morgan, 2nd Great-Grandfather) was one that could play and he was a



Right: Rebecca Martin, age 14, relative of Walter Hall (1880-1918; son of Elizabeth Lay, 2nd Great-Grandaunt), kneeling beside his cross in the St. Mihiel American Cemetery on August 8, 2010. Above: Walter's grave at dusk. The cemetery is located in Thiaucourt, France.



good fiddler as ever one said in those old days. I believe my sister Norrie knows more about our people than I do. She lived so much more time with Mother that she learned more about the family than I did. My brother did visit some of the family in Mississippi, so they learned more about the family than I did. I was always too busy with my own *big, big* family I had no time for anyone else. I did go to church and sent the children to Sunday school as long as they lived with me, but now some of them don't ever think of church anymore. I think I failed with my good intentions and their father never taught his children anything but to fear. He always said you stay right in this house and don't you have anything to do with this or that or you will get in trouble. I am sure he meant well for he did love his children, but they did not get to do a thing unless they slipped out or ran away or eloped and that is what I call teaching fear. You know Tom has a big lot of his father in him. He loves his children so much he fears for them to get out of his sight; something might happen to them. You love them too, but you would not hold them back if they wanted to go. I don't want Tom to think I am blaming him for anything, but I don't anymore because as years go on I have begun to understand people better. So will Tom. You both will live to be very old before you leave this old world. You will live to see I am right. So Buddy is a fireman now. I wish him luck. Tell Nancy and baby hello for me and Pat, too. I will close for this time with love to all. This leaves us all well. Good bye. Love mother, ANNA BOWLES."

"P.S. Hallie is not so well. I heard from her yesterday."

A year before she died, Anna wrote her last letter to her son, Thomas, and made a classic statement about time, "I don't see what goes with the time. It just slips by so fast." And so it goes with all of our lives. (The Morgan Family, pages 70-74)

Died in World War I Battle

George Walter Hall (1880-1918) was born on March 22, 1880, and lived in Lincoln County, Arkansas. He was the son of Joseph Henry Hall (1837-1891) and **Elizabeth Lay**



Above: American soldiers marching to Saint Mihiel, France. Top right: Tank used by the allies in the Battle of St. Mihiel. Right: Omaha, Nebraska, newspaper reporting the American victory at St. Salient that was fought from September 12-15, 1918. George Walter Hall (1880-1918; son of Elizabeth Lay, 2nd Great-Grandaunt) was one of 4,500 men to die in the battle.



(2nd Great-Grandaunt; 1840-1882), who was the daughter of **William Henry Lay** (1815-1855) and **Nancy**

Elizabeth Dancy (1817-1893/1898) (3rd Great-Grandparents). When the First World War began, “Walter” volunteered for the army, entering the 314th Engineering Regiment, 89th Division. He was trained and then sent by ship to France where he engaged the enemy as a combat soldier in the Battle of Saint-Mihiel. He was killed on September 14, 1918, and buried in Saint-Mihiel American Cemetery (Plot B, Row 15, Grave 11) in Thiaucourt, France (also buried in this cemetery is Sergeant Richard T. Martin—same name, no relationship). His sister, Martha “Mattie” B. Hall Nuckols, traveled to France and visited his grave as a *Gold Star* mother (his mother had already died) between 1930 and 1933. My daughter, Rebecca Martin, and I visited his grave in 2010. (The Morgan Family, pages 78-80)

Home Built in 1820 is Still Standing

William Phillips (4th Great-Grandfather; 1773-1862) was born in Wales and immigrated to America in 1795, accompanied by his brother, Philip and an elderly male cousin. They moved to Davidson County, Tennessee, where they lived for a time with another relative. Not long after settling in Davidson County, William met **Nancy Henderson** (4th Great-Grandmother; 1775-1852), a native of Maryland, and they married about 1797. Nancy was the daughter of **William** and **Jane Henderson** (5th Great-Grandparents) of Maryland. For about the next twenty years, William and Nancy lived in Davidson County.

William Phillips served as a colonel in the War of 1812 and was called Colonel Phillips

after the war. He may have personally known Andrew Jackson as they lived near each other in Tennessee.



Above: Descendants of William Phillips (4th Great-Grandfather; 1773-1862) in front of his home that he built in 1820 in Larue County, Kentucky, on Father's Day, June 19, 1994. Left to right: Edward C. Thurman, IV, Alex Todd, Charles Kerry Thurman, Chris Thurman, William Thomas Thurman, Sarah Martin, Richard Martin, Jonathan Martin, Charles Phillips Thurman, Mary Thurman Todd, Edward C. Thurman, III, Kelly Thurman, Edward C. Thurman, Jr. (age 80) and Ron Martin. (After his wife died in 1852, William Phillips moved from Kentucky to Arkansas, where he died in 1862.) This was the first time that a reunion of the Arkansas and Kentucky descendants had met together in over a hundred years.

By 1817 William moved with his family to that part of Hardin County, Kentucky, that later became Larue County, Kentucky. On October 31, 1817, William bought 258 acres of land on Nolynn Creek for \$1,200.

By 1820 he built a handsome, red brick, Federal-style home on his land a couple of hundred feet away from Nolynn Creek. The farm is located on Highway 84, about three and a half miles east of Interstate 65, at the Sonora exit.

William was a prosperous farmer, owning eighteen slaves as shown in the 1830 Census of Hardin County, Kentucky. He was a kind master who considered his slaves members



of his family. This is revealed by the way he talks about his slaves in a letter he wrote in 1856.



Left: My brother and I at the home built by our 4th Great-Grandfather, William Phillips (1773-1862), in 1820 in Lare County, Kentucky, about 1998. We saw the house for the first time in 1994. Above: Sarah Martin, age 9, at the grave of a relative in Sonora, Kentucky, in 1994. Lower left: Gravestone of Nancy Henderson Phillips (4th Great-Grandmother; 1775-1852) in Combs Burying Ground (below) located near Sonora.

In the summer of 1994, on Father's Day, my brother, Ron, and two of my children, Jonathan and Sarah, visited Sonora, Kentucky. We asked a lady at the town cemetery if she knew where any Phillips descendants might be living, and she gave us directions to the home of Edmund Thurman. I knocked on



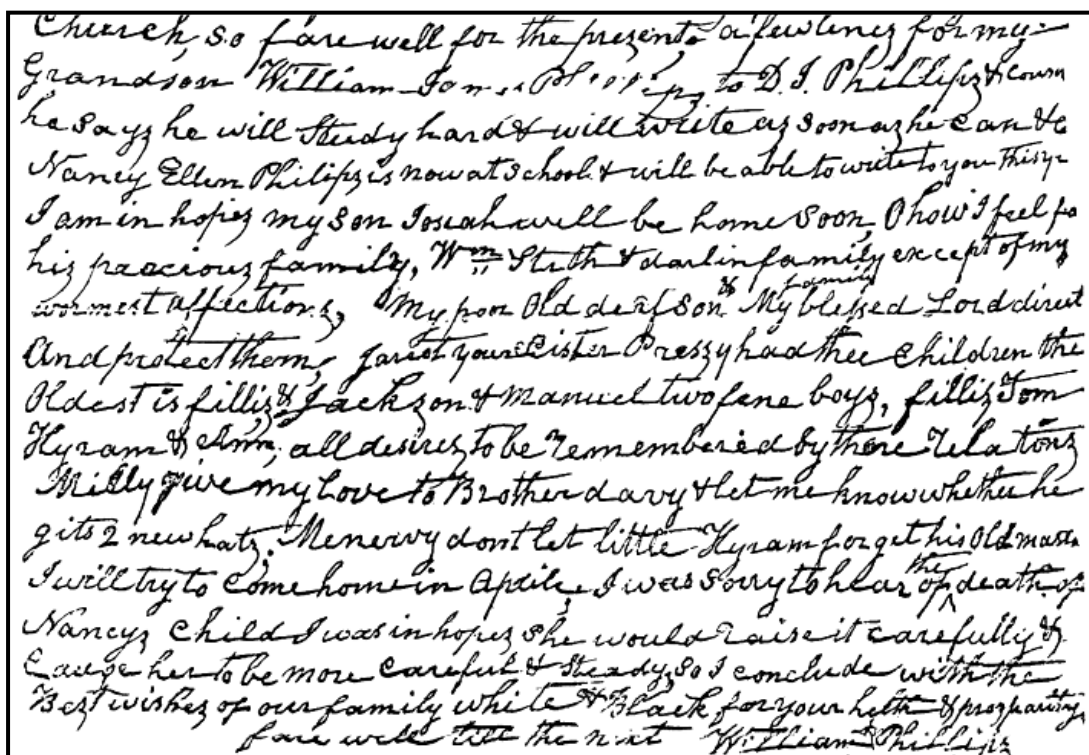
the door and discovered that Edmund's extended family was in the process of having their annual family reunion. They asked me how I knew to come



on that day. I said I didn't know anything about the reunion but happened to come on that day because I had a feeling that I should go east on a trip that summer

with my family. For many years the descendants of William Phillips, through his son Josiah Phillips, had met each year on Father's Day at the home of Edmund Thurman. We had a wonderful time and shared what we knew about the Phillips' family with each other. I learned from my cousin that William Phillips' home that he built in 1820 was

still standing just a few miles away. We all drove together to the old family homestead (see photographs) and afterward visited the grave of Josiah Phillips (3rd Great-Grand-uncle) in Nolynn Baptist Church Cemetery.



Church, so fare well for the presents a few lines for my
Grandson William Son of D. S. Phillips I know
he says he will study hard & will write as soon as he can &
Nancy Ellen Phillips is now at school & will be able to write to you this
I am in hopes my son Josiah will be home soon Oh how I feel for
his precious family, W^m Steeth & darlin family except of my
warmest affection, My poor Old dear son My blessed Lord direct
and protect them, far as your Sister Prissy had three children the
Oldest is fillis Jackson & Manuel two fine boys, fillis Tom
Hiram & John, all desires to be remembered by these relations
Nelly give my love to Brother Davy & let me know whether he
gits 2 new hats, I never do not let little Hiram forget his Old man
I will try to come home in April, I was sorry to hear of death of
Nancy Child I was in hopes she would raise it carefully &
I urge her to be more careful & steady, so I conclude with the
Best wishes of our family white & black for your health & prospering
fare well till the next William Phillips

Above: Last part of a letter written by William Phillips (4th Great-Grandfather; 1773-1862) from Tulip, Arkansas, to his family in Kentucky in 1856.

After the death of his wife, Nancy Henderson Phillips, in 1852, William decided to move from Larue County, Kentucky, to Dallas County, Arkansas, to live with his sons who had moved there about 1846. William wrote a letter (below) to his sons back in Kentucky on June 23, 1856.

“Dallas County, State of Arkansas. My loving Sons, P. P. Phillips; Josiah Phillips; Henderson Phillips & their families, After our love to all of white and black, this will let you know we, with all our relatives, are enjoying good helth at the present time, Thanks be to the good Lord for his gardian care over us. I answered your letter of the 8th of May—perhaps the 8th of June. I have no news of importance. Isaac C. Phillips moved back and settled near us & I believe will do well. Cullen is very steady; Mary is a handsome well-informed Lady; Cordelia, his baby, is a loving child—that’s the amount of I. C. P.’s family. Joseph Cheetum is a compleat smith—they live on the place J. B. Phillips bought of Squire Neely & I hope will do well.”

“My son, I want you to write me & let me know whether you have any thought of moving to this countary or not. I did intend to come home last April not knowing whether you would moove or not I remained here. Your brother thinks me too feeble. If I am spared until next April I will try the Steem [steamboat or train] perhaps the Good Lord will make

choyas of my different changes in life and meet me with his Smiles in the prospect of death, has been my poor unworthy prayer late and early. I am at a loss to find language to express my thanks to the good Lord for the regenerateing power of Grace bestowed on your family & that my darling your grandson D. F. Phillips and my favorite Boy Jarrot should be enabled by Grace through faith to Ground the weappens of rebellion against our redeemer of his Glorious cause the same grace will keep you watchfull & prayerfull and unltimately Land you on the rock of ages where you will meet your Grandpa J. C. W. and your grand N. P. (Nancy Phillips) singing the song of redeeming grace.”

(page 2) “Phillip, my Son: I believe I would been with you in April last had my son J. B. P. been able to raise money to sent you, but he had to pay as security for Madison & Ralph P. something like five hundred dollars which money you aught to had. Our prospects of a crop is good at present. H. H.—my sincere respects to Brother Walter Williams & family; to Brother Dean & my Old prespeerterian Brother Robt Slaughter, Brother Inf Rout & family, Brother Joseph Williams & family; to Brother James & Wm Jefferies & families. Deaton Right do me the favor to write to me & give me the account of the times in my old neighbourhood, my worthy friend & Brother William L. Morris do me the favour to write me one letter & in that letter give me a few lines of my fellowship & standing in the Church, so farewell for the present, a few lines for my Grandson William James Phillips to D. J. Phillips & cousins—he says he will study hard & will write as soon as he can. Nancy Ellen Phillips is now at school & will be able to write to you this year. I am in hopes my son Josiah will be home soon. O how I feel for his precious family. Wm. Stith & darling family except of my warmest affections. My poor old deaf son (& family) My blessed Lord direct and protect them. Jarrot—your sister Pressy had three children—the oldest is Fillis; Jackson & Manuel—two fine boys. Fillis, Tom Hyram & Ann all desires to be remembered by their relatives. Milly, give my love to Brother davy & let me know whether he gits 2 new hatz; Minervy don’t let little Hyra, forget his old master. I will try to come home in April. I was sorry to hear of the death of Nancy’s child. I was in hopes she would raise it carefully & cause her to be more careful & steady. So I conclude with the Best wishes of our family white & black for your helth and prosperity. Farewell till the next, WILLIAM PHILLIPS” (some spelling and punctuation has been corrected, but most has been left intact).

Oil portraits of William and Jane were burned and lost in a descendant’s house fire in 1900. No photographic copies had been made. (The Phillips Family, pages 1-10)

“A Handsome, Well-Informed Lady”

Mary Evelyn Phillips (2nd Great-Grandmother; 1840-1890) moved with her parents from Hardeman County, Tennessee, in 1846 to Dallas County, Arkansas, where her family settled on a farm near Princeton. This was unsettled country where deer, bears and wildlife roamed freely. Her grandfather described sixteen-year-old Mary Phillips as “a handsome well-informed lady.” When she was eighteen, she married **Augustus Burnet “Gus” Smith** (2nd Great-Grandfather; 1832-1890) and moved to a farm he had purchased four miles north of Tulip in Dallas County, Arkansas. Tulip, at that time, was “the center of one of the most pleasant and prosperous communities in the state and its people noted

for their intelligence, refinement and religious culture” (*Fordyce, Arkansas News-Advocate*, Bicentennial Edition, “History of Tulip,” page 11, by Sarah Brown, November 19, 1986).



Above: Mary Evelyn Phillips (2nd Great-Grandmother; 1840-1890) and her husband, Augustus “Gus” Burnet Smith (2nd Great-Grandfather’ 1832-1890). She was suffering from cancer at the time this portrait was made in 1890, and died a few months later on October 11, 1890, at the age of 50. Unexpectedly, Gus died before Mary of a heart attack on July 10, 1890.

Mary managed the farm while her husband was away serving in the Confederate Army during the Civil War. “Fortunately, due to the prominence of several citizens, the Confederate government kept troops in and around Tulip from 1863 on, protecting it from the depredations committed elsewhere in the state by guerillas” (Ibid, page 11).

Mary was injured when a horse ran away and threw her against a post. Cancer formed on her breast and though it was removed, she died after a long painful illness. Augustus died of a heart attack three months before Mary passed away. They were buried beside each other in Hunter’s Chapel Methodist Church Cemetery. This cemetery is adjacent to the Methodist meetinghouse built in 1848 that Mary and Augustus attended during their lifetimes. This meetinghouse stood until 1924, when on its former site another frame church house was built, which was still standing in 2021.

Mary and Augustus had six children, which all lived to maturity: Elizabeth Judith “Betty” Smith (1860-1880), Virginia Lee “Lee” Smith (1864-1937), William Cullen “Will” Smith (1866-1923), Mary Augustus Winfield “Mollie Gus” Smith (1872-1924), **Jessie Isaac**

Smith (Great-Grandmother; 1876-1923) and Edna “Pearl” Smith (1878-1922). All six children were born in Tulip, Dallas County, Arkansas. (The Phillips Family, pages 6, 24-25)

Great-Niece of William Shakespeare

John Lilburne (7th Great-Granduncle; 1629-1678), married Isabel Quiney (1628-1666), who was a great-niece of William Shakespeare (her father was Richard Quiney; his brother, Thomas Quiney, married Judith Shakespeare, daughter of William Shakespeare). Isabel was christened and buried at St. Stephen Walbrook in London, England; her husband, John Lilburne, was buried there on January 21, 1678. (The Rogers Family, pages 2-4, 21-23)



Grandmother of Thomas Jefferson

Jane Rogers (5th Great-Grandaunt; 1698-1760) “was living at home in London with her mother, Jane Lilburne Rogers, when Isham Randolph (born January 1685 on Turkey Island, Henrico County, Virginia; died November 1742 at his estate of *Dungeness*, Goochland County, Virginia) of Virginia first got to know her.” Isham, “mariner,” was living at the time at Shakespeare’s Walk, which was around the



Above right: Portrait believed to be that of William Shakespeare (from Shakespeare Birthplace Trust). Isabel Quiney, who married John Lilburne (7th Great-Granduncle; 1629-1678), was the Great-Niece of William Shakespeare. Above left: Monument of John Lilburne in St. Stephen Walbrook in London, England, in 2015. Left: Portrait of Isham Randolph, husband of Jane Rogers (5th Great-Grandaunt; 1698-1760), probably when he was about 37 years old. He was a mariner and commanded a merchant ship with a crew of ten men and four guns.

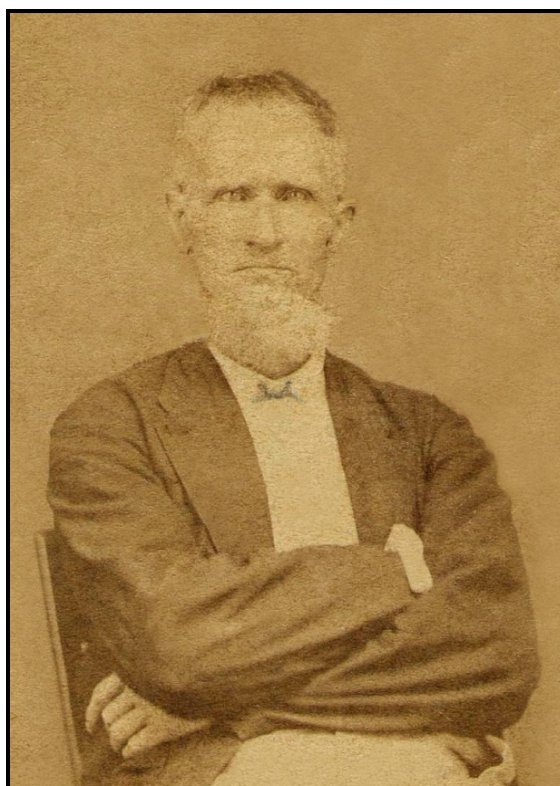
corner from the church of St. Paul’s Shadwell. Jane and Isham were married at St. Paul’s Shadwell on July 25, 1717.

“The marriage of Jane and Isham Randolph produced two daughters: Jane Randolph (according to family Bible: born February 9, 1721, in Shadwell Parish, Tower Hamlets, London; baptized on February 25, 1721, in St. Paul’s Shadwell) and Mary Randolph. Jane married Peter Jefferson on October 3, 1739, in Goochland County, Virginia, probably at Isham’s home on the James River, called *Dungeness*, the father of Thomas Jefferson, while Mary married Charles Lewis.” Jane Randolph Jefferson died suddenly at

the age of 55 on March 31, 1776. Thomas Jefferson wrote his uncle, her brother, William Randolph: “The death of my mother you have probably not heard of. This happened on the



Right: William Jackson Bowles (2nd Great-Grandfather; 1819-1887); his photograph was discovered in 2010 by Cerelle Douglas. Above: Gift from Caroline Frances Rogers (2nd Great-Grandaunt) to her sister, Ann Maria Rogers (2nd Great-Grandmother; 1814-1881), on her 18th birthday, August 26, 1832. Above the name of Huldah Rogers (3rd Great-Grandmother; 1772-1834) is the faded name of Charles Rogers (3rd Great-Grandfather; 1763-1840/1850); below the name of Mary J. Rogers (2nd Great-Grandaunt; born 1810/1820) is the faded name of Ann M. Rogers (2nd Great-Grandmother; 1814-1881).



last day of March after an illness of not more than an hour. We suppose it to have been apoplectic.” She was buried in the family graveyard at Monticello.

“Jane and Peter had eight children in addition to Thomas, and they all grew up in Virginia in a

home named *Shadwell*, which related to Shadwell Parish in England. Their son, Randolph Jefferson, later married and named one of his sons Lilburne Jefferson. Their daughter, Jane Jefferson, married her first cousin, who was the son of Mary Randolph and Charles Lewis. They named their son, Charles Lilburne Lewis” (*John Lilburne Research Institute*). (The Rogers Family, pages 4-7)

Virginians Moved to Arkansas

Ann Maria Rogers (2nd Great-Grandmother; 1814-1881) moved from Goochland County, Virginia, to Richmond, Virginia, with her husband, **William Jackson Bowles** (2nd Great-Grandfather; 1819-1887). William did not like city life, so in 1856 he moved his family to an area about four miles north of Dumas in Desha County, Arkansas. “Ann was highly educated and had been a schoolteacher. She was a member of one of the first families of Virginia. Physically, she was a tiny person, five feet tall, slender, with small delicate hands

and a tiny chin with a small mouth. While her husband and their six slaves cleared the



Above: Gravestones of William Jackson Bowles (1819-1887) and Ann Maria Rogers (1814-1882) (2nd Great-Grandparents) in Tyro Cemetery, Tyro, Arkansas (above right with Jonathan Martin, age three, a direct descendant of William and Ann Rogers Bowles, looking at the cemetery in 1985).

land, built cabins, dug a well, built fences and made things ready for the family, Ann stayed in a hotel in Arkansas City, Arkansas. As there were no schools, Ann taught her children from the books she had brought with her.” In the spring of the third year in 1858/1859, Ann and her children moved to their new home.

Ann and William were the parents of six children: John Jackson Bowles (1841-1899), William Andrew Bowles (1843-1883), Patsy Ann Bowles (1845-1894), Maria Cordelia Bowles (1848-1883), **Walter Ivanhoe Bowles** (Great-Grandfather; 1853-1937) and Jane C. Bowles (1855-1871). All of their children were born in Goochland County, Virginia, except Walter, who was born in Richmond, Henrico County, Virginia.

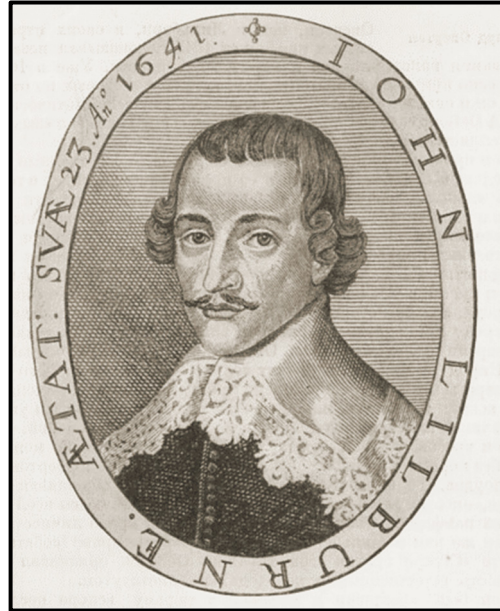
Ann was buried in Tyro Cemetery in Tyro, Arkansas. The inscription on her gravestone gives her parent’s names, where she was born and where she died. It is unusual for a tombstone inscription to state so much vital information. I have visited her grave many times. The first time was in 1973 with my grandmother, mother and aunt. In October 1997 I visited her grave once again with my mother and brother, Ron. As we drove away, my mother said that she was glad that we had come and that she had a good feeling while we were in the cemetery. Since 1997 I have been to Tyro Cemetery four more times. (The Rogers Family, pages 17-19)

Believed in Trial by Combat

Richard Lilburne (8th Great-Granduncle; 1583-1667) had two famous sons: Col. Robert Lilburne (1613-1665) and John Lilburne (1614-1657). “Richard Lilburne was the last man in England to insist that he should be allowed to settle a legal dispute with a trial by combat.” (Rogers Family, page 31)

Defended “Freeborn Rights” of All Men

John Lilburne (1614–August 29, 1657; son of Richard Lilburne, 8th Great-Granduncle), “also known as Freeborn John, was an English political agitator before, during and after the English Civil Wars 1642-1650. A libertarian, he coined the term “freeborn rights,” defining them as rights with which every human being is born, as opposed to rights bestowed by government or human law. In his early life he was a Puritan, though towards the end of his life he became a Quaker. His works have been cited in opinions by the United States Supreme Court. John Lilburne was a child of middle level, the exact date of whose birth is unknown; there is some dispute as to whether he was born in 1613 or 1614. He was probably born in Bishop Auckland in County Durham, England where his uncle Richard Lilburne became one of the first members of Parliament to represent the County of Durham. John’s elder brother Robert Lilburne also later became active in the Parliamentary cause but seems not to have shared John’s Leveller beliefs.



By his own account Lilburne received the first ten years’ of his education in Newcastle, almost certainly at the Royal Free Grammar School. In the 1630s he was apprenticed to John Hewson who introduced him to the Puritan physician John Bastwick, an active pamphleteer against Episcopacy who was persecuted by Archbishop William Laud. Lilburne also campaigned against Tithes, a system where peasants paid the Church one tenth of their income, on the basis that they were a Jewish tradition abolished by the New Testament. In 1638 at age 22, John Lilburne imported into England religious publications from Holland which were not licensed by The Stationers’ Company (known after 1937 as the Worshipful Company of Stationers and Newspaper Makers). At that time all printing presses were licensed as well as the publications that were produced on those presses. John Lilburne was arrested upon information by an informer acting for The Stationers’ Company and brought before the Court of Star Chamber. Instead of being charged with an offense he was asked how he pleaded. John Lilburne demanded to be presented in English with the charges brought against him (much of the written legal work of the time was in Law French). The Court refused Lilburne’s request. The court then threw him in prison and again brought him back to court and demanded a plea. Again, Lilburne demanded to know the charges brought against him. The authorities then resorted to flogging him with a three-thonged whip on his bare back, as he was dragged by his hands tied to the rear of an ox

Above: John Lilburne (1614-1657; son of Richard Lilburne, 8th Great-Granduncle), a portrait by the engraver, George Glover, in 1641. “John Lilburne was a prominent defender of religious liberties and free speech. He is cited as an influence on the U.S. constitutional framers.” He coined the term “freeborn rights,” defining them as rights with which every human being is born, as opposed to rights bestowed by government or human law. Lilburne’s ally, Henry Marten, claimed that “If there’d been no one else left on earth, the great Leveller would have fought himself.”

cart from Fleet Prison to the pillory at Westminster. He was then forced to stoop in the pillory where he still managed to campaign against his censors, while distributing more unlicensed literature to the crowds. He was then gagged. Finally, he was thrown in prison.



Above: Image of John Lilburne (1614-1657; son of Richard Lilburne, 8th Great-Granduncle) behind bars. John was imprisoned many times for his outspoken views. During his age he became a hero of the common people.

to visiting Quaker congregations in Kent. In the last of his 83 pamphlets, *The Resurrection of John Lilburne*, he declared that he had given up political activism and become a Quaker. In the summer of 1657, whilst visiting his wife, who was expecting their tenth child, he caught a fever and died at Eltham, Kent, on August 29, 1657, aged 42.” (“John Lilburne, Political Agitator,” in *Co-Curate on Internet*, article in public domain.) (The Rogers Family, pages 33-44)

Signed the King’s Death Warrant

Colonel Robert Lilburne (1613–1665; son of Richard Lilburne, 8th Great-Granduncle) was the older brother of John Lilburne, the well-known Leveller, but unlike his brother who severed his relationship with Oliver Cromwell, Robert Lilburne remained in the army. He is also classed as a regicide for having been forty-seventh of the fifty-nine Commissioners (Judges) who signed the death warrant of King Charles I in 1649. Like

He was taken back to the court and again imprisoned. This began the first in a long series of trials that lasted throughout his life for what John Lilburne called his ‘freeborn rights.’ As a result of these trials a growing number of supporters began to call him ‘Freeborn John’ and they even struck a medal in his honor to that effect. It is this trial that has been cited by constitutional jurists and scholars in the United States of America as being one of the historical foundations of the Fifth Amendment to the United States Constitution. It is also cited within the 1966 majority opinion of *Miranda v. Arizona* by the U.S. Supreme Court. On his release, he married to Elizabeth Dewell (a London merchant’s daughter) in September 1641. Lilburne’s agitation continued, the same year he led a group of armed citizens against a group of Royalist officers, forcing them to retreat. Lilburne was held in the Tower until March 1654, then transferred to Jersey and finally, in October 1655, he was brought to Dover Castle. On parole at Dover, Lilburne met Luke Howard, a Quaker whose serenity impressed him and began the process of his own conversion. In 1656, he was allowed to leave the castle during the daytime to visit his wife and children, who had settled in Dover. Later he was permitted to stay away from prison for several days at a time and took

his brother, Robert Lilburne was educated at the Royal Grammar School. At the outbreak of the First English Civil War Lilburne joined the Roundheads. He served under Edward Montagu (the son of Earl of Manchester) and by 1644 had attained the rank of captain. He then raised a regiment of horse in County Durham which became part of Lord Fairfax's Northern Association army. He joined the New Model Army and was promoted to Colonel of a regiment. Although like his brother John, his sympathies like those of his regiment lay with the Levellers, he was not present at the Corkbush Field rendezvous, the first of several meetings planned following the Putney Debates. Robert Lilburne's regiment marched, without orders, to the rendezvous in the hope of pressing the Levellers manifesto, the Agreement of the People, on the Army. The mutiny failed. Along with copies of the Agreement, the soldiers displayed in their hats papers showing the Levellers' slogan, "England's Freedom, Soldiers' Rights." When an officer of the commander of the Army, Sir Thomas Fairfax approached them, members of Lilburne's regiment stoned and wounded him. Oliver Cromwell, then the second-in-command of the New Model Army,



Above: Portrait of Colonel Robert Lilburne (1613-1665; son of Richard Lilburne, 8th Great-Granduncle) by Samuel Cooper. He was one of the chief commanders under Oliver Cromwell during the English Civil War. He signed the death warrant of King Charles I and after the Restoration died after five years in prison on Drake Island (below) in southwest England in 1665.



and some of his officers rode into their ranks and ordered them to take the papers from their hat bands. Cromwell had eight or nine of the more truculent of Lilburne's troopers arrested, tried at an improvised court-martial, and found guilty of mutiny. Three ring-leaders were sentenced to death and, having cast lots, Private Richard Arnold was shot on the spot as an example. Despite this incident, Fairfax appointed Lilburne Governor of Newcastle-upon-Tyne. During the Second English Civil War, Lilburne joined Cromwell and Lambert in the defeat of the Engagers at the Battle of Preston. In December 1648, Lilburne was nominated as one of the Commissioners at the trial of Charles I, he attended the trial and signed the king's death warrant. He also took part in the siege of Pontefract Castle, which held out against Parliament until March 1649. During the Third English Civil War he

leaders were sentenced to death and, having cast lots, Private Richard Arnold was shot on the spot as an example. Despite this incident, Fairfax appointed Lilburne Governor of Newcastle-

fought under Oliver Cromwell during his Scottish campaign, and when the Scottish army invaded England, Lilburne defeated English Royalists, under the command of the Earl of



Above: Alnwick Castle in Northumberland, one of the great castles of northern England. John Lilburn (14th Great-Granduncle) was Constable of Alnwick Castle. The oldest parts of the castle were built about 1096. Today it is the seat of the Duke of Northumberland and as of 2012 receives 800,000 visitors per year.

Derby, at the Battle of Wigan Lane on August 25, 1651. This prevented them from joining the Scots on their march to defeat at the Battle of Worcester and the end of the English Civil Wars. In November 1651 he returned to Scotland as part of Major-General Richard Deane's army of occupation. In December 1652, Lilburne took over command of the army in Scotland, but when he was not given promotion or the support he thought he needed from the Government in London to put down the Glencairn's uprising,

he was happy to hand over command to General George Monck in early 1654. During the Interregnum although some officers said that he was too sympathetic to the Levellers and the Anabaptists, he supported Oliver Cromwell during first years of the Protectorate. In 1654 he was appointed Governor of York and the next year he commanded the army units that put down the Sealed Knot uprising in York. In he was elected to the First Protectorate Parliament. During the Rule of the Major-Generals (1656) he was deputy to John Lambert responsible for the day-to-day administration of Yorkshire and County Durham. He was elected MP for the East Riding of Yorkshire in the Second Protectorate Parliament. However, he opposed the offer of the crown to Cromwell and was uneasy with the constitutional arrangements of the later Protectorate. With the death of Oliver Cromwell the Rump Parliament and the reinstatement of the English Commonwealth. He was appointed to the Army's Committee of Safety and supported General John Lambert when Lambert marched to stop General George Monck marching on London. When that failed and the Restoration occurred, Lilburne was arrested along with all the other regicides still living in Britain. On October 16, 1660, Lilburne was found guilty of high treason, and was sentenced to be hanged, drawn and quartered, but later this was commuted to life imprisonment. He died a prisoner on Drake's Island (see previous page) in Plymouth Sound in August, 1665. (Colonel Robert Lilburne, by Co-Curate on Internet—article in public domain) (The Rogers Family, pages 31-33)

Constable of Alnwick Castle

John de Lilburne (14th Great-Granduncle) was appointed Constable of Alnwick Castle, which was one of the great castles in northern England. (Rogers Family, page 45)

Member of Parliament, who Invited Henry Percy to be His Son's Godfather

Sir John Lilburne (16th Great-Grandfather) “was born in 1328 and knighted.” He was called to Parliament on November 12, 1384, and was residing at Shawdon, England, on February 22, 1387, when a son was born.

“Sir John rode to Alnwick and invited Henry Percy, first Earl of Northumberland, and the Abbot of Alnwick Abbey to be the child's godparents. The Earl was actually present at the child's baptism at Bolton church—evidence of the family's powerful connections. (Rogers Family, page 48)



Built Lilburn Tower

John of Lilburn (17th Great-Grandfather, 1279-1355) “in the early 14th century, raised the family

both to fame and to the ranks of the great landowners. He was the nephew and heir of Christine of Lilburn, through whom he inherited ‘livery of the manor of Lilburn as one



knight's fee' on October 26th 1324. He was knighted, becoming the first Sir John Lilburn, at the King's Court on Christmas 1315, and a few months later was appointed Constable of Mitford Castle. He added considerably to his lands, including the barony of Stamford and Dunstanburgh, and was appointed Constable of Dunstanburgh Castle in 1323, where he built the famous Lilburn Tower, part of which is still standing. He was Commissioner of Array in Northumberland in 1325 and Sheriff of Northumberland from 1327 to 1329.” (Rogers Family, pages 47-48)

Owned Pendragon Castle

Idonea de Vieuxpont (or Vipont) (18th Great-Grandmother; 1255-1333), was the daugh-

Above: Lilburn Tower, seen from the edge of the outer bailey of Dunstanburgh Castle (entrance right). Sir John de Lilburn (17th Great-Grandfather; 1279-1355) was appointed Constable of Dunstanburgh Castle in 1323 and “built the famous Lilburn tower, part of which is still standing.” The castle is picturesquely located overlooking the ocean in Northumberland, England. Sir John was also appointed Constable of Mitford Castle (below) in 1316. Located in Northumberland, England, it dates from the end of the 11th century.

both to fame and to the ranks of the great landowners. He was the nephew and heir of Christine of Lilburn, through whom he inherited ‘livery of the manor of Lilburn as one knight's fee' on October 26th 1324. He was knighted, becoming the first Sir John Lilburn, at the King's Court on Christmas 1315, and a few months later was appointed Constable of Mitford Castle. He added considerably to his lands, including the bar-

ter of **Robert de Vieuxpont, Baron of Westmoreland** (19th Great-Grandfather); Idonea owned Pendragon Castle and founded St Mary's Outhgill in Mallerstang, Cumbria (north-



Above left: Two views of Pendragon Castle, which was owned by Lady Idonea de Vieuxpont (18th Great-Grandmother; 1255-1333), which was built in the 12th century. After the death of her husband, Robert de Lilburn (18th Great-Grandfather), Idonea “spent much of her remaining years living in the castle, until her death in 1334.” Top right: St. Mary’s Church in Outhgill, which is about a mile south of Pendragon Castle. Lady Idonea de Veteripont founded the church of St Mary, circa 1311. Right: Two views of Shap Abbey located near Shap, Cumbria, England, where Isabel de Vipont Clifford and her parents, Robert de Vieuxpont (1230-1264) and Isabel Fitz John Vieuxpont (1233-1301) (19th Great-Grandparents) were buried. The abbey dates from 1199.

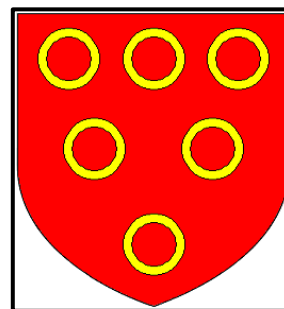
east England). Idonea was also the sister of Isabell Clifford.

Idonea married first, Sir John Cromwell, Knight, and second, **Robert/Roger Leybourne** (18th Great-Grandfather). She and Robert had three known children: **Sir John Leybourne/Lilburne**, Knight,

Anne Leybourne, and Richard Leybourne.

“After the death of her husband, Robert/Roger de Lilburn, Idonea spent much of her remaining years living in Pendragon Castle,” which she owned. “Lady Idonea founded the church of St Mary in the nearby hamlet of Outhgill in circa 1311.” Outhgill is located one

mile south of Pendragon Castle, which is in Mallerstang, Cumbria (northeast England). The castle was once owned by Sir Hugh de Morville, Lord of Westmorland—one of the four knights who murdered St Thomas Becket in 1170. (*Wikipedia*—Pendragon Castle)



(“Vipont [*alias* Vieuxpont] is the name of a prominent family in the history of Westmorland. According to Thomas the name originated in France before 1066 as Vieuxpont [‘Old Bridge], Latinized to *de Vetere Ponte* [‘from the Old Bridge’], with alternative spellings *Vezpont, Veepon, Vexpont, Vypont, Vispont, Vypunt, Vespont, Vipond, Vypond, Voypond, Veepond, Vippond, Vipon, Vipian, Vipen*, etc. The Vipont family bore arms. (Rogers Family, pages 48-49)

Given Castles by King John

Robert de Vieuxpont (21st Great-Grandfather; died 1228) “was an Anglo-Norman landowner and administrator in the north of England.”



This page: Two views of Brough Castle in Cumbria, located in northeast England. Robert de Vieuxpont (21st Great-Grandfather; died 1228) was given Brough Castle in 1203 by King John. Top: Arms of Vieuxpont family.

“He entered royal service and was initially employed in Normandy as a paymaster of troops and director of military works, including those on Rouen Castle. He was rewarded in February 1203 by being given custody of Appleby Castle and Brough Castle, to which the lordship of Westmorland was added a month later, together with the office of Sheriff of Westmorland, to be held in perpetuity by his heirs.” “

After returning from Normandy with King John in late 1203 Vieuxpont became increasingly involved in northern administration. In October 1204 he became High Sheriff of Nottinghamshire, Derbyshire and the Royal Forests including control of Nottingham Castle, an important power base and store of the royal treasury. In 1206 he was a justice and assessor of tallage in the northern counties, in 1207 he was given custody of the See of York, and in April 1208 custody of the See of Durham. From 1210 to 1216 he was Sheriff of Devon and from 1210-1213 Sheriff of Wiltshire. He was highly trusted by King John,

who put in his care both his treasury, his son Richard and his niece Eleanor, Fair Maid of



Above left: Brougham Castle, which was built in the north part of a Roman fort, near the confluence of the River Eamont and River Lowther, two miles southeast of Penrith, Cumbria, in northeast England. The castle was founded by Robert de Vieuxpont (21st Great-Grandfather; died 1228). His grandson, Robert de Vieuxpont (19th Great-Grandfather; 1230-1264), was born here in 1230 and died here in 1264. Top right: Appleby Castle in Cumbria, with Caesar's Tower (right), circa 1170. It was granted to Robert de Vieuxpont in 1203 by King John. Lower right: Nottingham Castle, which was also given to Robert de Vieuxpont. The royal treasury was stored here, showing how much the king trusted Robert. Brough Castle and Appleby Castle passed to Robert's granddaughter, Isabel de Vipont (19th Great-Grandaunt), and then to the Clifford family for 400 years.



Brittany. In 1216 he was also entrusted with the custody of Cumberland Castle and Carlisle Castle and from 1217 to 1222 he was appointed Sheriff of Cumberland. He successfully defended his extensive landholdings from Scottish depredation and built Brougham Castle in the process.” (The Rogers Family, pages 52-54)

Sheriff of Nottingham—Fought alongside William Marshall at Lincoln

William de Ferrers, 4th Earl of Derby (21st Great-Grandfather; circa 1168—circa 1247) “was a favorite of King John of England. He succeeded to the estate (but not the title) upon the death of his father, **William de Ferrers, 3rd Earl of Derby**, at the Siege of Acre in 1190. He was head of a family which controlled a large part of Derbyshire which included an area known as Duffield Frith.”

“He adopted his father’s allegiance to King Richard as the reigning king. On Richard’s return from the Third Crusade, in the company of David Ceanmhor and the Earl of Chester he played a leading role in besieging Nottingham Castle, on March 28, 1194, which was being held by supporters of Prince John. For seven weeks after this he held the position of Sheriff of Nottinghamshire and Derbyshire.”

“On the accession of John after the death of his brother, in 1199, William gave him his allegiance and became a great favorite. He restored to the de Ferrars’ family the title of Earl of Derby, along with the right to the ‘third penny,’ and soon afterwards bestowed upon him the manors of Ashbourne and Wirksworth, with the whole of that wapentake, subject to a fee farm rent of £70 per annum.”

“When, in 1213, John surrendered his kingdoms of England and Ireland to the Pope, William was one of the witnesses to the ‘Bulla Aurea.’ In the following year William gave surety on behalf of the king for the payment of a yearly tribute of 1,000 marks.”

“In the same year, 1214, the King granted the Earl the royal castle of Harestan (Horsley Castle). William was a patron of at least 2 abbeys and 4 priories. In 1216, John made him bailiff of the Peak Forest and warden of the Peak Castle.”

“In that year, John was succeeded by the nine-year-old Henry III. Because of continuing discontent about John’s violations of the Magna Carta, some of the barons had approached Prince Louis of France who invaded in that year. William Marshal, 1st Earl of Pembroke acting on behalf of the young King, sought to repel the invaders and pacify the barons. His forces, with the assistance of de Ferrers, the Earl of Chester and others, defeated the rebels at the siege of Lincoln.”



Above: Rebecca and me at the center of the old town of Lincoln, England, with its famous cathedral on May 20, 2017. William de Ferrers, 4th Earl of Derby (21st Great-Grandfather; 1168–1247) fought alongside William Marshall (23rd Great-Grandfather; 1147–1219), “a knight of great skill and prowess,” who led the English to victory at the age of 70 over a French army in the Second Battle of Lincoln on May 20, 1217. Our visit coincided with the 800th anniversary of this important English victory.

“De Ferrers was allowed to retain the royal castles of Bolsover, Peak and Horston (Horsley) until the King’s 14th birthday. The latter had been given him in 1215 as a residence for his



wife during his planned absence with the King on Crusade, and the Earl was among those who made representation to the King, which would in 1258 led to the Provisions of Oxford.”

“Henry reached his fourteenth birthday in 1222, and his administration sought to recover the three royal castles, to de Ferrers’ indignation. In 1254 they would pass to Edward I, Henry’s son, exacerbating Robert’s, the sixth earl, resentment against the prince.”



“He married **Agnes of Chester**, sister of Ranulph de Blondville, 4th Earl of Chester, for 55 years. As the Earl advanced in years, he became a martyr to severe attacks of the gout, a disease which terminated his life in the year 1247. He was succeeded by his elder son, also William, the Fifth Earl of Derby.” (Rogers Family, pages 55-56)

Died at Siege of Acre in the Third Crusade

Top: Tutbury Castle in Staffordshire, England, and its North Tower (above with a double rainbow—photograph by Vampire Bait). Mary Queen of Scots was imprisoned here “for some time.” William de Ferrers, 3rd Earl of Derby (22nd Great-Grandfather; died 1190) resided at Tutbury Castle and made it “his headquarters.”

William de Ferrers, 3rd Earl of Derby (22nd Great-Grandfather; died 1190) “was a 12th-century English Earl who resided in Tutbury Castle in Staffordshire and was head of a family which controlled a large part of Derbyshire known as Duffield Frith. He was also a Knight Templar.”

“William was the son of **Robert de Ferrers, 2nd Earl of Derby** (23rd Great-Grandfather) and his wife, **Margaret Peverel** (see their effigies below). He succeeded his father as Earl of Derby in 1162. He was married to **Sybil**, the daughter of **William de Braose**, 3rd Lord of Bramber and Bertha of Hereford.”

“William de Ferrers was one of the earls who joined the rebellion against King Henry II of England led by Henry’s eldest son, Henry the Younger, in the Revolt of 1173–1174, sacking the town of Nottingham. Robert de Ferrers II, his father, had supported Stephen of England and, although Henry II had accepted him at court, he had denied the title of earl of Derby to him and his son. In addition, William had a grudge against Henry because he believed he should have inherited the lands of Peveiril Castle through his

mother. These, King Henry had previously confiscated in 1155 when William Peverel fell into disfavor.”

“With the failure of the revolt, de Ferrers was taken prisoner by King Henry, at Northampton on the July 31, 1174, along with the King of Scots and the earls of Chester and Lincoln, along with a number of his Derbyshire underlings and was held at Caen. He was deprived of his castles at Tutbury and Duffield and both were put out of commission (and possibly Pilsbury). In addition to defray the costs of the war Henry levied a so-called ‘Forest Fine’ of 200 marks.”

“He seems to have afterwards regained the confidence of Henry II., and he showed his fidelity to the next Sovereign, (King Richard I), by accompanying him in his expedition to the Holy Land, and joined the Third Crusade and died at the Siege of Acre in 1190.”



Above: Medieval depiction of the Siege of Acre. William de Ferrers, 3rd Earl of Derby (22nd Great-Grandfather; died 1190) went with King Richard on the Third Crusade and died at the Siege of Acre in 1190. The siege was a long and bloody one that lasted from August 1189 until July 1191, with the Christians winning, but losing 19,000 dead.

“He was succeeded by his son **William de Ferrers**, 4th Earl of Derby.” (Wikipedia) (Rogers Family, pages 56-57)

Effigies still Exist

Robert de Ferrers, 2nd Earl of Derby (23rd Great-Grandfather; died 1162) “a younger, but eldest surviving, son of **Robert de Ferrers, 1st Earl of Derby** and his wife **Hawise**, succeeded his father as Earl of Derby in 1139 (William, his elder brother, having been murdered in London some time before). He was head of a family which controlled a large part of Derbyshire including an area later known as Duffield Frith.”

“Little is known of Robert’s life, other than his generosity to the church. In 1148, he established Merevale Abbey in Warwickshire, England, where he requested to be buried in an ox hide. The stone effigies of Robert and his wife, **Margaret Peverel**, lie in the gatehouse chapel of Merevale Abbey, near the village of Atherstone.”

“He founded the Priory of Derby, which later moved to Darley Abbey, and its Abbot was granted many privileges in Duffield Forest and Chase.”

“He continued his father’s attempts to play a role in the civil war commonly called The Anarchy that arose because of the contesting claims of Empress Matilda and Stephen of



This page: Effigies of Robert de Ferrers (died 1162) and his wife, Margaret Peveral (circa 1114-1154) (23rd Great-Grandparents), in Merevale Abbey, which was built by Robert de Ferrers in Merevale, Warwickshire, England, in 1148.

England. The family’s support for Stephen led to him being awarded the revenues of the Borough of Derby in 1139, though in 1149 Stephen then granted the Borough to the Earl of Chester.”

He finally threw in his lot with the future Henry II after Tutbury Castle was besieged in 1153. However, when Henry came to the throne in 1154, he withdrew de Ferrers’ right to use the title of Earl or to receive the ‘third penny’ on the profits of the county.”

“He died in 1162 and was succeeded by his son **William de**

Ferrers, 3rd Earl of Derby.” (Wikipedia) (Rogers Family, pages 57-59)

Commander at Battle of the Standard

William “the Younger” Peverel (24th Great-Grandfather; 1080–1155) married **Avicia de Lancaster** (1088–circa 1150) in La Marche, Normandy, France. She was the daughter of **William de Lancaster I** and Countess **Gundred de Warenne**, daughter of **William de Warenne**, 2nd Earl of Surrey. In 1114, she bore a daughter, **Margaret Peverel** (23rd Great-Grandmother).

“He was a principal supporter of King Stephen, and a commander in the Battle of the Standard. He was captured at The First Battle of Lincoln.” (Rogers Family, pages 59-60)

Built Peveril Castle

William Peverel (25th Great-Grandfather; 1040-circa 1115) was a Norman knight that was granted lands in England following the Norman Conquest. He was a favorite of William the Conqueror and greatly honored, receiving from the king as his reward over a hundred manors in central England He built Peveril Castle (see next page) and “is amongst the people explicitly recorded in the Domesday Book as having built castles.” By 1086 the Domesday Book records that he held 162 manors. He lived in Nottingham, England.”

William Peverel built Peveril Castle in Castleton, Derbyshire, England “between the Norman Conquest of 1066 and its first recorded mention in the Domesday Survey of 1086.”

The castle and town became the center of his barony. Much later, King Henry II took royal possession of Peveril Castle and made visits here in 1157, 1158, and 1164. He hosted King Malcolm IV of Scotland here in 1157. (Rogers Family, page 59)

Fought in the Battle of Hastings, where his Brother was Killed in 1066

Henry de Ferrers (also known as **Henri de Ferrieres**) (25th Great-Grandfather; died



Above: The keep of Peveril Castle in Castleton, Derbyshire, England. Photograph by Chris Hardy in 2016. The castle was founded by William Peverel (25th Great-Grandfather; circa 1040-circa 1115) “between the Norman Conquest of 1066 and its first recorded mention in the Domesday Survey of 1086.” The castle and town became the center of his barony. King Henry II took royal possession of Peveril Castle and made visits here in 1157, 1158, and 1164. He hosted King Malcolm IV of Scotland here in 1157.

1093/1100) “was a Norman soldier from a noble family who took part in the conquest of England and is believed to have fought at the Battle of Hastings of 1066 and, in consequence, was rewarded with much land (210 manors) in the subdued nation.”

“His elder brother William (French: *Guillaume*) fell in the battle. William and Henri were both sons of **Vanquelin de Ferrers** (died circa 1040), Seigneur of Ferrières-Saint-Hilaire, Eure in Upper Normandy. The Ferrers family holding at Ferrières-Saint-Hilaire was the caput of their large Norman barony.” (Wikipedia) (Rogers Family, page 61)

Constable of the Tower of London—Granted Berkhamsted Castle

Geoffrey Fitz Peter, 1st Earl of Essex (21st Great-Grandfather; circa 1162–1213) “was a prominent member of the government of England during the reigns of Richard I and John. The patronymic is sometimes rendered Fitz Piers, for he was the son of **Piers de Lutegashale**, forester of Ludgershall.”

“He was from a modest landowning family that had a tradition of service in mid-ranking posts under Henry II. Geoffrey's elder brother Simon Fitz Peter was at various times High



Top: I took this photograph of the Tower of London from the top of the Shard, England's tallest building, in May 2017. Geoffrey Fitz Peter, 1st Earl of Essex (20th Great-Grandfather; circa 1162–1213), was Constable of the Tower of London from 1198 to 1205. **Above:** Berkhamsted Castle, in Berkhamsted, Hertfordshire, England—photograph by Robert Stainforth. It was built soon after the Norman Conquest of England. Geoffrey Fitz Peter was given Berkhamsted Castle by King John. He was Chief Justiciar (the king's principal minister) to King Richard and King John until his death in 1213.

Sheriff of Northamptonshire, Buckinghamshire, and Bedfordshire. Geoffrey, too, got his start in this way, as High Sheriff of Northamptonshire for the last five years of Henry II's reign.”

“Around this time Geoffrey married Beatrice de Say, daughter and eventual co-heiress of William de Say II. This William was the elder son of William de Say I and Beatrice, sister of Geoffrey de Mandeville, 1st Earl of Essex. This connection with the Mandeville family was later to prove unexpectedly important. In 1184 Geoffrey's father-in-law died, and he received a share of the de Say inheritance by right of his wife, co-heiress to her father. He also eventually gained the title of earl of Essex by right of his wife, becoming the 4th earl.”

“When Richard I left on crusade, he appointed Geoffrey one of the five judges of the king's court, and thus a principal advisor to Hugh de Puiset, Bishop of Durham, who, as Chief

Justiciar, was one of the regents during the king's absence. Late in 1189, Geoffrey's wife's cousin William de Mandeville, 3rd Earl of Essex died, leaving no direct heirs. His wife's inheritance was disputed between Geoffrey and Beatrice's uncle, Geoffrey de Say, but Geoffrey Fitz Peter used his political influence to eventually obtain the Mandeville lands (although not the earldom, which was left open) for himself."

"He served as Constable of the Tower of London from 1198 to 1205."

"He served as High Sheriff of Yorkshire from 1198 to 1201 and again in 1203 and as High Sheriff of Bedfordshire and Buckinghamshire from 1200 to 1205. On July 11, 1198, King Richard appointed Geoffrey Chief Justiciar, which at that time effectively made him the king's principal minister. On his coronation day the new king ennobled Geoffrey as Earl of Essex."

"King John granted Berkhamsted Castle to Geoffrey; the castle had previously been granted as a jointure palace to Queen Isabel prior to the annulment of the royal marriage. Geoffrey founded two hospitals in Berkhamsted, one dedicated to St John the Baptist and one to St John the Evangelist; the latter is still commemorated in the town with the name St John's Well Lane."

"After the accession of King John, Geoffrey continued in his capacity as the king's principal minister until his death on October 14, 1213." (The Rogers Family, pages 62-64)

Inherited Framlingham Castle

Hugh Bigod (21st Great-Grandfather; circa 1182-February 18, 1225) "was a member of the powerful early Norman Bigod family and was for a short time the 3rd Earl of Norfolk."

"He was born circa 1182, the eldest son of **Roger Bigod, 2nd Earl of Norfolk** by his wife **Ida de Tosny**."

"In 1215 he was one of the twenty-five sureties of Magna Carta of King John. He succeeded to his father's estates (including Framlingham Castle) in 1221."

"In late 1206 or early 1207, Hugh married **Maud Marshal** (1192—March 27, 1248), daughter of **William Marshal, 1st Earl of Pembroke** (1147–1219) and Marshal of England, by his wife, **Isabel de Clare**, 4th Countess of Pembroke. (Rogers Family, pages 65-66)

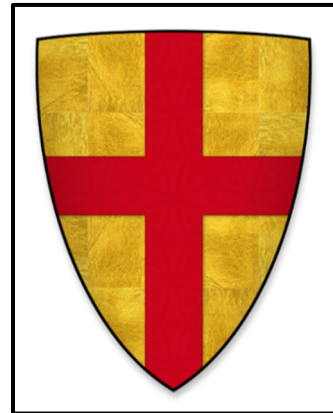
Built Framlingham Castle

Roger Bigod (22rd Great-Grandfather; circa 1144/1150-1221) "was the son of **Hugh Bigod, 1st Earl of Norfolk** and his first wife, **Juliana de Vere**. Although his father died 1176 or 1177, Roger did not succeed to the earldom of Norfolk until 1189 for his claim had been disputed by his stepmother for her sons by Earl Hugh in the reign of Henry II. Richard I confirmed him in his earldom and other honors and also sent him as an ambassador to France in the same year. Roger inherited his father's office as royal steward. He

took part in the negotiations for the release of Richard from prison, and after the king's return to England became a justiciar.”



Above: Framlingham Castle in Suffolk (southeast England). Roger Bigod (22nd Great-Grandfather; circa 1144-1221) built Framlingham Castle in a new design with no central keep. Instead he used a curtain wall with thirteen mural towers to defend the center of the castle. Hugh Bigod (21st Great-Grandfather) inherited the castle. Right: Arms adopted by Roger Bigod, 2nd Earl of Norfolk (22nd Great-Grandfather; circa 1144-1221), at the start of the Age of Heraldry, circa 1200-1215, with a red cross on a gold background.



“During the Revolt of 1173–1174, Roger remained loyal to the king while his father sided with the king’s rebellious sons. Roger fought at the Battle of Fornham on October 17, 1173, where the royalist force defeated a rebel force led by Robert de Beaumont, 3rd Earl of Leicester.”

“In most of the years of the reign of King John, the earl was frequently with the king or on royal business. Yet Roger was to be one of the leaders of the baronial party which obtained John’s assent to Magna Carta, and his name and that of his son and heir Hugh II appear among the twenty-five barons who were to ensure the king’s adherence to the terms of that document. The pair were excommunicated by the pope in December 1215 and did not make peace with the regents of John’s son Henry III until 1217.”

“Around Christmas 1181, Roger married Ida, apparently **Ida de Tosny** (or Ida de Toesny), and by her had a number of children including:

1. **Hugh Bigod**, 3rd Earl of Norfolk who married in 1206/1207, **Maud**, a daughter of **William Marshal**.
2. William Bigod.

3. Ralph Bigod.
4. Roger Bigod.
5. Margery married William de Hastings.
6. Mary Bigod, married Ralph fitz Robert.” (Wikipedia) (The Rogers Family, pages 66-67)

Constable of Norwich Castle

Hugh Bigod (23rd Great-Grandfather; 1095-1177) “was the second son of **Roger Bigod** (also known as Roger Bigot) (died 1107), sheriff of Norfolk and royal advisor, and **Adeliza**, daughter of **Robert de Tosny**.”

“After the death of his elder brother William, who perished without issue in the sinking of the White Ship on November 26, 1120, Hugh was allowed to inherit his brother’s office of royal steward and many estates in East Anglia. He also succeeded his aunt, Albreda, heiress of her brother, Berengar de Tosny, with lands in Yorkshire and in Normandy. Hugh became Constable of Norwich Castle in 1122.”



Above: Bird’s eye view of Framlingham Castle in Suffolk, England. **Roger Bigod** (22nd Great-Grandfather; circa 1144-1221) built Framlingham Castle of stone.

“Hugh initially supported Stephen of Blois as king of England. On the death of Henry I in 1135, his nephew Stephen usurped the throne, despite the oath Stephen and the barons had sworn to accept Henry’s daughter, Empress Matilda, as his successor. It was Bigod who asserted that, in his last days, Henry I had named Stephen to become king at the expense of his daughter Matilda. Civil war resulted when, in 1139, Matilda commanded the military strength necessary to challenge Stephen within his own realm.”

“Hugh initially supported Stephen of Blois as king of England. On the death of Henry I in 1135, his nephew Stephen usurped the throne, despite the oath Stephen and the barons had sworn to accept Henry’s daughter, Empress Matilda, as his successor. It was Bigod who asserted that, in his last days, Henry I had named Stephen to become king at the expense of his daughter Matilda. Civil war resulted when, in 1139, Matilda commanded the military strength necessary to challenge Stephen within his own realm.”

“King Stephen had the initial support of the English barons, but in 1136 he was stricken with sickness, and the report of his death was quickly spread abroad. Hugh Bigod seized and held Norwich castle. Stephen, quickly recovering, laid siege to the city and Hugh was compelled to surrender. In February 1141, Bigod fought on Stephen’s side in the First Battle of Lincoln, after which the Earl deserted the captured king. In July of that year, he was granted the earldom of Norfolk by the Empress Matilda but he appears to have assumed a position of armed neutrality during the civil war, rather than actively siding with the supporters of the empress.”

“He supported his first wife’s brother-in-law, Geoffrey de Mandeville, 1st Earl of Essex, during his rebellion against King Stephen in 1143-1144. During the disagreement between King Stephen and Archbishop Theobald in 1148, Hugh Bigod sided with the archbishop



and received him in his stronghold, Castle of Framlingham, but joined with others in negotiating a reconciliation between the king and archbishop.”

“Five years later, in 1153, when Henry, Duke of Normandy, soon to be King Henry II (1154–1189), landed in England to assert his



Above: Depiction of the town of Norwich in the 1300s with its prominent castle. Left: Modern day view of Norwich Castle and Norwich Cathedral. Hugh Bigod (23rd Great-Grandfather; 1095-1177) was appointed constable of Norwich Castle in 1122.

claim to the throne, Bigod held out in Ipswich against Stephen’s forces, while Henry II, on the other side, laid siege to Stamford.

Both places fell to Stephen. In the critical state of his fortunes, however, Stephen was in no position to punish the rebel earl. Negotiations between the two parties resulted in Henry’s recognition as Stephen’s heir and Hugh eluded retaliation.”

“On Henry II’s accession in December 1154, Bigod received confirmation of the possession of his earldom and office of royal steward by a charter issued apparently in January of the next year. The first years of the new reign were spent in restoring order to the shattered kingdom, and in breaking the power of the independent barons, which had grown out of control during King Stephen’s reign.”

“It was not before long that Bigod became agitated under the rule of law initiated by Henry. He grew restless with measures such as the scutage, a fee paid by vassals in lieu of military service, which became the central feature of Henry II’s military system of operation by 1159. The Earl showed signs of resistance but was at once put down. In 1157 Henry II marched into the eastern counties and received the earl’s submission.”

“After this incident Hugh Bigod makes no significant appearances in the chronicles for some time; he is named among those who had been excommunicated by Becket, in consequence of his retention of lands belonging to the monastery of Pentney in Norfolk.”

“In 1173 the young Crown Prince Henry (also known as Henry the Young King), raised a

revolt against his father, Henry II. This gave Hugh Bigod yet another chance for rebellion, along with the league of the English barons and the kings of France and Scotland in his favor. He at once became a leader in the cause, perhaps eager to revive the feudal power, which Henry II had curtailed. In addition to the fact that the inevitable conflict, as far as England was concerned, centered round his possessions. The custody of Norwich Castle was promised by the young prince as his reward.”



“The king’s energy and good fortune were equal to the occasion. While he held in check his rebel vassals in France, the loyal barons in England defeated his enemies there. Robert de Beaumont, 3rd Earl of Leicester (died 1190) landed at Walton, in Suffolk, on September 29, 1173, and marched to Framlingham, joining forces with Hugh. Together they besieged and took the castle of Hagenet in Suffolk on October 13, held by Randal de Broc for the crown. But the Earl of Leicester was defeated and taken prisoner setting out from Framlingham at the Battle of Fornham, near Bury St Edmunds, Suffolk, by the justiciar, Richard de Luci and other barons. These then turned their arms against



Top: Bungay castle in Bungay, Suffolk, England, by the River Waveney, which was built by Roger Bigod of Norfolk (24th Great-Grandfather; died 1107) in circa 1100. Above: Thetford Priory in Thetford, Breackland Borough, Norfolk, England, which was founded in 1103 by Roger Bigod. His son, Hugh Bigod (23rd Great-Grandfather; 1095-1175), Roger Bigod (22nd Great-Grandfather; 1144-1220), and his wife, Ida de Tosny (22nd Great-Grandmother; 1156-1226), were buried here.

Earl Hugh, who, not being strong enough to fight, opened negotiations with his assailants. It is said he bought them off, and at the same time secured a safe passage home for the Flemings in his service.”

“Though defeated and compelled to surrender his castles, Bigod kept his lands and his earldom, and lived at peace with Henry II until his death reportedly in 1177 in Palestine.” (Rogers Family, pages 67-69)

Certainly fought in Battle of Hastings

Roger Bigod (24th Great-Grandfather; died 1107) “was a Norman knight who traveled to England in the Norman Conquest. He held great power in East Anglia, and five of his descendants were earls of Norfolk.

“Roger came from a fairly obscure family of poor knights in Normandy. Robert le Bigot, certainly a relation of Roger’s, possibly his father, acquired an important position in the household of William, Duke of Normandy (later William I of England), due, the story goes, to his disclosure to the duke of a plot by the duke’s cousin William Werlenc.”



Above: Inverted shield of William Marshal, 1st Earl of Pembroke (22nd Great-Grandfather; 1146–1219) “the incomparable knight” with obituary and epitaph portrayed by Matthew Paris circa 1219.

“Both Roger and Robert may have fought at the Battle of Hastings, and afterwards they were rewarded with a substantial estate in East Anglia. The Domesday Book lists Roger as holding six lordships in Essex, 117 in Suffolk and 187 in Norfolk.”

“Bigod’s (Bigot) base was in Thetford, Norfolk, then the see of the bishop, where he founded a priory later donated to the abbey at Cluny. In 1101 he further consolidated his power when Henry I granted him license to build a castle at Framlingham, which became the family seat of power until their downfall in 1307. Another of his castles was Bungay Castle, also in Suffolk.”

“In 1069 he, Robert Malet and Ralph de Gael (then Earl of Norfolk), defeated Sweyn Estrithson (Sweyn II) of Denmark near Ipswich. After Ralph de Gael’s fall in 1074, Roger was appointed sheriff of Norfolk and Suffolk, and acquired many of the dispossessed earl’s estates. For this reason he is sometimes counted as Earl of Norfolk, but he probably was never actually created earl. (His son

Hugh acquired the title earl of Norfolk in 1141.) He acquired further estates through his influence in local law courts as sheriff and great lord of the region.”

“In the Rebellion of 1088 he joined other barons in England against William II, whom they hoped to depose in favor of Robert Curthose, Duke of Normandy. He seems to have lost his lands after the rebellion had failed but regained them after reconciling with the king.”

“In 1100, Robert Bigod (Bigot) was one of the witnesses recorded on the Charter of Liberties, King Henry I’s coronation promises later to influence the Magna Carta of 1215.”

“In 1101 there was another attempt to bring in Robert of Normandy by removing King Henry, but this time Roger Bigod stayed loyal to the king.” (Rogers Family pages 70-71)

Descendant of William Marshall

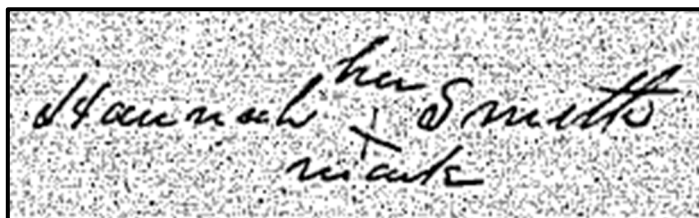
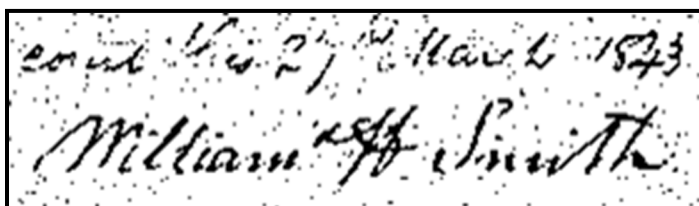
Isabel Bigod (20th Great-Grandmother; 1210-1250) was the daughter of **Hugh Bigod**,

3rd Earl of Norfolk, a Magna Carta surety, and **Maud Marshal**. Maud was the daughter of **William Marshal, 1st Earl of Pembroke** (22nd Great-Grandfather; 1146-1219) one of my favorite ancestors. We are also direct descendants of William Marshall through our William Farrar line and Jefferson line. (Rogers Family, page 64)

Revolutionary War Soldier

Redmond Smith (4th Great-Granduncle; 1760-1842) was a Revolutionary War soldier.

His pension record states that he served as a private in a company commanded by Captain Cooley of the Regiment commanded by Colonel Parker in the Virginia line for one year and seven months from 1777. He was living in Essex County, Virginia, at the time of his enlistment at Richmond, Virginia, in 1777. It is possible that Redmond served even longer in the army, but it was only necessary to state a part of one's service in order to qualify for a pension. He married Hannah Hamlett "according to the forms of the Episcopal Church of that day" on January 13, 1786, in Lunenburg County, Virginia. He applied for his pension while he was living in Fleming County, Kentucky, in 1832. He was awarded a pension of \$63.33 per year (about \$2,000 in 2021 money). Redmond probably died in Fleming or Henry County, Kentucky. Hannah Hamlett Smith signed the pension application with her mark.

Top: Original signature of Redmond Smith (4th Great-Granduncle; born January 13, 1760; died December 3, 1842) on his Revolutionary War application for a pension in Fleming County, Kentucky, September 3, 1832. Middle: Mark of Hannah Hamlett Smith (wife of Redmond Smith; she was born in 1767; married January 13, 1786, in Lunenburg County, Virginia). Above: Signature of William H. Smith (only child of Redmond and Hannah Smith; born in 1787) on his mother's widow's pension application, March 27, 1843.

Redmond stated in his pension application that "on the 28th of June, 1778, he was in the Battle of Monmouth." He furthered stated that "he was in detachment of 1,000 men who had a skirmish with the British at Valentine's Hill near New York and was delivered by Morgan" in 1778/1779. (The Smith Family, pages 141-142)

The Battle of Monmouth (New Jersey), June 28, 1778. "Unsteady handling of lead Continental elements by Major General Charles Lee had allowed British rearguard commander Lieutenant General Charles Cornwallis to seize the initiative but Washington's timely arrival on the battlefield rallied the Americans along a hilltop hedgerow. Sensing the opportunity to smash the Continentals, Cornwallis pressed his attack and captured the

hedgerow in stifling heat. Washington consolidated his troops in a new line on heights behind marshy ground, used his artillery to fix the British in their positions, then brought



Above: George Washington confronting General Charles Lee at the Battle of Monmouth on June 28, 1778. Private Redmond Smith (4th Great-Granduncle; 1760-1842) fought at Monmouth in the Virginia Line of the American Army. The American Army showed in this battle that it had greatly improved as a fighting force. Below: Fort Necessity in 2012. In 1754, early in the French and Indian War, Col. George Washington surrendered this fort to the French for a peaceful withdrawal of his forces. Thomas and John Burnett (5th Great-Granduncles) both served as soldiers in the French and Indian War (1754-1763). They began their service at Fort Fredericksburg in 1757.

his father's estate that occurred in 1754, and in 1757 he enlisted in the French and Indian War (1754-1763) along with his brother, **John Burnett** (circa 1730-1773), who was drafted. They both served under Captain Forrester Upshaw." (Note: John Burnett was the guardian for his younger sister, **Phebe Burnett**, 5th Great-Grandmother, after their father died in 1749. Apparently, he never married and if he did, he never had any children.) (The Smith Family, pages 29-32)

Moved from Virginia to Arkansas

In 1824, **Redmond Rudd Smith** (3rd Great-Grandfather; 1794-1881) married **Judith S. Farrar** (3rd Great-Grandmother; about 1798-1836) in Mecklenburg County, Virginia. Judith was the daughter of **George Farrar** and **Elizabeth Boyd** (4th Great-Grandparents) (See Farrar Family for their histories). Redmond's farm was located near Boydton in Mecklenburg County, Virginia, on Big Branch Creek (*Mecklenburg County, Virginia, Deed Book 35*, page 38).

Redmond and Judith had seven children: Mary Ann Smith (1825-1915), George Fields

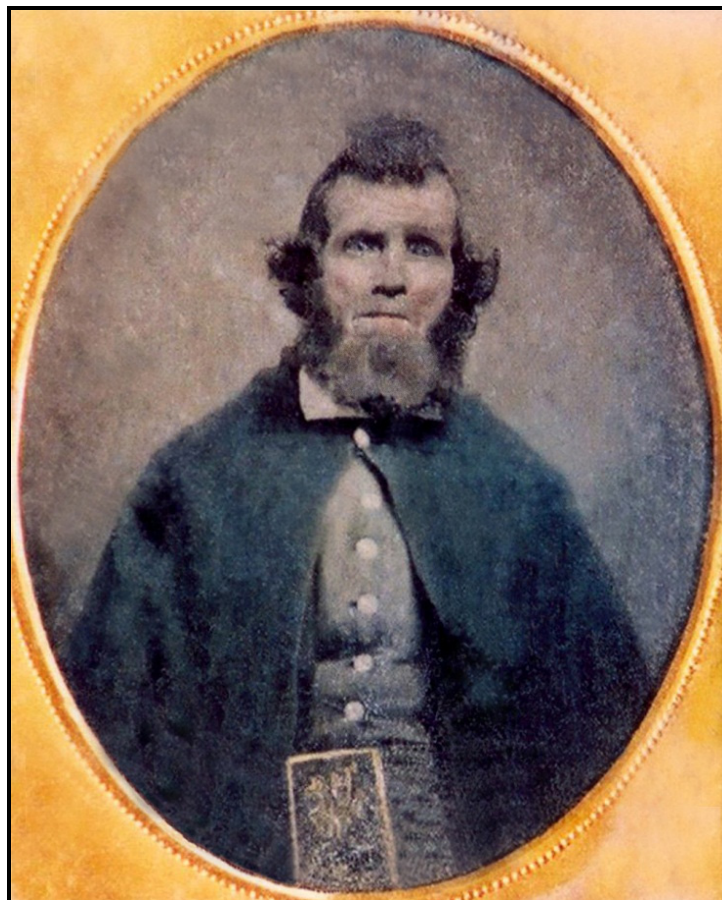
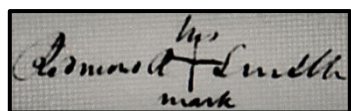
up a four gun battery under Major General Nathanael Greene on nearby Combs Hill to enfilade the British line, requiring Cornwallis to withdraw. Finally, Washington tried to hit the exhausted British rear guard on both flanks, but darkness forced the end of the engagement. Both armies held the field, but the British commanding General Clinton withdrew undetected at midnight to resume his army's march to New York City." (*The Battle of Monmouth*, Wikipedia.)

Brothers Served as Soldiers in the French and Indian War

Thomas Burnett (5th Great-Granduncle) "was born in Southfarnham Parish of Essex County, Virginia, on Piscataway Creek at the old Burnett homestead. He left Essex County soon after the division of



Smith (1826-1899), William Smith (1827), Thomas R. Smith (1828), **Augustus Burnett Smith** (2nd Great-Grandfather; 1832-1890), Elizabeth Smith (1835-1853) and Mark



Above: Redmond Rudd Smith (3rd Great-Grandfather: 1794-1881) about 1850, when Redmond was about 56 years old. . Top left: Richard Martin (me) and Will Smith, direct descendants of Redmond Smith, standing at the site of Redmond’s home, which was built circa 1855, in 2002. He made his own red bricks for his chimneys, and a pile of bricks is all that remains of his once nice home. Middle: Giant white oak tree next to Redmond’s home. The property is located 1.3 miles west of downtown Princeton, Arkansas, immediately north of Highway 8. Very few details of his life are known today. His sons lived a few miles away and he certainly saw them often. Left: Mark of Redmond Smith on a \$150 promissory note dated February 7, 1824, in Virginia. The name of his wife, “Judith J. Farrar,” is also on the note.

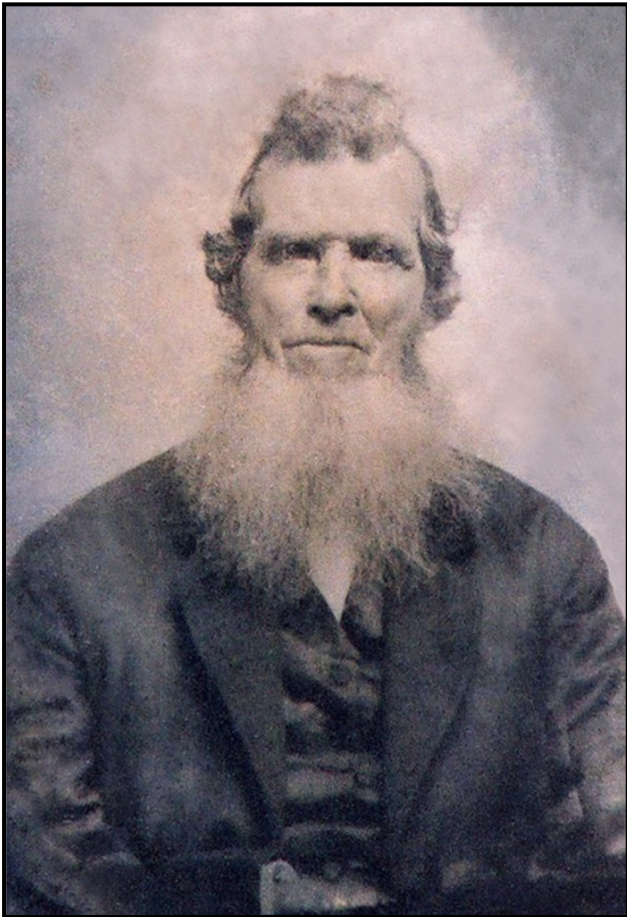
Smith (1836-1836). All of their children were born near Boydton, Virginia.

Judith had poor health for several years and died when she was only twenty-nine years old in Mecklenburg County, Virginia, in 1836. “Her mother, being an invalid, was unable to help so Rebecca Farrar, Judith’s sister, took care of the housework for her. After Judith died Redmond felt it was improper for Rebecca to remain so he asked her to marry him. She consented. So Redmond and Rebecca saddled horses and rode to Boydton, Virginia, where they were married in 1837.”

Redmond was named after his uncle, Redmond Smith, who was a private in the Virginia

Worthy to Remember an Abridgment

Line during the Revolutionary War (see above). His middle name comes from his mother

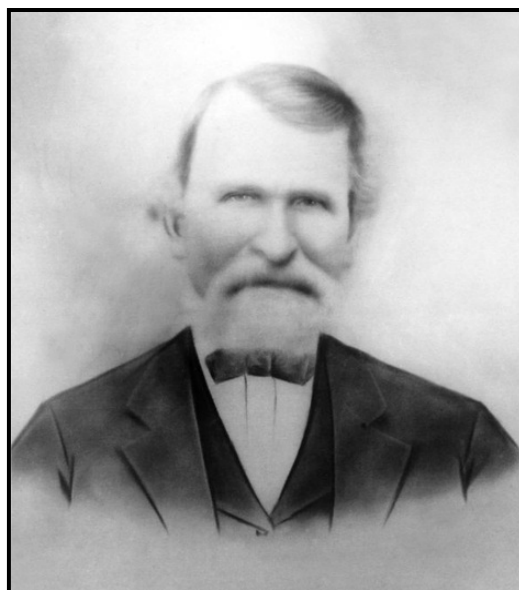


Top: I'm standing on land originally owned by Redmond Rudd Smith, my 3rd Great-Grandfather near Princeton, Arkansas, on a bright, sunny morning in November 2020. **Left:** Second photograph of Redmond Rudd Smith taken when he was in his late 60s or early 70s. He died when he was 86 or 87 years old. **Above:** Gravestone of Redmond and his second wife, Rebecca Farrar (3rd Great-Grandaunt), in Princeton Cemetery. His first wife, Judith Farrar (3rd Great-Grandmother), died in Mecklenburg County, Virginia; Rebecca was her sister.

Nancy Rudd. In 1855, Redmond and Rebecca Farrar Smith moved from Mecklenburg County, Virginia, to a new farm located one and one-third

miles due west of Princeton in Dallas County, Arkansas. He built a red-brick house with tall chimneys off the main highway from Princeton to Arkadelphia, Arkansas (now called Highway 8). There is nothing left of the house today except a pile of red bricks. I have twice visited the site of his home with my close cousin, Will Smith (a second great-grandson of Redmond Smith), and recently on a beautiful day in November 2020 with my nephew, Dave Moran.

Redmond sat for two photographs. One was taken about 1850 in Virginia when he was in

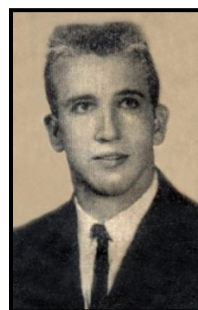
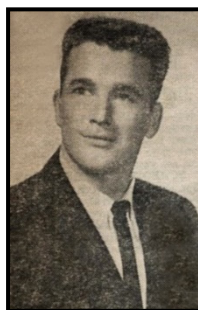


his mid-50s, and the other was taken after he moved to Arkansas when he was probably in his late 60s or early 70s. He died when he was 86 or 87 years old. I have found in my genealogical research that it is a rare thing to find a photograph of any distant relative, but to find two portrait photographs of the same relative is an exceedingly rare event. I appreciate the fact that he took the time to take these pictures and that members of his family preserved them for our generation to be able to record and keep them. (The Smith Family, pages 89-90)

Above: Portrait of George Field Smith (2nd Great-Granduncle; 1826-1899), son of Redmond Rudd Smith, and his home (top left) in Dallas County, Arkansas. Far left: William Redmond Smith (1859-1924; son of George Field Smith) and his wife, Lou Allie Launius (1879-1951). Left: Theodore Pryor Smith (1913-1990; son of William Redmond Smith), who joined the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints. Below: Three of Theodore's children who served as missionaries for the church. Left to right: William Smith (1962), his brother, Don Smith (1963), and Cathryn Sue Smith (1966), at the time of their mission calls. Will Smith came home from the service and his family told him about Joseph Smith. He told me that he immediately knew "he was a prophet."

Joined the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints

George Field Smith (2nd Great-Granduncle; 1826-1899) married Susan Mallett in Boynton, Mecklenburg County, Virginia, in 1854 and moved to Arkansas in 1855. George and Susan had seven children, including **William Redmond Smith** (1859-1924), who married Lou Allie Launius (1879-1951) in 1905. Their fourth child was **Theodore Pryor Smith** (1913-1990) who married Gladys Bell Frazier (1916-2009) in 1937. Missionaries from The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day



Saints stopped to visit Theodore and Gladys in Fordyce, Arkansas, in the 1950s. Although



active in their own church, they listened to the Elders, believed their teachings, were baptized, and later became leaders of the Latter-day Saint faith in south central Arkan-



Top left: Will and Deanna Smith on May 6, 2000. Left: Their home located south of Malvern, Arkansas, in 2002. Will is a fifth-generation member of the Smith family to live in Dallas County, Arkansas, from 1855 to 2016. He moved to Springville, Utah, in 2017. Above: Princeton Cemetery in Dallas County where many generations of the Smith family are buried; 2002. Lower left: The family of Theodore Smith in 1978. Front left to right: Dianne Smith Summer-ville (1949-1988), Gladys Frazier Smith (mother; 1916-2009), Theodore Pryor Smith (father; 1913-1990) and Cathryn Sue Smith West (1945-living). Back row, left to right: James Smith (1947-living), Don Smith (1943-2018), Will Smith (1940-living) and Elmer Smith (1938-2001). Below: Servetus Alexander Smith, son of George Field Smith (2nd Great-Granduncle), with his wife, Rena Benson Smith.



sas. Three of their children became missionaries for the church: William Julian Smith (1940-present) served in the California Mission; Don Rus-

sell Smith (1943-2018) served in the New York Mission; and Cathryn Sue Smith (1945-living) served in the New York Cumorah Mission. From 1994 to 1996, William Smith served as a bishop. During this time, he built a beautiful home south of Malvern, Arkansas.

I met my cousin, Will Smith, for the first time on January 1, 1997. We talked until about two in the morning. He told me that his parents had joined the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints while he was in the army. He came home from the service and right away they told him about Joseph Smith and he believed it immediately. He said, "I recognized Joseph Smith the moment I first heard about him. I knew he was a prophet and that what he taught about God was true." Will's oldest son was also called to serve as a missionary in the California Los Angeles Mission, the same mission



that Will was called to some twenty-five years earlier. (Coincidentally, this is where I served as a missionary as well from 1973 to 1975.) (The Smith Family, pages 92, 96-100)

His Wife made His Life Miserable

Thomas R. Smith (2nd Great-Granduncle; born 1828) accompanied his parents in their move from Mecklenburg County, Virginia, to Dallas County, Arkansas, in 1855. He met Fanny Overton of Camden, Arkansas, and wanted to marry her. His father, Redmond Smith, warned Thomas not to marry Fanny and when Thomas went ahead with the marriage he was disowned. The reasons why Redmond objected to the marriage are not given, but whatever they were he must have judged rightly for “Fanny made Thomas’ life miserable, and he died young leaving several children.” His children later moved from Camden to north Arkansas. A granddaughter named Sutton visited her relatives in Princeton, Arkansas, in 1941. (The Smith Family, page 100)



Above: “Harvesting of a large cypress tree in the Moro bottoms near Jacinto in Dallas County, Arkansas, in circa 1925” (*Encyclopedia of Arkansas*). Timber became an important business in Dallas County, Arkansas, and Will Smith (2nd Great-Grandson of Redmond Rudd Smith; see previous page) worked in this industry for most of his adult life.

A Blacksmith and then a Civil War Soldier

Augustus Burnett Smith (2nd Great-Grandfather; 1832-1890) was born on September 18, 1832, near Boydton in Mecklenburg County, Virginia. He came to Dallas County, Arkansas, with his father, step-mother and three brothers in 1855. On December 6, 1858, he married **Mary Evelyn Phillips** (2nd Great-Grandmother; 1840-1890), daughter of Isaac Cullen Phillips and Elizabeth Tinker.

Augustus and Mary were the parents of six children, all born at Tulip, Dallas County, Arkansas: Elizabeth Judith “Betty” Smith (1860-1880), Virginia Lee “Lee” Smith (1864-1937), William Cullen “Will” Smith (1866-1923), Mary Augustus “Mollie Gus” Smith Winfield (1872-1924), **Jessie Isaac Smith** (Great-Grandmother; 1876-1923) and Edna “Pearl” Smith (1878-1922). All six children lived to maturity.

Augustus, called “Gus,” bought a farm four miles north of Tulip, Arkansas, and built a home at the junction of the Leola and Malvern to Tulip roads. “This house burned in 1892 while the family was away from home. William, his son, built a new house, but put it about 1,400 feet north in what he considered a better spot. That house was taken down in 1911 and he built another home. In 1962 Mrs. Nancy Rice Smith, William’s widow, owned this property.” After she died, her daughter, Arline Smith (1903-1976), inherited the land and house and lived there until her death in 1976. In 2000 the home was demolished.

Worthy to Remember an Abridgment

From 1840-1862, Tulip, Arkansas, was one of the centers of education in Arkansas, being the home of the Arkansas Military Institute and the Tulip Female Collegiate Seminary.

One of the best men in the state died at his home about five miles below Lonio last week. We refer to our late esteemed friend, Mr. A. B. Smith, than whom no truer or kinder hearted man ever lived. In his death the community loses a noble citizen, the wife and children an affectionate, indulging and loving husband and father. He was one of the first men in Dallas county with whom we became acquainted and the more our acquaintance developed the better we liked him. His many noble traits of character, his unselfishness and kindly disposition won for him the esteem of all his acquaintances. The entire community mourns the loss of one so greatly admired. We offer our condolence and deeply sympathise with the bereaved family in the loss of so near and to them.



high ceilings and most rooms had fireplaces. The deep verandas, wide hallways and comfortable furnishings made an elaborate setting for spontaneous enjoyment during the frequent social occasions.”

“Mercantile and professional citizens followed and soon a center of refinement was

It was called the, Antebellum Athens of the State of Arkansas” and was one of the most pleasant and prosperous communities in the state. A history of Tulip, emphasizing its prosperous antebellum years, was printed in the For-dyce newspaper.

“Most of the families of

Tulip owned large plantations. Their homes were large and as a whole very attractive, standing back from the main road. They were enhanced by tall

Top left: Obituary of Augustus Burnet Smith (2nd Great-Grandfather), from the *Arkansas Meteor*, a Malvern newspaper, in 1890. The obituary emphasizes that “no truer or kindhearted man ever lived” and that he was unselfish and had a “kindly disposition.” His portrait and that of his wife, Mary Evelyn Phillips Smith, are shown earlier in this history on page 281. Above: Inscriptions on their monuments in Hunter’s Chapel Cemetery (left), which is across the highway from where their farm was located in Dallas County, Arkansas. Their monuments are on the far right of the second row. There are six great-grandparents buried here.

oaks and mimosa with cedar trees bordering the long walks. These dwellings had large rooms with

created. Col. William Bayliss built the first store in the town. Dr. William Pinckney Bethell recorded in his diary that he built the first schoolhouse ‘with my own hands.’ Tulip was an attractive grouping of buildings spaced nicely apart. Main Street ran parallel with the



Above: Land owned by Augustus Burnet Smith (2nd Great-Grandfather; 1832-1890) in Dallas County, Arkansas. The house and barn were built by his son, William Smith (Great-Granduncle; 1866-1923), and stood for almost a hundred years until it was torn down in 2000. His daughter, Arline Smith, lived in this home until her death in 1978. The land is located across Highway 9, just a few hundred yards from Hunter’s Chapel Cemetery.

present-day Highway 9. There were the usual shops, apothecaries, doctors’ offices, lawyers’ offices, the livery stables, and blacksmith shop owned by George Doty; the tailor shop owned by Lorenzo Dow Lipscomb and the general merchant stores. James Pryor was the shoemaker and there was also a carriage maker. This made up the business district with residences located here and there in and near town.” Unfortunately, the Civil War caused most of that to eventually disappear.

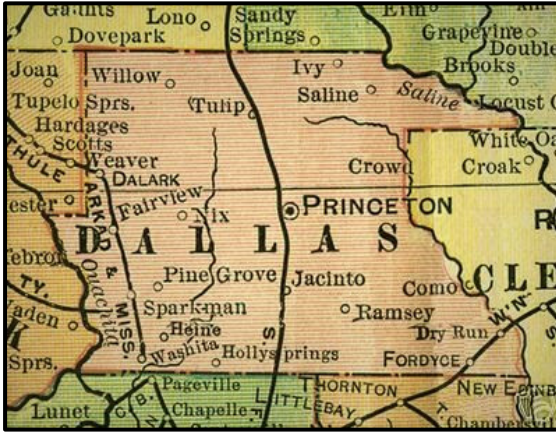
“Away from a major river or railroad the village died basically of cultural attrition. Its younger people moved away for the most part, and the old houses were burned, taken apart, or even moved. Although Tulip’s heyday passed with the destruction and social disruption wrought by the war, it remained the home of many of the descendants of the old settlers” (*Fordyce, News-Advocate*, Bicentennial Edition, “Tulip, Arkansas,” pages 10-11, by Sarah Brown, published November 19, 1986).

Augustus was a blacksmith. When the Civil War began, he was one of the first to enlist on the side of the Confederacy. He enlisted July 28, 1861, at Arkadelphia, Arkansas, in Company D, of the 12th Arkansas Infantry. Augustus fought in the Battle of Island Number Ten in 1862. He was captured but managed to escape with other members of his company and rejoined the army, this time serving in the 6th Arkansas Regiment. “The 6th, as part of Liddell’s Brigade—Army of Tennessee, saw action at Murfreesboro, Chickamauga, Ringgold Gap, and other battles leading to the Battle of Atlanta. They endured Hood’s winter operations in Tennessee and saw action in North Carolina.” It is not known when Augustus returned home.

After the war Dallas County, Arkansas, suffered economically. Whereas before the war the towns of Tulip and Princeton had prospered, now most farmers just made enough to get

by. Due to Augustus being a blacksmith by trade, he did better than most and was able to live a solid, middle-class lifestyle. He and his family were Methodist and highly regarded.

Augustus died of heart trouble on July 10, 1890. His wife, Mary, died just three months later on October 11, 1890, of breast cancer.



Above: Old color map of Dallas County, Arkansas, from the late 1800s that shows the principal towns when Princeton was still the county seat. The farm and home of Augustus Burnet Smith (2nd Great-Grandfather; 1832-1890) was located four miles north of Tulip immediately west of the main highway. Redmond Rudd Smith (3rd Great-Grandfather; 1794-1881) lived 1 1/3 miles due west of Princeton. Many descendants of Redmond lived in or near Princeton, Jacinto and Tulip.

Mary was thrown by a horse and injured her breast. Cancer developed, her breast was removed, but some cancer still remained, causing her death. Augustus and Mary had portraits made of themselves about 1889. Mary was sick at the time of the drawing, and it shows in the pained expression on her face. They were buried near their home in Hunter's Chapel Cemetery, four miles north of Tulip, Dallas County, Arkansas. They attended church in the nearby Methodist meetinghouse, built in 1848. This building was replaced in 1924 by another frame church house, which is still standing in 2021.

“Gus” had two obituaries. One in the *Arkansas Meteor* (see previous page) and another in the *Arkansas Methodist*, written by his one-time minister, J. E. Caldwell, in 1890. Caldwell wrote: “He made

a profession of religion and united with the Methodist Church in the prime of young manhood, was for several years a punctual attendant at Church and gave satisfactory evidence of his piety. By some means during, or shortly after the war, he allowed himself to withdraw from the Church and I believe never renewed his relation to the Church.” He continued, “I was always on intimate terms with Gus, often talked with him on religious subjects, evinced genuine interest in religion, was always glad to welcome the preacher to his house, and took an active part in sustaining Church interests, he was especially reverent of religious worship, and a thoughtful hearer of the word. His death was an affliction the whole community felt.”

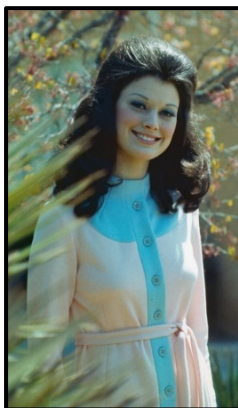
“Three months and one day later, his beloved Mary, his wife, follows him. Sister Smith was born in Hardeman County, Tennessee, August 5, 1840, and came to Arkansas with her father, Isaac Phillips in 1846. She professed religion when she was about 10 years of age and united with the Methodist Church. The writer was for several years her pastor, always found her sound and firm in her faith, consistent in her life, she loved the house of God and esteemed her pastor as a Christian woman should. When at all practicable, she was punctual in her attendance upon the ministry of the work. I believe all who knew her loved and respected her and a faithful member of the Church.”

“Her last illness was protracted and very painful, but she was patient, faithful unto death... Though extremely weak in body her faith rested calmly on her Savior. She was

ready. The best of all God was with her, and she passed safely over the river.” (The Smith Family, pages 100-104)

Miss Texas in 1973

Judy Mallett (Great-Granddaughter of George Mallett and Mary Smith, 2nd Great-Grand-



aunt) won the Miss Texas pageant in 1973 and placed fifth in the Miss USA pageant. An accomplished violinist, she played the violin for the half time show of the

Above: Judy Mallett Cureton (Great-Granddaughter of George Mallett and Mary Smith, 2nd Great-Granddaughter), who was Miss Texas in 1973, and placed 5th in the Miss USA pageant. An accomplished violinist, she played the violin for the half time show of the Super Bowl that was held in Houston, Texas, in 1974. She later became an attorney. Right: Ron Martin is holding together the gravestone of Elizabeth “Bettie” Smith, his Great-Granddaughter, 1860-1880, in Hunter’s Chapel Cemetery in 2002. She died on her wedding day and was buried in her wedding dress.



Super Bowl that was held in Houston, Texas, in 1974.

She became an attorney and in her mid-60s was practicing family law in Fort Worth, Texas, in 2017. She also played on the Tonight Show with Johnny Carson, who said that she got robbed of the Miss USA title. (The Smith Family, page 93)

Died on Her Wedding Day

Elizabeth Judith Smith (Great-Granddaughter; 1860-1880) called “Betty,” was named for her two grandmothers. She was engaged to Philip John Phillips, the son of John B. Phillips and first cousin of Mary Evelyn Phillips Smith, her mother. Elizabeth’s mother objected to her marrying her cousin because she thought that there had been too much intermarrying already in the Phillips family. “Mary made the remark that she would rather see Elizabeth dead than married to any Phillips. Elizabeth took sick suddenly of pneumonia and died on her wedding day. She was buried in her wedding dress on April 2, 1880.” (The Smith Family, pages 102 and 105)

Rode Her Horse to School

In 1881 **Virginia Lee Smith** (Great-Granddaughter; 1864-1937) married John Lewis Hall,

called “Jack,” a carpenter by trade, in Dallas County, Arkansas. She ran a boarding house for thirty years. Her niece, Frances Massey Bowles, wrote, “Both were fine people.” They



Above: Old Tulip School House on its 100th anniversary in 2002. Virginia “Lee” Smith (Great-Grandaunt; 1864-1937) rode her horse, “Bald Hornet,” for three miles to school here in the late 1800s. That school-house no longer stands. Right: Monument in Oak Ridge Cemetery in Malvern, Arkansas, to the Cox family (no relation), who all died at Galveston, Texas, in the great hurricane of 1900. Will Smith (Great-Granduncle; 1866-1923) was there, but survived the winds and the flood. His sister, Edna Pearl Smith (Great-Grandaunt), is buried in Oak Ridge.



lived in Malvern some years before moving to Little Rock, Arkansas. Virginia, called “Lee,” died at 800 North Street in Little Rock, but was buried in Hunter’s Chapel Cemetery in Dallas County, Arkansas, next to her husband, who had died seventeen years earlier. They had five children, but only two of the five reached maturity.

Clara Strong related to her daughter how they got to school when she was a child. “We rode three miles to school at Tulip, Arkansas, with my sister, Nannie Strong on her horse *John* with Bertie and **Lee Smith** (Great-Grandaunt) on their horse *Bald Hornet* along with Foxy Phillips on her Indian pony, *Choctaw*. The school was taught by Professor Phillips.” (The Smith Family, pages 105-108)

In Galveston during the Great Hurricane of 1900

William Cullen Smith (Great-Granduncle; 1866-1923), called “Will,” lived most of his life at the Smith family home four miles north of Tulip, Dallas County, Arkansas. After his parent’s home burned in 1892 he built another home a few hundred feet away.

However, he rebuilt this house in 1911, and it was then occupied by his widow, Nancy Sally Rice, until her death in 1965. Then it was occupied and well-maintained by his daughter, Arline Smith, until her death in 1978. After Arline’s death the house was never lived in again and was demolished in 2000.

News of William’s marriage was printed in the *Arkansas Meteor* on December 9, 1898.

“Will Smith, who is well-known in this community, was married last Thursday to Miss Nancy Rice at the home of the bride near Lono.”



Above: Children and granddaughters of Augustus and Mary Phillips Smith (2nd Great-Grandparents) in September 1921. Left to right from back: William Cullen Smith (Great-Granduncle; 1866-1923), Virginia Lee Smith Hall (Great-Grandaunt; 1864-1937) and Arline Smith Williams (1903-1978; daughter of Will Smith). Front, left to right: Mary “Mollie” Smith Miller (Great-Grandaunt; 1872-1924), Edna “Pearl” Smith Noble (Great-Grandaunt; 1876-1922), Jessie Isaac Smith Massey (Great-Grandmother; 1876-1923) and Werth Evelyn Smith (1900-1941; daughter of Will Smith). Right: Will Smith with his four sisters on the same day. House was that of Mary Smith Miller. (The oldest sibling, Elizabeth Judith Smith, 1860-1880, died on her wedding day; see earlier.)



William went to Galveston, Texas, in 1900 and was there at the time of the terrible hurricane and tidal surge that flooded the entire city and killed about 6,000 persons (September 8, 1900). Afterwards, he was always concerned when he saw heavy clouds

appear in the sky. In 1922 William was bitten by his rabid Airedale dog while trying to release it from a fence. The following year, William died of a heart attack. He was buried in Hunter’s

Chapel Methodist Church Cemetery across the highway from his home. Later his wife, Nancy,



Top left, left to right: Virginia Lee Smith, Jessie Smith, Mary Smith, and Edna Pearl Smith, daughters of Augustus Smith (2nd Great-Grandfather). Middle: Will Smith (Great-Granduncle, 1866-1923; son of Augustus Burnet Smith, 2nd Great-Grandfather) and his two daughters, Werth Smith (left; 1900-1941) and Arline Smith (right; 1903-1977). Lower left: Two photographs of Werth Smith in 1921. Above, left to right: Patricia Bowles (my mother), Mildred Bowles (my aunt), Arline Smith (daughter of Will Smith, Great-Granduncle), and Francis Massey Bowles (my grandmother) on the porch of Arline's home. I took this photograph on June 11, 1973, when I was 19 years old. This was the last time that they were all together. Francis died the following year and Arline passed away in 1978.

was buried beside him. William and Nancy had two daughters: Werth Evelyn Smith (1900-1941) and Arline Smith (1903-1976). Neither of their daughters had any children. Both are buried in Hunter's Chapel Cemetery near their parents.

My most memorable visit to my cousin Arline was in the summer of 1973. My mother, Patricia Bowles, my aunt, Mildred Bowles, my grandmother, Frances Bowles, and I spent one warm summer afternoon at the old Smith homestead. Arline had a nice flower garden, and she flew the American flag from her porch. I took a photograph of everyone on the front porch and Arline had her arm around her cousin, Frances (see above). That was a tender moment, and it was the last for those members of the Smith family. Grandmother died the next year and "Cousin Arline," as we always called her, died just three years later. (The Smith Family, pages 107-110)

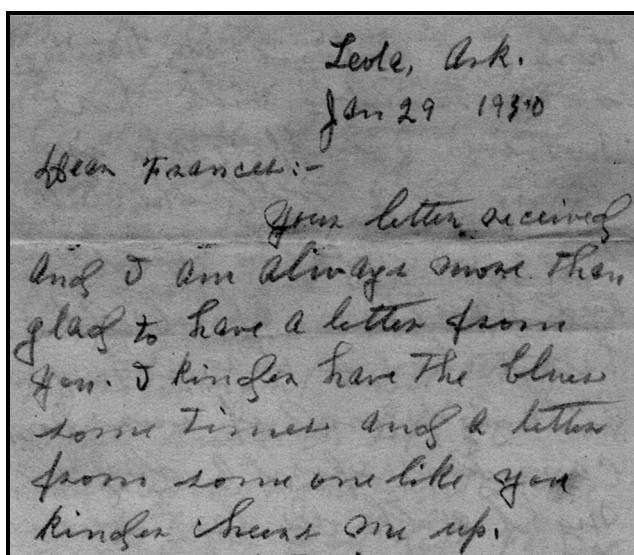
A Beautiful, Sweet Lady

Jessie Isaac Smith (Great-Grandmother; 1876-1923) was fourteen years old when her

parents died in 1890. She lived with her brother, William Smith, and her sisters, Mary and Edna, at the family home four miles north of Tulip, Arkansas, for a while. Then she went to Malvern, Arkansas, and stayed with her oldest sister, Virginia Lee Smith Hall, and attended school. She got a job working as a clerk in a dry goods store. “While living in Malvern, she liked to go down to the train depot and watch the trains come in. Jessie noticed that the conductor was handsome and asked the Negro porter, whom she knew from Dallas County, about him. She baked the porter a cake and told him it was a bribe to get him to introduce her to the conductor. He did introduce them and on January 26, 1902, at the Little Rock home of her sister, Mary Smith Miller, she married the conductor, **John William Massey**” (Great-Grandfather; 1875-1946). They had their honeymoon in Norfolk, Virginia, Washington D.C. and “other interesting places near there.” The *Arkansas Meteor* reported on February 7, 1902, that, “Mr. and Mrs. John Massey, formerly, Miss Jessie Smith, who were married in Little Rock recently, will visit relatives here this week.” They made their home at 1115 West Fourth Street in Little Rock, Arkansas, until May 1,



1912, when they moved to 722 Marshall Street. Ten and a half years later, Jessie died of cancer of the womb on January 26, 1923.



Left: Beginning of a letter written by Nancy Sally Rice Smith (1878-1965; wife of William Smith, Great-Granduncle) to Frances Ewell Massey (Grandmother; 1905-1974) on January 29, 1930. Nancy was the sister-in-law of Jessie Isaac Smith (Great-Grandmother; 1876-1923, above). She wrote, “I kind of have the blues sometimes and a letter from someone like you kind of heartens me up.” Frances kept this letter for all of her life.

Jessie and John had two children: **Frances Ewell Massey** (Grandmother;

1904-1974) and **Smith Massey** (Great-Uncle; 1911-1918). Smith was a “beautiful boy,” but died when he was only six-and-a-half years old of pneumonia following measles and whooping cough. (See *The Massey Family* for Grandmother, Frances Massey’s history.)

Jessie’s husband, John William Massey, was a conductor on the Missouri Pacific Railroad for forty-five years. He was treasurer for both the Conductors Lodge and the Insurance Retirement Board and Legislative Committee.

Four years after the death of Jessie, John married Eva Blassingame (1895-1952). They had one daughter, **Willie Lois Massey** (Great-Aunt; 1929-2007). (The Smith Family, pages 113-117)

Became a Shaker

Benjamin or Bond Burnett (1765-1837; son of Benjamin/Bond Burnett, son of Jeremiah Burnett, son of John Burnett II, 6th Great-Granduncle) became a Shaker with his wife in

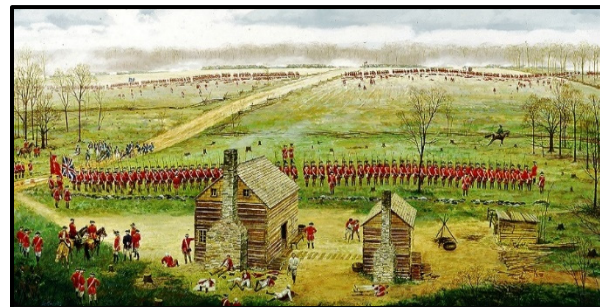


Left: Pleasant Hill Shaker Village, “Shakertown,” located 25 miles southwest of Lexington, Kentucky. Benjamin or Bond Burnett (1765-1837; son of Benjamin/Bond Burnett, son of Jeremiah Burnett, son of John Burnett II, 6th Great-Granduncle) became a Shaker with his wife in 1809 and practiced celibacy for the rest of their lives. They are both buried in Pleasant Hill with five of their children in unmarked graves (above). The church has only two members today. Below: Depiction of the Revolutionary War Battle of Guilford Courthouse. Jeremiah Burnett II (1740-1816; son of Jeremiah Burnett, son of John Burnett II, 6th Great-Granduncle) served as a militiaman from Henry County, Virginia, in this important battle fought on March 11, 1781. The British held the field, but lost a fourth of their army.

1809 and practiced celibacy for the rest of their lives. They already had several children before joining this sect. (The Smith Family, pages 210-214)

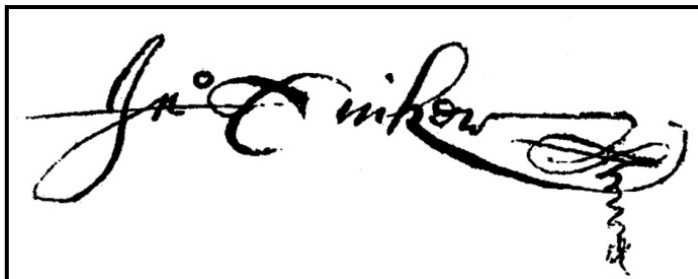
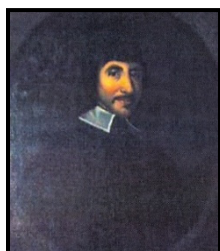
Fought in the Battle of Guilford Courthouse in 1781

Jeremiah Burnett II (1740-1816; son Jeremiah Burnett, son of John Burnett II, 6th Great-Granduncle) served as a militiaman from Henry County, Virginia, in the Battle of Guilford Courthouse on March 11, 1781. The British held the field but lost a fourth of their army in this important battle. The battle was “the largest and most hotly contested action” in the American Revolution’s southern theater. General Greene eventually succeeded in recovering the southern states. He said, “We fight, get beat, rise, and fight again.” (The Smith Family, page 236)



Assistant to Two Governors

John Tinker (9th Great-Grandfather; 1613-1662) “was a productive and important man in the early history of New England.” He was as a friend and business associate of some of the leading men of the Massachusetts Bay Colony, including two governors. He was a pioneer in several towns and was the very first settler in what later became Groton, Massachusetts. Many of his original letters survive to this day.

Top: Signature of John Tinker (9th Great-Grandfather; 1613-1662). “His chirography was very neat as can be seen by the original papers that still exist.” City of London in 1616 by Claes Visscher. (*Wikipedia*.) John Tinker wrote a letter from London to John Winthrop, Sr. in 1639. He stated that it was a hard time to get money and predicted, “There are like to come but a small quantity of passengers ouer in compareison of what hat beene formerly...but rather see troublesome times approaching, both within and without the kingdome.” He was completely right. Never again did Puritans immigrate to New England in such numbers as between 1630 and 1640, “the Great Migration,” and soon England was involved in a civil war. Far left: Portrait of John Winthrop, Sr. (1587-1649). He was elected governor of the Massachusetts Bay Colony in 1629 and led a fleet of eleven vessels and 700 passengers to Massachusetts in 1630. Left: His son, John Winthrop, Jr. often called “the younger” (1606-1676). He was Governor of Connecticut for many terms and founder of Ipswich, Massachusetts, and New London, Connecticut (1646). Some time after the death of John Winthrop, Sr., John Tinker became his business agent. Lower left: *Algonquin Couple*, 18th century watercolor by an unknown artist. (*Wikipedia*.) The town of Groton “began with the trading post of John Tinker, who conducted business there with the Nipmuc Algonquin Indians at the confluence of Nod Brook and the Nashua River.

“John Tinker appeared in the records of Boston as early as 1635. He is said to have been

born in England. We know that his mother was living in the Colonies in 1639, for while on a business trip to England, John Tinker wrote a report or letter to John Winthrop, Governor of the Massachusetts Bay Colony, and enclosed a 'letter to my mother' and asked



Above: Gristmill built by John Winthrop the younger in New London, Connecticut, in 1650. John Tinker (9th Great-Grandfather) resided in New London during the last years of his life and operated the mill for Winthrop. The mill has been recently restored and is located next to Interstate 95, north of downtown New London. It is rare for any building to survive for so long and to have one still standing after 350 years is especially unique.

the Governor to see that she received it. It did not mention her name.”

“John Tinker was consistently referred to in the records as ‘Master Tinker’ or ‘Mr. Tinker,’ a term reserved for those who were either exceptionally well-educated or held a high social position. John Tinker’s social position in England is unknown, but he was a highly educated man. He acted as an Attorney for many of the most prominent men of Boston. He was a scrivener and wrote many legal documents extant today. He acted as a confidential business agent for John Winthrop, Governor of the Massachusetts Bay Colony, for many years, and was possibly even part of the Winthrop household. His name was included on an undated tailor’s bill sent to Governor Winthrop as receiving several articles of clothing. Other names on this bill were a Winthrop family member and others in the household; it was endorsed by Gov. Winthrop ‘ffamilye Bill.’”

“He was a trader or merchant, conducting business with the Indians locally and engaging in the shipping trade with England and the West Indies. He owned a part interest in the ship *Susan and Ellen* and traveled at times as supercargo on that ship and others. He entered partnerships with several of the sons of Gov. Winthrop at various times, but his particular friend was John Winthrop, Jr., who was instrumental in convincing John Tinker to move to the new community of Pequot or New London, in the Connecticut Colony.”

“By 1640 Capt. John was among those listed as landowners in the town of Wethersfield. It is not known if he ever lived there, but he did leave Boston for Connecticut in 1640.”

“In 1643 he formed a partnership with John Griffen and Michael Humphrey of Windsor to manufacture pitch and tar and to collect turpentine. These products were needed by the British Navy and were nearly the only products that England allowed to be exported from the Colonies. Tinker owned large tracts of land in that part of Windsor called Massaco, which later became Simbury, Connecticut. He returned to Boston by 1648 and divested himself of the Windsor land holdings in 1654.”

“The *Aspinwall Notarial Records of Boston* verified the divorce of a Sarah Barnes from her husband William Barnes by Order of the Court dated 6 (4) 1648. Sarah had been deserted by her husband, William Barnes ‘of Glouster,’ and according to the law at that time she was able to obtain a divorce after a period of three years. The divorce was not recorded until 29 (8), 1649, and the record immediately following this certifies the marriage of Sarah Barnes to John Tinker. The very next record concerned the property of John Tinker’s wife Sarah, and referred to Gregory Willshere of Bread Street, in London, Ironmonger, as Tinker’s ‘trusty and well-beloved brother.’ A letter dated April 1, 1653, from Robert Hawthorne of Bray, to his brother William Hawthorne of New England was addressed to the care of Mr. Tinker at William Willsheer’s house, Ironmonger...in Breadstreet, London.” Bread Street is a ward in central London.



Above: Ring owned by John Tinker (9th Great-Grandfather; 1613-1662).

“It would seem then, that John Tinker’s first wife was Sarah (Willshere) Barnes, sister of Gregory Willshere or Wiltshire.”

“At the time the records were recorded, Sarah (Willshere) Barnes Tinker had already died. Only three weeks had passed from the date of the divorce until Sarah’s inventory in Suffolk County Records was taken 22 (5) 1648.”

“Sarah (Wiltshire) Barnes Tinker had two daughters at the time of her death, Mary and Alice. The eldest daughter was entrusted to the care of Richard Cooke, tailor of Boston, and the younger daughter to the care of John Tinker.”

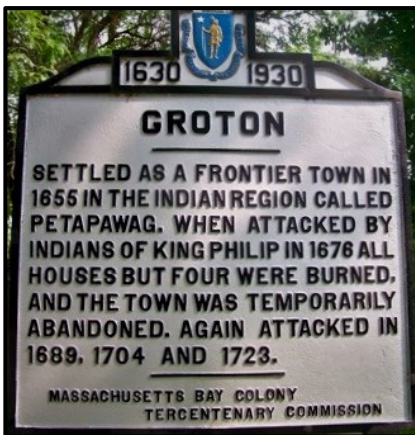
“John Tinker married before December 9, 1649, as his second wife, **Alice Smith** (9th Great-Grandmother), daughter of **John** and **Mary Smith** (10th Great-Grandparents) of Boston, Sudbury and Lancaster, Massachusetts; born November 20, 1629, and died in Lyme, Connecticut, on her birthday, November 20, 1714, at age 85.”

John Smith died in Lancaster, Massachusetts, on July 16, 1669. His wife, Mary, predeceased him by some ten years on December 27, 1659, in Lancaster. They have no grave-stones. Their parents or place of origin in England is unknown.

“Although he was listed as an original proprietor of Groton or Groaten, Massachusetts, along with brothers in law, **Richard Smith** (9th Great-Granduncle) and Amos Richardson, he lived there only a brief time. Amos Richardson, tailor, remained in Boston, Richard Smith moved to Sudbury and John Tinker located in Lancaster.”

The town of Groton, Massachusetts, “began with the trading post of John Tinker, who conducted business there with the Nipmuc Algonquin Indians at the confluence of Nod Brook and the Nashua River. Indians called the area ‘Petapawag,’ meaning ‘swampy land.’ Pioneers followed the Indian trails from Massachusetts Bay, as Tinker had, and found the region productive for fishing and farming. The town was officially settled and incorporated

in 1655, named for Groton in Suffolk County, England, the hometown of an early selectman, Dean Winthrop.” (*Wikipedia*).



Above: Groton, Massachusetts, in 1886. The town of “Groton started with the trading post of John Tinker (9th Great-Grandfather; 1613-1662), who conducted business there with the Nashaway at the confluence of Nod Brook and the Nashua River” (*Wikipedia*). Left: The town was attacked by Indians four times between 1676 and 1723.

“The family was in Lancaster, Massachusetts, by 1655 and lived there through 1659. John Tinker was granted a sizable real estate holding to entice him to that area. His education and skills in government were needed.” He was Clerk of the Town during his entire residence and became “the most prominent member of the board of selectmen.” While acting in his appointed positions

he once wrote, “Gentlemen, be pleased to resolve these cases; and vouchsafe us an addition to our powers where defective, in any of these, as without which we are, or seem, of little courage; and by which, through God’s assistance, we may be theirs and yours humbly to serve.” He also wrote, “The power was given as requested to give a ‘small penalty’ to the breach of our orders made for the good of the town, each neighbor, etc.” (*History of the Town of Lancaster, Massachusetts: From the First Settlement to the Present Time, 1643-1879*, page 82, by Rev. Abijah P. Marvin, published 1879).

While in Lancaster “he never relinquished his private enterprise and remained a trader with the Indians. He was even termed ‘the Nashaway Trader,’ Nashaway being the Indian name for the Lancaster area. In 1659 John Tinker sold his land and future right to land in Lancaster to Major Simon Willard and removed to Pequot in the Connecticut Colony.”

“Some of the most important men in the Boston and Lancaster, Massachusetts, areas organized themselves into a group termed ‘The Atherton Partners’ and purchased a large tract of land in the ‘Narragansett’s Lands,’ an area that was something of a buffer zone between the colonies of Massachusetts and Connecticut. The Atherton Partners were John Winthrop Jr., Major Humphrey Atherton, Capt. Hutchinson, William Hudson, John Tinker, Amos Richardson and Richard Smith Sr., but the presence in the Pequot area of several men called at various times Richard Smith Sr. precludes a positive identification of the Richard Smith in the Atherton Company as the same man from Sudbury and Lancaster.

Both John Tinker and Amos Richardson were married to a sister of Richard Smith. Amos Richardson in 1653 dealt with a millwright in Boston whom he called brother and later brother-in-law. John Tinker, in a 1659 letter to Governor John Winthrop Jr., in Hartford,



Right: The Township of Lancaster, Massachusetts, in 1854. John Tinker lived in Lancaster from 1655-1659 and was one of its most important citizens. His in-laws, John Smith (died 1669) and Mary Smith (died 1659) (10th Great-Grandparents), died in Lancaster and were buried in unmarked graves in the Old Settlers Burial Yard (above in 1994). (The oldest marked grave in this cemetery is that of John Houghton, 9th Great-Grandfather, who died in 1684; see earlier.)



stated that he had just arrived in Pequot and his wife's brother had moved to Pequot with him.

Pending an agreement on terms, John Tinker proposed that his brother-in-law might help the Governor to keep his Sawmill working over the winter. Subsequent letters indicate that the proposal was never acted upon. Alice Smith Tinker's brother was **Richard Smith** (9th Great-Granduncle) of Boston, Groton, Sudbury and Lancaster, Massachusetts, and later of Lyme, Connecticut. He was termed a 'Millwright' in Lancaster, Massachusetts. Amos Richardson and Richard Smith had land dealings in Saybrook and Amos Richardson signed over to Master Richard Smith all interest and right to land in Saybrook which he had received by deed from John Comstock, signed April 9, 1660. The land appeared in the Saybrook records as there had not yet been a separation making Saybrook and Lyme distinct jurisdictions. Before his death, John Tinker gave Amos Richardson a deed for 240 acres of land 'on the east side of the river' in trust for his eldest son, an action usually reserved for a relative."

"In 1659 the area called Pequot encompassed what today is Groton, Stonington, New London, Waterford, Niantic and parts of Saybrook later called Lyme. John Tinker's land holdings or rights to land were scattered and were in areas that stretched from the 'Narragansett lands,' now Rhode Island, to Stonington, Connecticut, and along the coast to Saybrook, Connecticut. His major business holdings, wharfs and warehouses, were located in the town of New London, where he resided with his family."

"There is an original document in the Connecticut Archives that was written in the hand of John Tinker himself in which Mateteamo, a chief of the Mohegan Indians, for love and

affection gave a gift of land to John Tinker on December 30, 1659. A tract of land was also granted to John Tinker by the Town of New London in October 1659.”

“In Pequot John Tinker was active in local and colonial government as well as Ecclesiastical affairs. Richard Blinman, the minister of the First Congregational Church of New



Above: The Ancient Burying Ground in Hartford, Connecticut, where John Tinker (9th Great-Grandfather) was buried in 1662. His monument, if he ever had one, no longer exist. Of over 6,000 known burials here, only 415 are marked by a gravestone today. Frances Hosmer (9th Great-Grandmother; 1602-1675) and her son, Stephen Hosmer (8th Great-Grand-uncle; 1644-1693), are also buried here (see earlier).

London, left the area soon after John Tinker arrived. Before leaving, Rev. Richard Blinman sold to John Tinker, The Harbour’s Mouth Farm, located on the west side of the mouth of the Thames River. Today this area can be identified as being at Great Neck, near Pleasure Beach, Waterford, Connecticut. The Harbour’s Mouth Farm was later called ‘Tinker’s Farm.’

The town was without a minister for some time and John Tinker frequently served the congregation as a preacher until the new minister arrived. He also carried on his shipping trade business and in 1660 John Tinker was licensed by the Colony to distill and sell liquor in New London and to suppress by law anyone else attempting to do the same. He was granted a monopoly in this area.”

The government of the Colony of Connecticut was located at Harford, Connecticut. The Governor, the Council, and the General Court, conducted the business of the Colony. There was a need to oversee the civil matters at the local level too and before ‘County Courts’ were established in 1666, ‘Assistants’ were appointed in major communities to hold court and direct the Government business. In May 1660, the General Court at Hartford granted New London the right to have an Assistant and Commissioners with power to hold Court on Small cases. John Tinker was appointed Assistant for the New London area along with Commissioners, Obediah Bruen, James Rogers, Lt. Samuel Smith and John Smith.”

“Serving in the capacity of Chief Magistrate of the Court of New London, John Tinker evidently refused to prosecute an individual who had allegedly made derogatory remarks about the King of England. This caused three overly zealous men to accuse John himself of a treasonous act. They were William Thompson, the Indian Missionary, Richard Haughton, and William Morton, the Constable. John Tinker brought charges against his accusers for defamation. He died while attending the General Court session at Hartford in October 1662, before the suit had been resolved. The charges of treason against John Tinker were regarded by the court to have no substance and the men who had sought to malign his character sustained fines. The moderator hearing the charges at the trial of

Constable Morton answered Morton’s demand for ‘justice for the king’ by saying to Morton, ‘He should have justice, if it were to hang half a dosen of you.’”

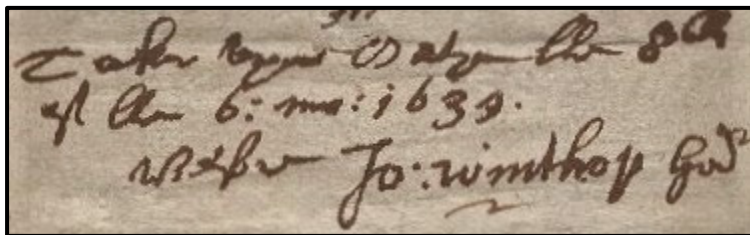
“As an expression of respect, the expense of John Tinker’s last illness and funeral amounting to 8.6.4 pounds was assumed by the Public Treasury of the Colony of Connecticut by vote of the General Court. He was probably buried in the Center Church Yard (Ancient Burying Ground) in Hartford, as were many of the important men of the Colony in the early days, even though their residence was in another part of the Colony. If there was a stone for John Tinker, it no longer exists.”



Rare letters from the 1600s. A number of letters that John Tinker wrote Governor Winthrop still exist and some are recorded in *The Winthrop Papers*, under John Tinker, Volume 4, pages 218-250.

John Tinker to John Winthrop: “*To the Right Worshippfull and his honer Mr: Jno. Winthrop: Esqr: Governour, dd*” (1639; all original spelling retained).

“Right Worshippfull—After my humble duty and sevis to your sellfe and my mistress presented, I think it a part of my ingagement to your worship to aquainte you with the dispensation of the Lord, and his good providence in our voyage, and our safe ariuall. We



Above: Note written in 1639 by John Winthrop (above; 1587-1649), Governor of Massachusetts from 1630-1634, 1637-1640, 1642-1644, and 1646-1649. John Tinker (9th Great-Grandfather; 1613-1662) wrote him a number of letters from London, which survive to this day.

had, for the most part, blessed be God, faire and comfortable winds and wether, only aboute some 400 leagues from the land’s end of N. Engl.; we had such a strong N: W: winde we could not beare saille for 4 or 5 dayes together; and when we came to the Land’s End of England, the Lord did in mercy very remarkably deliver vs

from ship rack, which we hould euer worthy our remembrance, & doe ackknowledg our sellfes, with all his people, bound to blesse his name ffor the same, which happened thus: after we sounded, and had found such depth and ground wherby our master and all his company did conclude they were the sounds of Vshan on the Ffrench side, the next day came vpp with vs a ship of Darmoth, ffrom Rochell, bound home, whoe jointly concluded the saem, and sopped we were some 30 leages of from Dartmoth, to the W. S. W. He being soe neere his owne coast, we concluded to ffollow his light, sopping by morning to make the Start, which is a point of land twixt Plimoth and Dartmoth. The wind being ffaire and ffrest at S. S. W. & our corsse N. b. E.; aboute midnight we heard the other shipp

make a great shoute, which some few of our company heard, and suddenly looking aboute, espied close vnder our lee bowe the breach of a great rock, which they supposed to haue beene the Edy stone, which lyeth 2 or 3 leauges of from the harbors mouth of Plimmoth, which afterward appeared to be a great rock called the Woolfe or Gulfe, between Silly and the Lands End, some 3 or 4 leauges south, and had it not beene that per the speciall prouidence of God, he, then at the helme had made a great yawe toward the wether at vnawares, we had vnavoydable beene cast away, but the Lord, whoe neuer slumbreth, did graciously watch ouer and deliver vs. Oh that we might therefore praise him for his goodnesse, and walke answerable to this mercys soe largely extended toward vs: 2 days after, the wind scanting vppon vs, we put into Plimoth, being Saterdy the 9th of November, 5 weekes & a day ffrom our waying anchor att Nantasket. The cheefe news we heare is of the peace made with Scotland, and a great ouerthrow the Hollander hath giuen to a fleete of the Spainerds of 70 great shippes, waiteing vppon the coast of England, to aide the plate ffleete, the sircumstance of which I suppose your worship wilbe better informed of per some opportunity, per which I hope to send this my leter, viz: per a ship of Bastable. I shall not truble your worship ffarther, but humbly craueing your ffauour, leaue you to the euer-lasting protection of the Almighty, & euer rest. Your worships humble servant to my poore power, John Tinker.”

“I humbly inteat your worships ffauour these inclosseds may be conuayed per the next oportunyty. Indorsed by Gov. Winthrop, ‘Jo: Tinker.’”

After the above letter, John Tinker wrote another one to the governor from “London: ffebr: 26th: 1639.”

“To the Right Worshippffull and his much honored Mr. Joh Winthropp, Esqr: Governour of the Matachuses theise dd in Boston, N: Engl.”

“Right Worshippffull,—Hauing an oportunyty wherein to aquainte you with the Lords Goodnesse in our welfare, I thought it not good to neglect it, though I haue nothing to present to your worship ffor present but theise ffew lines, haueing effected nothing as yet, eyther for the receiueing of monys, or paying Mr. Rowe, or buying of any comodytyes; it being a very dead and hard time for monyes generally, and like to bee a yeare in which (so farr as I can see, for the present) there are like to come but a small quantity of passengers ouer, in comparison of what hath beene formerly, and the reasone I conceiue to be the hopes of some reformation in England, by the intended parlament, the wich cann hardly bee expected per judicious and wise men (by reason of that great stroak the Prealacy haue in pointing out the country’s choice of Parlament men) but rather see troublesome times approaching, both within and without the kingdome. The Lord teach vs to make a sainty-fyed vse of his vissitacions, and to learne righteoussnesse by all his judgments abroad in the world. There were Comissioners sent from the Scotts, which after some longe continuance, the King vouchsafed them audience, this last Fryday, being the 21st of Febr: and after some discontented speches, at last obtained ffauour to kisse the Kings hand, which was a hopefull signe of reconsillment, but they resolue they will neuer haue more Bishopps...” John Tinker.

“I would intreate your worships fauour that this letter to **my mother** (10th Great-Grand-

mother) may be conveyed by the first opportunity, for it is a matter of consequence, and I shall rest bound to your worship. We intend to set out about the 20th of April.” (The Tinker Family, pages 1-25; other letters that John Tinker wrote are recorded here.)

John Tinker and Alice Smith had eight known and possible children: Rebecca Tinker (born circa 1650; perhaps John’s oldest daughter), Sarah Tinker (1652-1652 in Boston), Mary Tinker Stancliff (born 1653 in Boston; died 1712), John Tinker, Jr. (born 1655 in Boston), Amos Tinker (born 1657 in Lancaster; Massachusetts; died 1730 in New London, Connecticut), **Samuel Tinker** (8th Great-Grandfather; born 1659 in Lancaster, Massachusetts, or New London, Connecticut; died 1733 in Lyme, Connecticut; married **Abigail Durant**), son Tinker (born 1660 in New London, Connecticut—perhaps is not another child, but is Samuel Tinker as their birthdays are the same), and Rhoda Tinker (born 1661 in New London, Connecticut).



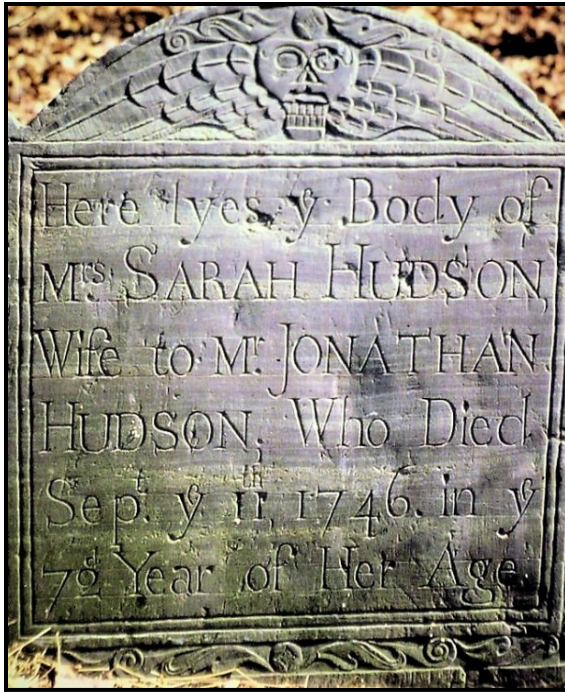
Above: Depiction of a Puritan court. In 1663, when Alice Smith (9th Great-Grandmother; 1629-1714) was 34 years old, she was “forced to face the Court and be examined” when it was discovered that she was “with child” after the death of her husband, John Tinker (9th Great-Grandfather; 1613-1662) in 1662. Being affluent, she was made to pay the usual fine for “impurity” of five pounds. Alice had a daughter, Sarah Tinker (1664-1746), who married Jonathan Hudson (see below). She then married William Measure (1636-1688), who was an “attorney of Boston” and soon moved to Lyme, Connecticut, William later kept an inn and a school where he taught children to read, write, and cost accounting “according to their abilities.”

Had a Child out of Wedlock

Alice Homan Smith (9th Great-Grandmother; 1629-1714; wife of John Tinker, above) was the daughter of **John** and **Mary Smith** (10th Great-Grandparents) of Boston, Sudbury and Lancaster, Massachusetts.

“In 1663 much too long after the death of John Tinker, it became evident that the widow Tinker was ‘with child.’ Since this was not to be tolerated in a Puritan Community, Alice was forced to face the Court and be examined. It is not clear who made the complaint, but Alice admitted the circumstance and further shocked the community by stating that the father of her unborn child was the 21-year-old son of the former minister, Jereiah Blinman. Alice paid a fine. In other court cases there was frequently a choice of punishment; a women could be forced to wear some sort of identification pinned to her bonnet proclaiming her sin, but for affluent sinners the Court was satisfied to exact punishment in the form of money, the usual fine for ‘impurity’ being 5 pounds. It is probable that the Court accepted Alice’s statement about Jeremiah Blinman, as he too paid a fine of 5 pounds in 1663. But Jeremiah was not the father of the child, and we will never know why he was thus accused. The father was Lt. Samuel Smith, one of the commissioners of New London, and a married man. It was thought that a woman in labor would be unable to lie about the paternity of her child. The Court so firmly believed this evidence, that it was sufficient to cause a man to become legally responsible for the

financial support of a child when he was identified under these circumstances. Perhaps this was what led Samuel Smith to desert his wife and move to Virginia and finally to the



Left: Gravestones of Sarah Tinker Hudson (half 8th Great-Grandaunt; 1664-1746) and her husband, Jonathan Hudson (1658-1729; above).

Carolinas. Perhaps he feared the censure of his peers, but more likely he simply did not want to face up to such an unsettling circumstance. Smith spent a great deal

Smith had told numerous people that he must leave town before Mrs. Tinker's baby was born, as he was responsible. It would even seem that he took the daughter of the local tavern owner with him when he left. There were also documents saying that Samuel Smith offered to pay a significant sum of money, a reward, to anyone who would take the child and deliver it to him, whether it was weaned or not. So, it is the more surprising that several printed sources feign ignorance to the reason the Lt. Smith left town and even suggest that it was an act of self-sacrifice on his part to allow his wife to marry another man. Rebecca Smith received her divorce in 1667, returned to her family in Wethersfield, and did indeed marry again."

"Alice Tinker had a child, **Sarah Tinker** (half 8th Great-Grandaunt. 1664-1746), in the spring of 1664. She then remarried before January 27, 1664/1665 to Attorney ('of Boston') and Scrivener, William Measure. William Measure was born about 1636, died on March 24, 1688, and his inventory registered in Boston, Massachusetts, was dated July 27, 1688. Gov. E. Andros granted Administration to his relict, Alice, on June 26, 1688."

"William and Alice Smith Tinker Measure took the Tinker children and moved to Lyme, Connecticut soon after their marriage. William Measure's name appears frequently in town records and it is clear that he was very active in civic affairs. At a Lyme Town meeting on January 18, 1680/1681, William Measure was granted the license to run 'an ordinary' or an inn. At the same meeting 'Mr. William Measure was chosen and Agreed with to keep a Schoole and to teach Children to Read, Wright and Cost Accounting According to their Capasitys.'"

"Amos and Samuel Tinker as well as Alice and William Measure obtained land from the Town of Lyme 'by grant.' It was by right of John Tinker, who must have been a proprietor

of Lyme, as in later divisions of the town property, descendants of John Tinker received headrights by virtue of being descendants of John Tinker. John Tinker Jr. never claimed the land in Stonington or Groton that was put in trust for him by his father, and that land was sold years later by Samuel Tinker with approval of the Court. John Tinker Jr. does not appear in any record after the death of his father. So on June 18, 1688, when Amos Tinker presented a grievance at a Lyme Town Meeting because his brother John Tinker, deceased, had not received his portion of the land in the fourth division, the fact that the Town did grant land to John Tinker Jr. indicates ‘head rights.’ At a much later date land was laid out in the right of Mary as ‘daughter of John Tinker.’ This was after Mary’s death and the only reason for mentioning her father would be to establish her right to the land. It



Top right: Meeting House Hill Cemetery in Old Lyme, Connecticut, where Alice Smith Tinker Measure (9th Great-Grandmother; 1714) is buried (no monument). Photograph taken by Mark G. Cappitella. Above: Amos Tinker (8th Great-Granduncle; 1657- 1730) built this home in Old Lyme, Connecticut, about 1700. Additions have been made to it over the years, and it is now a large home. Today (2021) it is the oldest home still standing in Old Lyme. Amos moved to New London after 1714, where he is buried.

does not have a gravestone. (The Tinker Family, pages 17-19)

is something of a mystery that William Measure did not marry Alice before the birth of Sarah, but possibly as long as Alice remained a widow of John Tinker the law looked upon all of her children as children of John. Sarah Tinker Hudson claimed her ‘head-right’ in land of the fourth division of Lyme by virtue of being ‘daughter of John Tinker.’ All of John Tinker’s heirs received grants of land in Lyme, with the exception of Rhoda. The only knowledge of Rhoda is her birth and mention of her in her father’s will.”

Alice Smith Tinker Measure died on November 20, 1714, and was buried in Meeting House Hill Cemetery in Old Lyme, New London County, Connecticut. She

Oldest Home in Old Lyme, Connecticut

“**Amos Tinker** was born at Lancaster, Massachusetts, on October 28, 1657, and baptized at the First Church of Boston on May 16, 1658, and died in New London, Connecticut on May 8, 1730, in his 73rd year. He was buried in ‘Ye Towne’s Ancientest Burial Place,’ New London (no gravestone). He married in Lyme, Connecticut, on June 1, 1682, **Sarah Durant** (8th Great-Grandaunt), daughter of George and Elizabeth Blake Durant (9th Great-

Grandparents) of Lyme and Middletown, Connecticut. (She was the sister of Abigail Durant, who married Amos' brother, **Samuel Tinker**.) He lived in the Lyme area until the death of his mother and then returned to New London." (Note: If date of marriage is correct, then Amos and Samuel Tinker married Sarah and Abigail Durant in a double wedding ceremony on the same day in Lyme, Connecticut.)

Amos Tinker built a fine home across the street from the Congregational Church in Old Lyme, Connecticut, about 1700. Today (2021) it is the oldest house in Old Lyme. George Washington was entertained here on April 10, 1776, and General Lafayette in 1778 and 1825. (The Tinker Family, pages 22-23)

Ancient Gravestones

Samuel Tinker (8th Great-Grandfather; 1659/1660-1733) was born in Lancaster, Massachusetts, or New London Connecticut, on April 1, 1659/1660, and died in Lyme, Connecticut, on April 28, 1733.

As an adult he served as a deacon of the church. He married **Abigail Durant** (1668-1728), daughter of **George** (about 1635-1687) and **Elizabeth Blake Durant** (about 1640-1691) (9th Great-Grandparents) of Lyme and Middletown, Connecticut. Abigail died on December 24, 1728, in Southold, Long Island, New York. Samuel lived in Lyme until sometime after 1692, when he moved to Shelter Island and then to Southold, Long Island. After the death of his wife, he returned to Lyme, Connecticut, to live with his son, Samuel." He was buried in Duck River Cemetery, which is located about a block from the Congregational Church in Lyme. The inscription on his gravestone reads: "HERE / LYETH ye / BODY OF Mr. / SAMUEL TINKER / SENr / DIED APRIL / ye 28-1733 in / ye 71 Year of / HIS AGE." His monument was carved by William Stanclift.



Above: I'm beside the gravestone of Samuel Tinker (1659-1733), my 8th Great-Grandfather in Duck River Cemetery in Old Lyme, Connecticut, in 2012. His age at death is inaccurately recorded and should read that he died "in ye 74 or 75 year of his age." Samuel is buried in the first row of markers past the entrance gate. Many of his descendants are interred in this cemetery.

Abigail Durant Tinker’s gravestone still exists in good condition in Old Bethany Cemetery in Mattituck, Suffolk County, New York. The inscription on her monument reads: “HERE / LIES ye / BODY OF ABIGAL / WIFE OF MR. SAMV / ELL TINKER SEN. / WHO DIED DECE / MBER ye 24 / 1728 AGED 61.”



Samuel and Abigail were the parents of eight children, all born in New London, Connecticut: Jordan Tinker (about 1683), **John Tinker** (about 1685), Samuel Tinker (about 1687-1755), Abigail Tinker (about 1689-1733), Alice Tinker (about 1693), Mary Tinker (1695), Elizabeth Tinker (1697) and Rhoda Tinker (1697-1776). (The Tinker Family, pages 19-20, 57-58)

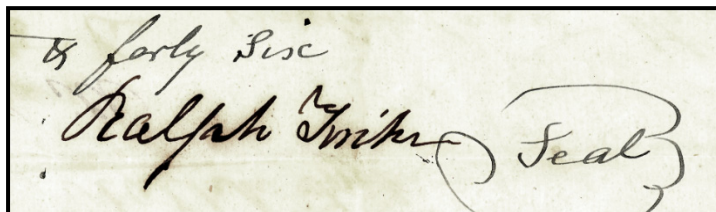
Above: Gravestone of Abigail Durant Tinker (8th Great-Grandmother) in Old Bethany Cemetery in Mattituck, Long Island, New York. The inscription reads: “HERE / LIES ye / BODY OF ABIGAL / WIFE OF Mr. SAMU / ELL TINKER SEN. / WHO DIED DECE / MBER ye 24TH / 1728 AGED 61.”

Prominent Doctor Left New England and Became a Farmer in Missouri

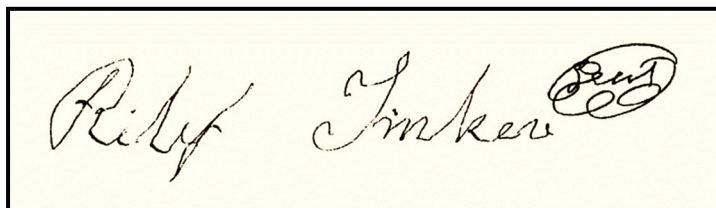
Below: Signatures of Ralph Tinker (4th Great-Grandfather; 1781-1856) on his will dated in 1846, and his wife, Relief Whitney Tinker (4th Great-Grandmother; 1785-1861), on her will dated June 1, 1859.

In 1804 **Ralph Tinker** (4th Great-Grandfather; 1781-1856) moved

from Worthington, Massachusetts, with his wife, **Relief Whitney** (4th Great-Grandmother; 1785-1861), to Morristown, Lamoille, Vermont, where he practiced medicine. In 1816 he



moved his family to Hardin County, Kentucky. His daughter, **Elizabeth “Betsy” Tinker** (3rd Great-Grandmother; 1806-1850/1860), met **Isaac C. Phillips** (3rd Great-Grandfather; 1800-1883) while they were living in Hardin County, and they were married in 1823. (They later moved to near Tulip in Dallas County, Arkansas, where they both died.)



By 1830 Ralph and Relief moved near Bowling Green in Pike County, Missouri, where they lived the rest of their lives. In Missouri, Ralph abandoned the practice of medicine, bought 187 acres and became a farmer. The Pike County Census shows that Ralph was the owner of three slaves in 1830 and seven slaves in 1840. (In the 1880s his grandson, Walter H. Tinker, bought his farm.) (Ancient gravestones: The Tinker Family, pages 37-52)

Physician Built the Finest Home in Town

James Tinker's (4th Great-Granduncle; 1785-1860) biography was printed in *The History of Vermont*, page 687, published in 1863.

“Dr. James Tinker was born in Worthington, Massachusetts, December 12, 1785. He was



the son of Elihu and Lydia Huntington Tinker, who had nine sons and one daughter—two of the sons died in childhood. James lived with his parents in Worthington till 21 years of age, when he came to Morristown, and commenced the study of medicine with his brother, Dr. Ralph Tinker (4th Great-Grandfather), who had then (1807) been practicing medicine about 3 years in Morristown, and who was 7 years older than James.”

“He remained with his brother, Ralph, a year or more and then returned again to Worthington, Massachusetts, and completed his medical studies there, under Doctor Holland, the father of the distinguished writer and author, Dr. J. G. Holland. Having spent a year and a half with Dr. Holland, he returned again to Morristown in 1809, and commenced the practice of medicine, in company with his brother Ralph. The partnership continued a few years,

Top left: One year old Rebecca Martin is running between the gravestones of her fifth great-grandparents, Ralph Tinker (1781-1856) and Relief Whitney Tinker (1785-1861), in Mt. Pisgah Cemetery in Pike County, Missouri, in 1996. Left: Rebecca Martin, age ten, is standing with her brother, Michael Martin, age seventeen, in August 2006. Above: Home built by Dr. James Tinker (4th Great-Granduncle; 1785-1860) about 1828 in Morristown, Vermont, in May 2006. This was arguably the finest home in Morristown and the surrounding area. The house is now a bookstore, but at one time was used by the local branch of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints for meetings.

when it was dissolved and Ralph removed to Kentucky, and afterwards to Missouri, where he died a few years since.”

“Dr. James continued the practice, from the time he commenced in 1809, for more than 30 years. He soon obtained a very extensive business—his practice extending through the towns of Stowe, Waterbury, Mansfield, Sterling, Johnson, Hyde Park, Eden, Wolcott and Hardwick, and frequently being called to towns more remote.”

“He became a successful and skillful physician, and, by his industry and economy, was enabled to accumulate a moderate competence for himself and family.”

“His labors, however, were of a very hard and laborious character. During the first years of his practice, the country was new, and roads very poor. He was obliged to visit his patients either on foot or horseback, and his ride soon became so extensive that, in sickly seasons he was obliged to ride both night and day, to answer all the demands made upon him.”

“He married Anna Town, September 26, 1813, by whom he had one son and four daughters—all of whom are living, except one daughter who died in childhood.”

“Dr. Tinker died, April 19, 1860, aged 74 years and 4 months (buried in Mt. View Cemetery in Morristown). His widow still survives him (December 1862), though suffering from a most painful disease in her face, of a cancerous nature, for some 2 years past.”

“Dr. Tinker was a man of strong mind, a deep thinker, a powerful reasoner, of good scholarship—considering his early advantages, which were very limited—a skillful physician and surgeon, and, in his later years, after giving up the practice of medicine, he became a very industrious, hard-working and successful farmer. He was a man, though somewhat excitable and passionate, possessed of the most tender and kindly feelings, which always evinced themselves, not only towards his family as a kind husband and father, but extended also to all suffering humanity.” (The Tinker Family, pages 37-44)

Second Oldest Gravestone in Harvard

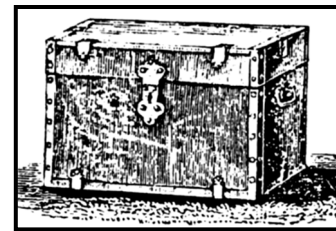
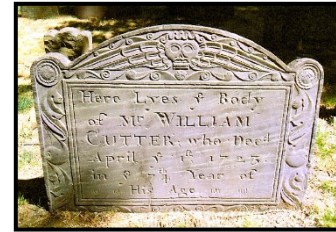
Richard Cutter (9th Great-Grandfather; about 1621-1693) and **Elizabeth** (9th Great-



Above: Monument to James Tinker (4th Great-Granduncle; 1785-1860) and his wife, Anna Town Tinker (1790/1791-1863), in Mt. View Cemetery near James' home (see previous page). The inscriptions read: “DR. JAMES TINKER / Was born at Wor / thington, Mass. / Dec. 12, A. D. 1785. / and died at Mor- / ristown, Vermont / Apr. 19, A. D. 1860. / aged 74 yrs, 4 mo's / & 7 days.” [and] “ANNA TOWN / wife of / Dr. James Tinker / DIED / Mar. 21, 1863. / AE. 72 yrs.” This photograph was taken in May 2006.

Worthy to Remember an Abridgment

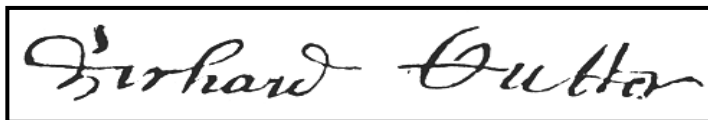
Grandmother; 1620-1662). Richard was probably the first of his family to emigrate from



Top left: Gravestone of Richard Cutter (9th Great-Grandfather; 1621-1693) in the Old Burying Ground (top right) next to Harvard University in Cambridge, Massachusetts. The inscription reads: "HERE LYES Ye BODY OF/RICHARD CUTTER/AGED ABOUT 72/YEARS. DIED Ye 16 OF/JUNE 1693." Left: Gravestone of Elizabeth Williams Cutter (9th Great-Grandmother; 1620-1662), wife of Richard Cutter, which is the second oldest in the Old Burying Ground. Middle right: Monument of William Cutter (8th Great-Granduncle; 1649-1723), which is located next to his parents. Photographs taken in 1995. Above: Trunk that Richard Cutter brought with him from England in 1637. He was a cooper by trade.

England to America. He was a cooper by trade and his descendants have the small oaken chest that was made to keep his clothes in while he was serving his apprenticeship. He was admitted a freeman in 1641 and joined the Artillery Company of Boston in 1643. The Artillery Company met for improvement in discipline and tactics. It comprised the leaders and officers of the volunteer trainbands and the principal magistrates and citizens. This was the first regularly organized company in America, and "it may be considered the germ from which all our military character in New England, if not in the United States, has sprung. The company still exists under the name of the 'Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company of Boston'" (*Cutter Family of New England*, pages 7-8, by William Cutter).

Richard owned several parcels of land in the vicinity of Cambridge, Massachusetts. His homestead was in Menotomy, later called West Cambridge. After Elizabeth died in 1662, he married Frances Perriman, the widow of Isaac Amsden of Cambridge in 1663. In his will, Richard requested his body to “be buried at Cambridge burying place near my first wife’s grave.” Richard Cutter’s gravestone, marking his grave in the Old Burying Ground in Cambridge (located across the street from Harvard University), is still standing in excellent condition. The inscription reads: “HERE LYES yE BODY OF / RICHARD CUTTER / AGED ABOUT 72 / YEARS. DIED yE 16 OF / JUNE 1693.”




Above: Signatures of Richard Cutter (9th Great-Grandfather; 1621-1693) and his son, William Cutter (8th Great-Granduncle; 1649-1723). Below: Portrait of Eli Whitney (Cousin; 1765-1825) by Samuel F. B. Morse in 1822. He was the famous inventor of the cotton gin, which made growing cotton profitable. Eli Whitney’s image was on the United States one cent postage stamp in 1940.

Elizabeth Williams Cutter’s monument in Cambridge’s Old Burying Ground is one of the oldest monuments in America. It is the second oldest gravestone still standing in the ancient



burying ground at old Cambridge. The inscription on her gravestone reads: “HERE LYES Ye BODY OF / ELIZABETH CUTTER WIFE TO / RICHARD CUTTER AGED / ABOUT 42 YEARS DIED / MARCH 5 1662.” (The Whitney Family, pages 17-22)

Invented the Cotton Gin

Eli Whitney, Jr. (Cousin; 1765-1825; son of Eli Whitney, Sr., son of Nathaniel Whitney, 6th Great-Granduncle) invented the cotton gin (i.e. engine), which “made upland short cotton into a profitable crop.”

A “single cotton gin could generate up to 55 pounds of cleaned cotton daily.” In the end it didn’t make him wealthy, but it did make him famous. (See Wikipedia article and his letters to his father that are online) (The Whitney Family, pages 13-15)

Three Brothers Married Three Sisters

Three sons of **Samuel Whitney** (6th Great-Grandfather; 1711-1788) and **Elizabeth Hastings** (6th Great-Grandmother; 1716-1800) married three sisters, daughters of **Solomon Houghton** (6th Great-Grandfather; born 1729) and **Deliverance Ross** (6th Great-Grandmother; 1735-1810). Nathaniel Whitney (5th Great-Granduncle; 1749-1829) married Mary

Houghton (5th Great-Grandaunt; 1752-1844) in 1771. Jonas Whitney (5th Great-Granduncle; 1751-1842) married Tamar Houghton (5th Great-Grandaunt; 1754-1831) in 1773.



Above: The home of William Whitney (7th Great-Granduncle; 1683-1720) in Weston, Massachusetts, in 1995. The home was built about 1707 and was known as the Whitney Tavern for many years. It is one of the oldest homes in Massachusetts. Below: Marlboro, Vermont, Town Common in 1908. Samuel Whitney and his brother, Nathaniel Whitney (5th Great-Granduncles) came to Marlboro in November 1769. The area was a “howling wilderness.” Their brother, Eliphalet Whitney (5th Great-Grandfather; 1757-1832), joined them by 1777.

Whitney (5th Great-Granduncle; 1739-1811) were recorded by Ephraim Newton in the *Vermont Historical Magazine* under “Marlboro,” pages 443-444.

“Samuel Whitney moved with his brother **Nathaniel Whitney** (5th Great-Granduncle; 1749-1829) to Marlboro, Vermont, in March 1770. He built a log house and moved his family from Shrewsbury, Massachusetts, to Marlboro, consisting of his wife and four children. He was resolute and fearless, was a great hunter; his dogs could tree a bear, and he was sure of his prey. On one occasion his dogs had driven a bear into a den among the rocks, he ventured to look in, saw the glaring eyeballs very near him, started back, at which the bear sprang upon him; they took a fair hug and rolled from the rocks down the hill together. In the struggle the bear seized his opponent’s leg in his jaws and made a frightful wound. The old hero’s sons, Moses and Guilford, mere lads at the time, saw the perilous condition of their father, but dared not fire lest they might shoot him; but they put on the dogs and urged them to the combat, whereupon the bear quit his hold to attack the



Eliphalet Whitney (5th Great-Grandfather; 1757-1832) married Lois Houghton (5th Great-Grandmother; 1756-1838) in 1776. The three Houghton sisters were all born in Lancaster, Massachusetts. (The Whitney Family, page 33)

Whitney Home from 1707 is Still Standing

William Whitney (7th Great-Granduncle; 1683-1720) built a home in Weston, Massachusetts, about 1707. It was known as the Whitney Tavern for many years. (The Whitney Family, pages 8-9)

Pioneers of Marlboro, Vermont

Some events in the life of **Samuel**

dogs; and they improved their opportunity to shoot the bear. The old hunter was disabled a long time by the wound and carried the scar to the grave.”

“In the fall of 1777, Captain Samuel Whitney had a fever by which he was confined many weeks. His family was out of fuel. As a last resort, Betty, 13 years of age, put on her father’s leather apron, yoked up the oxen, went into the woods, cut small trees, stacked them next to the house, and chopped them up into firewood. Her sister, Mrs. Miriam Brown, narrated that this was the custom of the handy child.”



Other events in Samuel Whitney’s life were recorded in *The History of the Town of Marlborough, Windham County, Vermont*, pages 261-262, by Rev. Ephraim H. Newton, compiled in 1860.

Above: Samuel Whitney (5th Great-Granduncle; 1739-1811) and his brother, Nathaniel Whitney (5th Great-Granduncle; 1749-1829), hunted many bears in their lifetimes. Once Samuel came upon a bear that “seized his leg in his jaws and made a frightful wound.” His young sons were nearby and put the dogs on him and the bear let him go. Then they were able to shoot him. He was “disabled a long time by the wound and carried the scar to the grave.”

“Samuel Whitney, Jr. was the eldest son of Samuel Whitney (6th Great-Grandfather; 1711-1788), of Shrewsbury, Massachusetts, who in company with his brother Nathaniel, came to Marlborough, in November 1769. In March 1770 he made a quantity of maple sugar, then removed from the east to the west part of the town and commenced anew. In that year, 1770, he opened the forest and put up a log house, in the raising of which he invited his brothers Nathaniel and Jonas, and James Ball, to assist him. They complied with his request and returned home to the east part of the town in the evening. The woods were so dense and dark that with much difficulty they were enabled to feel their way back by marked trees. In 1772, probably in March, he moved his family, consisting of his wife and four children, from Shrewsbury to Marlborough. He was enterprising, laborious, and persevering, bold, resolute, and fearless, bravely surmounting the trials of a pioneer. He had a peculiar voice, better fitted for the sternness of authority, than the smooth modulations of flattery. He erected buildings, and opened a public house, which he kept till the close of his life. Since then the property has passed through several hands, and is now (1860) owned by Ira Adams, Esq., who by several purchases has increased the former dimensions of the farm, demolished the former buildings, much decayed with age, and erected others upon the same site, much improved in size and architecture. The West Marlborough Post Office is kept there, but no tavern.”

In 1762 Samuel Whitney married Phebe Harrington of Grafton, Massachusetts, and moved to Marlborough in the spring of 1772. He died February 1, 1811, aged 71 years, 4 months and 8 days. Phebe died March 16, 1812, age 71 years, 9 months and 20 days. Both were

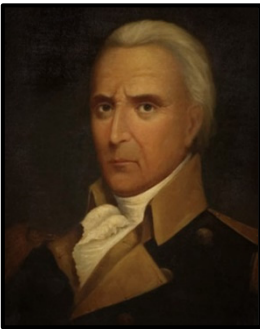
buried in the graveyard near their house. They had ten children: Catherine (born 1763, who married Samuel Pratt), Elizabeth (born 1764, who married Alvan Pratt), Moses (1767-



Above: Battle of Bennington monument that was erected in 1891 to commemorate the nearby Revolutionary War battle that took place on August 16, 1777. Nathaniel Whitney (5th Great-Granduncle) fought in this battle and possibly his brothers. The commander of the American Army was General John Stark (below). Philemon Houghton (5th Great-Granduncle) and Roger Ross (6th Great-Granduncle; 1740-1820) were also in this battle (see earlier). Top right: View from the back porch of the home of Nathaniel Whitney in Marlboro, Vermont (right).

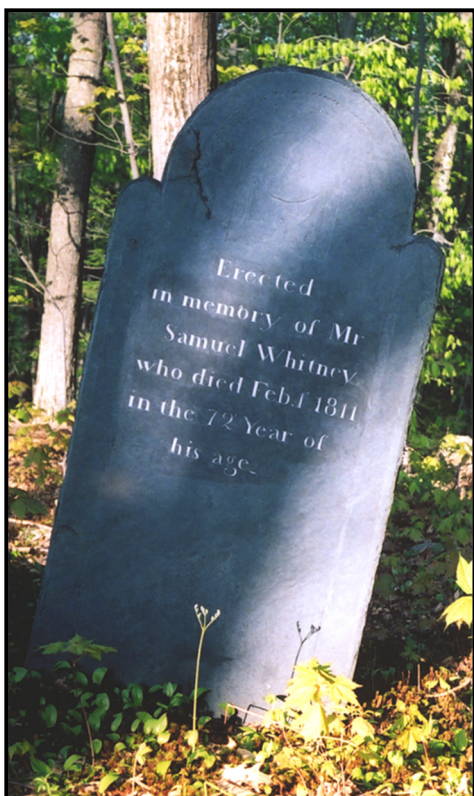


1834), Guilford (born 1769) Samuel, Jr. (1772-1846; father of Newel K. Whitney, below), Mariam (born 1776, who married Lyman Brown), Zenas (born 1786), Simei (1781-1847), Phebe (born 1786, who married Roswell Paddleford), and Russell (1789-1790). Their first four children were born in Shrewsbury, Massachusetts, and the rest of their children were born in Marlborough (Marlboro), Vermont. Their last child, Russell, was born when his mother was fifty years old.



Samuel was a soldier in the Revolutionary War. He served as a private in Captain White's Vermont Company in 1781. He must have also served as an officer because later he was called, "Captain Whitney." (*DAR Index*, page 3201)

Some events in the life of **Nathaniel Whitney** (5th Great-Granduncle; 1749-1829) were also recorded by Ephraim Newton in the *Vermont Historical Magazine* under “Marlboro,” pages 444-445.



Above and left: Gravestone of Samuel Whitney (5th Great-Granduncle) in Hogback Cemetery, which was named for the nearby Hogback Mountain; 2006. Samuel donated this land from his property for a burying ground. It is located across the road from where his home once stood. Below: Marlboro Congregational Church, which was originally built in 1776. Jonas Whitney (5th Great-Granduncle; 1751-1842) was deacon of the church for 50 years.

Captain Nathaniel Whitney, son of Samuel Whitney (6th Great-Grandfather; 1711-1788) of Shrewsbury, Massa-

chusetts, “when a young man of 20 years, with his brother, Samuel, Jr., was induced by the invitation of Colonel William Williams to visit Marlboro in November 1769. After spending a few days, he returned to his parents and made a proposal to the young lady to whom he was afterwards married, whom he left a widow (well provided for) after over 50 years of married life. March 1770, his father carried his sons, Samuel, Jr. and Nathaniel to Marlboro; left them and returned to Massachusetts.”

“Captain Nathaniel put up a log camp in the woods and commenced clearing. In this camp he spent his next two summers. He had to bring the meal on his back, 15 miles. Captain Whitney built the first framed house in town, which he occupied for a few years and sold for Continental paper money. He suffered almost a total loss of his sale. In this impoverished condition, he began anew by purchasing of Charles Philips the whole right of Number 23, in 1777. The land adjoining he purchased of Perez Stockwell, where he again settled, strove and spent his life. He was an influential citizen. As a hunter and a trapper no one excelled him.”



“From notes penned 40 years since by himself: ‘In the autumn of 1773, brother Samuel

and myself are to go out hunting at the first suitable fall of snow. In November a few inches of snow had fallen, when I repaired to my brother and found him sick, feeling himself too

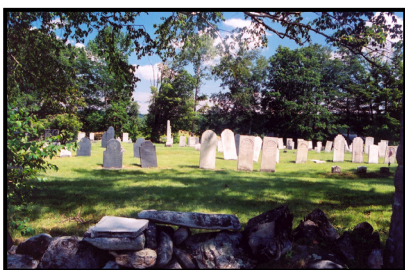


Above: The township of Marlboro, Vermont, in 1856. Four great-grandparents and six great-grandaunts and great-granduncles lived in Marlboro from the 1770's to the early 1800s. Top left: Gravestone of Nathaniel Whitney (5th Great-Granduncle; 1749-1829) and an old photograph of his home, which he built in 1777; both in Marlboro. Left: Two photographs of the home in Marlboro of Colonel William Williams who encouraged Nathaniel Whitney and his brothers, to move from Shrewsbury, Massachusetts, to Marlboro in 1770. Mrs. Williams cooked his food for him when he first settled in the area. The home is now an inn.

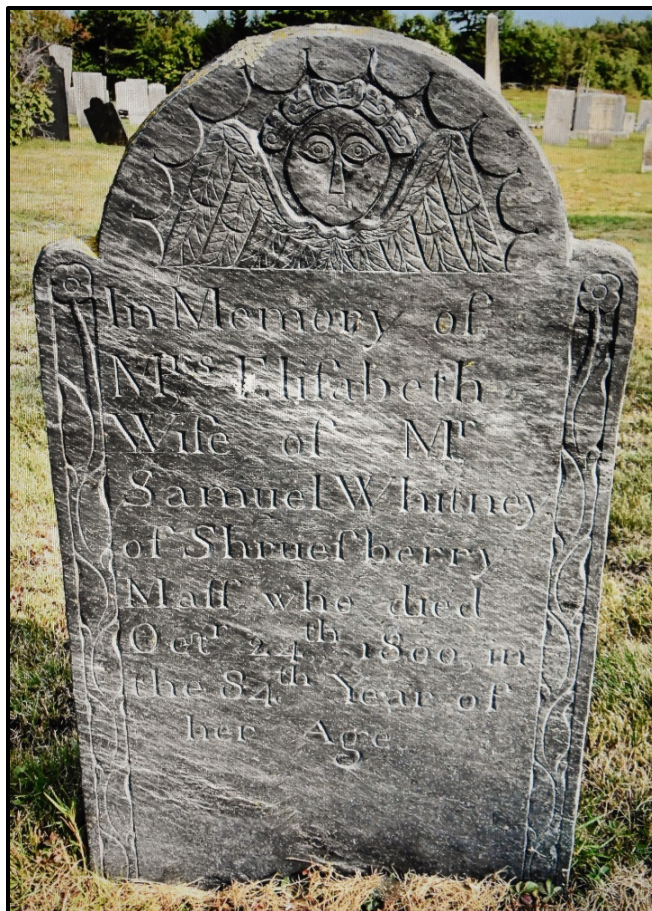
feeble to engage in the chase. In the morning I took my brother's dog with my own and went in the woods. Bear tracks were plenty; the dogs took one, but at night I returned to my brother, and found him not as well. In the morning, I again took his dog and entered the forest. At that time all was a howling wilderness, without a single settlement. I took a westerly course, and saw a monstrous track of a bear, larger than I ever before saw. I returned to the house and persuaded brother Samuel to go and see it. We were both exceedingly surprised."

"We pursued it nearly to the top of the hill, in the west part of the town near Wilmington line. I let the dogs go. In a few minutes they entered a thicket and roared tremendously. I flung off my pack and pursued with all speed down the hill near Wilmington Pond to

Deerfield River. The bear and dogs had crossed. By taking some pains I found a tree which had fallen across the stream, on which I found a safe passage, and soon discovered that



This page: Gravestones of Elizabeth Hastings Whitney (6th Great-Grandmother; 1716-1800) and Deliverance Ross Houghton (6th Great-Grandmother; 1735-1810) who are buried next to each other in Marlboro Cemetery (above) in Marlboro, Vermont. They both moved to Marlboro in the last years of their lives to be with their children, who had intermarried. (Three sons of Elizabeth married three daughters of Deliverance.)



Samuel's dog had treed the bear. I then leveled my gun and fired directly at his head. He dodged a little, came down, struck brother Samuel's dog with his paw and laid him stiff, and again ascended the tree. I fired the second time at his body. He instantly slid down the tree and moved off with two streams of blood flowing, one on each side. I shot at him the third time and put the ball through his body. I shot the fourth ball through his middle, shot the 5th through his head and the bear yielded. Enormous creature. The bear was so heavy

that in ascending and descending the tree, he tore his nails off to the quick. The next day I succeeded in obtaining help in drawing the animal and carrying him home. After being dressed and carried home, the meat weighed 466 pounds. This was the first bear I ever killed and probably the largest ever killed in Vermont."

"Captain Whitney was fond of the exciting scenes of the hunter's life, even until his hair was whitened by age. In recounting his success as a sportsman, he said he thought, but could not tell exactly, that he had killed not less than one hundred bears, one hundred deer, one moose, and fourteen wolves, to say nothing of the multitude of lighter game."

“He was a staunch Whig and took a decided stand for the Revolution. On hearing of the Battle of Lexington, he and Captain James Warren took their muskets and started for the American camp. It will be remembered he was also on the guard over the Bennington prisoners, after that battle in which he shared. At the close of the campaign, he returned to his family and his farm. He took a lively interest in the prosperity of the town, also in the Congregational church of which he was a worthy member. His family has been widely dispersed. But few of their descendants remain to cherish their memory.”

Nathaniel served as an officer during the Revolutionary War. He was a lieutenant and a captain in Warren’s Vermont Company in 1782. (*DAR Index*, page 3201)

Reverend Ephraim H. Newton provided other details of Nathaniel’s life in *The History of the Town of Marlborough, Vermont*, pages 265-269.

“In 1770 Captain Nathaniel Whitney put him up a log camp in the woods and commenced clearing his new farm. In this camp he spent the next two summers, ambitious and toilsome, in his new field of labor. At his request, Mrs. Col. Williams cooked for him a week’s provision at a time, and he returned to his camp and spent the week in hard labor upon its nourishment. His principal living was pork and peas and beans, with a comfortable supply of bread, and occasionally with the additional luxury of trout and wild game. For his bread he brought the meal upon his back from Brattleboro, Colerain, or Greenfield, Vermont, distances of 10, 15, and 20 miles.”

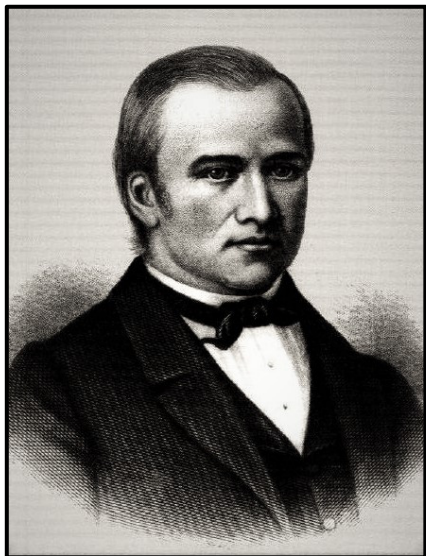
“On these premises, Captain Whitney built the first framed dwelling house erected in town, which he occupied for a few years, and then sold his possessions for continental paper money, which depreciated so much in value that he suffered almost total loss of his sale. In this impoverished condition he began anew... purchasing 472 acres of land on March 28, 1777. It is supposed he sold the western half of this purchase to his brother, **Eliphalet Whitney** (5th Great-Grandfather; 1757-1832), retaining the eastern half to him. On this purchase he began anew, again settled, became a thriving farmer and an influential and highly esteemed citizen. Here he spent the remainder of his days.”

“As a hunter no one in town excelled him. As a trapper, he was artful and seldom failed of success. As an angler, he was sly and not infrequently would find himself heavily laden with a fine string of trout. With his gun he was cautious, and with untiring patience would he pursue game with his dogs a favorable issue.”

“In 1777 Mr. Gershom C. Lyman, then a candidate for the ministry, in the vigor of his youthful manhood, accompanied Capt. Whitney on a hunting excursion and fortunately killed a fawn. Young Lyman started in the morning full of life, but before night was much exhausted by his long chase and the fatigue of the day. The facetious Captain asked his young minister what is meant in holy writ by a ‘Cunning hunter.’ Mr. Lyman promptly replied, ‘he thought it must be one who did not hunt too much.’”

Nathaniel and his wife, Mary Houghton (1751-1844) of Lancaster, Massachusetts, were the parents of thirteen children: Nathaniel (1771-1771), Molly (1772-1774), Dolly (born 1774; married at the age of fifteen), Molly (1776-1783), Luther (born 1777), Nathaniel

(born 1779), Solomon (born 1781), Chloe (1783-1803), Charlotte (born 1785), Rhoda (1787-1848), Zilpah (born 1789), Betsey (born 1791) and Clark Whitney (1794-1814). All of their children were born in Marlboro, Vermont, except their oldest, Nathaniel, who was born in Shrewsbury, Massachusetts.



Top left: Newel K. Whitney (1795-1850; grandson of Samuel Whitney, 5th Great-Granduncle). Left: Newel's home in Kirtland, Ohio, in the early 1830s (2014). Above: Store owned by Newel in Kirtland. This dry goods store was the headquarters for The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints, for a brief time in the early 1830s. Newel K. Whitney became one of the most prominent members of the early church and Joseph Smith lived with him for a time.

Nathaniel was buried in the King Cemetery in east Marlboro, Vermont. The inscription on his gravestone reads: "NATHANIEL / WHITNEY / Died June 6, 1829. / aged 80 years." The inscription on his wife's gravestone reads: "MARY / Wife of Nathaniel / WHITNEY / Died / Sept. 22, 1841 / Age 93 years, 3 months."

Colonel William Williams, who encouraged Nathaniel Whitney and his brothers, Samuel and Jonas, to move from Shrewsbury, Massachusetts, ("who were always regarded as the most useful and influential citizens of Marlborough") to Marlboro, Vermont, built a handsome framed building in the town. His home is still standing today in excellent condition and is known as "The Colonel Williams' Inn." It was owned and operated by Tom and Denise Ware in 1999. Colonel Williams was active in the French and Indian War and in the Revolutionary War. He led a regiment at the Battle of Bennington on August 16, 1777. (*History of Eastern Vermont: Biographical Sketches*, pages 728-730, by Hall) (*The Whitney Family*, pages 32-37, 42-50)

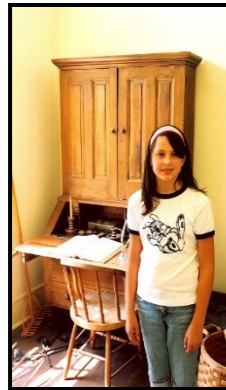
His Store was once the Headquarters for the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints

Newel Kimball Whitney (1795-1850; son of Samuel Whitney, son of Samuel Whitney,

5th Great-Granduncle) was born in Marlboro, Vermont, in 1795. He moved to Plattsburg, New York, where he was working as a merchant by 1814.



Above: State Historical Marker in Sharon County, Vermont, noting the birthplace of Joseph Smith. Right: Rebecca Martin (Cousin of Newel K. Whitney), age ten in 2006, next to the writing desk owned by Newel K. Whitney, now in the Joseph Smith Store in Nauvoo, Illinois. When Joseph Smith was seventeen years old, he was told by an angel that his name would be had for good and evil among all people, which has come true. Some people believe that he was chosen by God to do a great work, and others think of him as a deceiver. One thing is certain, Joseph Smith always believed that the visions and revelations that he received were true and the greatest proof is the Book of Mormon. Most people have never read the Book of Mormon, but when they do, most believe it is true. Joseph Smith lived with Newel K. Whitney for many months, and he knew him better than almost anyone else outside of his immediate family, and he always believed that he was a prophet.



He took part in the Battle of Champlain during the War of 1812. At this battle the Americans defeated a British force of fourteen thousand men. After he lost his property in the war, Newel established himself as an Indian trader. Thereafter, he moved from Lake Michigan and located in Painesville, Ohio, where he began working for Algernon Sidney Gilbert as a store clerk and where he learned book-keeping. He later became a junior partner with Gilbert in the mercantile firm of Gilbert & Whitney, with headquarters in Kirtland, Ohio. He married Elizabeth Smith in 1822 and she later recorded their history.

“He was a young man who had come out west (Newel was born in Marlboro, Vermont) to seek his fortune. He had thrift and energy and accumulated property faster than most of his associates. Indeed, he became proverbial as being lucky in all his undertakings. He had been trading at Green Bay, Wisconsin, buying furs and skins from the Indians and trappers

for the eastern market, and exchanging them for goods suitable to the wants of the people in that locality. In his travels to and from New York he passed through the country where we resided; we met and became attached to each other, and my aunt granting her full approval, we were married. Our tastes and feelings were congenial, and we were a happy couple with bright prospects in store. We prospered in all efforts to accumulate wealth; so much so that among our friends it came to be remarked that ‘nothing of N. K. Whitney’s ever got lost on the lake, and no product of his was ever low in the market.’”

Newel and his wife joined the Campbellites but converted to The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints in November 1830. Elizabeth Whitney related what happened prior to this time.

“One night, it was midnight—my husband and I were in our house at Kirtland, praying to the Father to be shown the way, when the Spirit rested upon us and a cloud overshadowed the house. It was as though we were outdoors. The house passed away from our vision. We were wrapped in the cloud. A solemn awe pervaded us. We saw the cloud and felt the Spirit of the Lord. Then we heard a voice out of the cloud saying, ‘Prepare to receive the word of the Lord, for it is coming.’ At this we marveled greatly, but from that moment we knew that the word of the Lord was coming to Kirtland.”

In February 1831 Joseph Smith came into Newel’s store and introduced himself and said, “You have prayed me here; now what do you want of me.” Joseph and his wife lived with the Whitneys for several weeks and according to Joseph, “Received every kindness and attention that could be expected.” Later while living in the Whitney home and store, Joseph Smith received several important revelations. Elizabeth Whitney recorded, “I remarked to my husband that this was the fulfillment of the vision we had seen of a cloud, as of glory, resting upon our house.”

Newel was called to be a bishop for the church in December 1831. When told of his new calling Newel said, “I cannot see a Bishop in myself, Brother Joseph; but if you say it’s the Lord’s will, I’ll try.” Joseph replied, “You need not take my word alone. Go and ask Father for yourself.” Newel followed this advice and prayed for an answer. He said he heard a voice from Heaven that said, “Thy strength is in me.” Newel was satisfied with the answer and accepted his calling as a bishop.

Newel remained faithful to Joseph Smith and the church all of his life. He converted his father, Samuel Whitney (son of Samuel Whitney, 5th Great-Granduncle), his mother, and several relatives. His father and mother both moved to Kirtland, where they died.

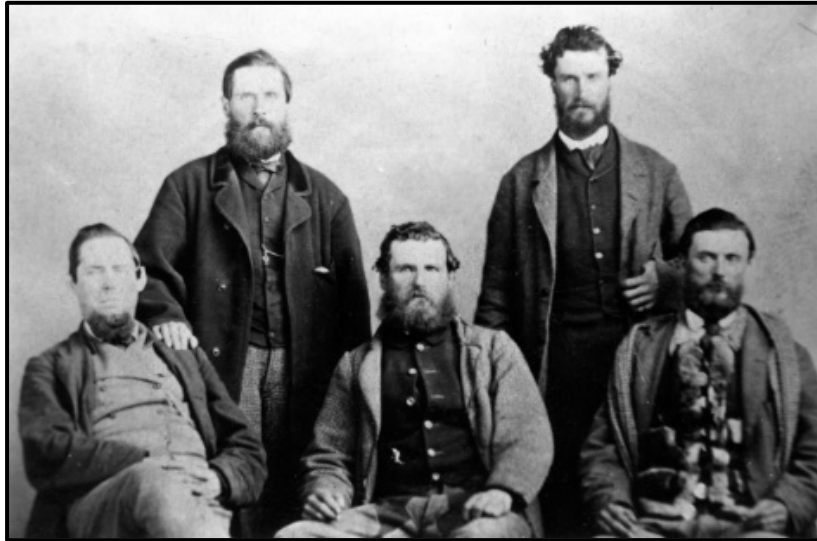
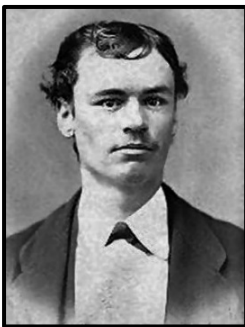
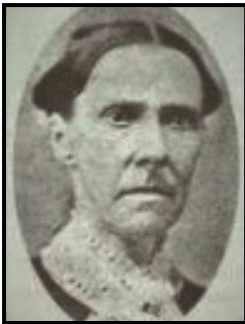
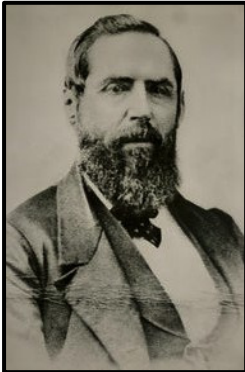
Newel traveled to Missouri with Joseph Smith in 1832 and broke his leg in Indiana while returning home. That same year, he served a mission to Albany, New York City and Boston. He attended the School of the Prophets, worked on the Kirtland Temple and



Above, left to right: Elizabeth Ann Smith (1800-1882; first wife of Newel K. Whitney), Emmeline B. Wells (1828-1921; second wife of Newel K. Whitney, by whom he had two daughters; she was the fifth Relief Society General President of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints from 1910 until 1921), and Eliza R. Snow (1804-1887; second Relief Society General President from 1910 until 1921); circa 1876.

Worthy to Remember an Abridgment

traveled backed to New York to purchase goods for his store. In 1838, Newel moved to Missouri, settled in Illinois, returned to Kirtland to complete unfinished business, then moved to Nauvoo, Illinois, where he settled in 1839.



Top left: Horace Kimball Whitney (1823-1884; son of Newel K. Whitney) and his brother, Orson K. Whitney (1830-1884; sitting in center above). They were members of the first pioneer company to enter Salt Lake Valley on July 24, 1847. Above, left to right: Four sons and one grandson of Newel K. Whitney. Horace K. Whitney, Joshua K. Whitney (1835-1902), Orson K. Whitney (1830-1884), Carlos Whitney (son of Joshua K. Whitney), and Don Carlos Whitney (1841-1886). Photograph courtesy of Mary Louise Whitney. Left: Sarah Ann Smith Whitney (1825-1873; daughter of Newel K. Whitney) and her brother, John K. Whitney (1832-1915). Bottom; Orson F. Whitney (1855-1931; son of Horace K. Whitney) was a member of the Quorum of the Twelve Apostles from 1906 until 1931.

Newel was appointed bishop of the Nauvoo Middle Ward in October 1839 and officiated in that capacity until called to be the Presiding Bishop of the church in April 1847. He was also appointed trustee-in-trust for the church.

Newel officiated when his oldest daughter, Sarah, became the wife of Joseph Smith, in 1842. Newel saved Section 132 of the Doctrine and Covenants from being lost by having a second copy made. He gave the copy to Brigham Young in Winter Quarters, Nebraska, in 1847. (The Whitney Family, pages 35-42)

In First Pioneer Company to Enter Salt Lake Valley on July 24, 1847

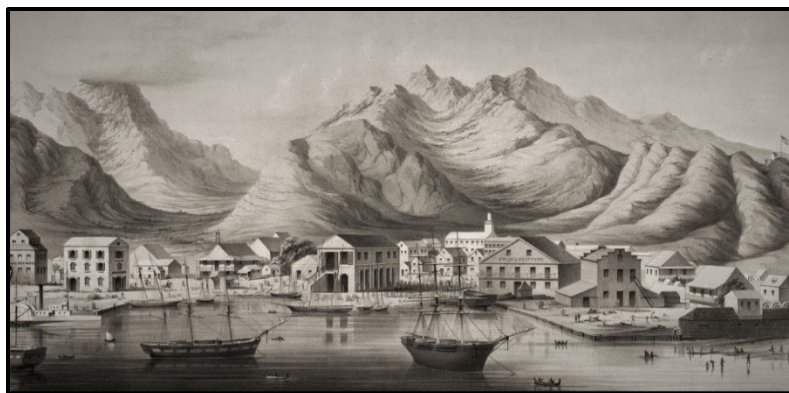
Two of Newel's sons, **Horace K. Whitney** (1823-1884) and **Orson K. Whitney** (1830-1884), were part of the first pioneer company to enter Salt Lake Valley in 1847. (This is still a mark of honor for people living in Utah today.) Newel stayed behind to oversee emigration on the frontier. The following year he led a company across the

plains to Salt Lake Valley, arriving October 8, 1848. He died two years later of bilious pleurisy on September 23, 1850, at his home on City Creek in Salt Lake City, Utah. He had fourteen children. (*LDS Biographical Encyclopedia*, Volume 1, pages 222-227, by Andrew Jenson.) (The Whitney Family, pages 41-42)

Missionary in Hawaii

Orson K. Whitney (1830-1884; son of Newel K. Whitney) assisted his brother, Horace Whitney, in preparing a place for his father's family in Salt Lake Valley in 1847.

“After the death of his father in 1850, Orson was called on a mission to Hawaii. A cabinet-maker, he earned his way to Hawaii without purse or scrip, arriving in Hawaii in August 1854. He worked at a few jobs, such as making



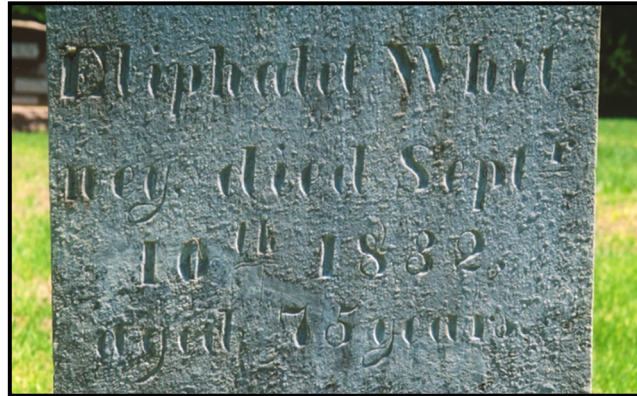
Above: Depiction of Honolulu, Hawaii, in 1850. Orson K. Whitney (1830-1884; son of Newel K. Whitney) served as a missionary to Hawaii in the 1850s without any financial support.

coffins, to support himself in his missionary work. When his mission was over, he again worked to earn passage back to the mainland. Upon his return, he assisted the Utah infantry in Echo Canyon in November 1857. Later he fought in Indian skirmishes around Provo and Pleasant Grove in Utah County. He was known as a daring and adventurous frontiersman. He died in Salt Lake City July 31, 1884, at age 54” (*Deseret News 1997-98 Church Almanac*, “Biographies of the Original 1847 Pioneer Company,” page 155). (The Whitney Family, page 42)

Served a Famous Mug of Toddy

Jonas Whitney (5th Great-Granduncle; 1751-1842) (his wife was **Tamar Houghton**, 5th Great-Grandaunt; 1754-1831) was “born in Shrewsbury, Massachusetts, and, with his brothers, an early settler in Marlboro, Vermont. He was for fifty years a deacon in the Congregational Church. When the first town meeting was held in 1775, he was elected to office. The Deacon kept the tavern down the hill in Marlboro, where the good fathers use to go on Sunday during the intermission between the morning and afternoon service. Clubs of four would call for a ‘mug of toddy’ to moisten their bread and cheese. The Deacon mixed it, for who could make such excellent toddy as he? The large glass, holding a quart, two-thirds full of water, was well seasoned with loaf sugar, when it was filled up with ‘old Jamaica rum,’ and well mixed by an adept use of the ‘toddy stick,’ receiving its finishing touch with a sprinkling of grated nutmeg. The four drank out of the same glass, ‘passing it around.’ If there was more than they needed they passed it to others, for they were prudent and temperate in all things. A ‘half mug’ served for two, and it was seldom that anyone

drank alone. As a rule, each one paid his share, the business of treating not being popular in the church. This harmless social habit is scouted now, though drunkenness at that time



This page: Gravestone of Eliphalet Whitney (5th Great-Grandfather) in Plain's Cemetery, Morristown, Vermont, in May 2006. The inscription reads: "Eliphalet Whit / ney died Sepr / 10th 1832, / aged 75 years."

was almost unknown. If a young man got so far under the influence of strong drink as to lose the proper control of his limbs or his tongue, it brought a stigma upon him in the community, from which he rarely recovered. Jonas' wife was one of a family of eleven children, and was the first to die, age 77 years. The youngest of the eleven was present at her funeral—his age was 55; Jonas died in Strongsville, Ohio. He resided in three places during his lifetime:

Shrewsbury, Massachusetts, Marlboro, Vermont, and Strongsville, Ohio." (The Whitney Family, pages 85-86)

Moved to Morristown, Vermont

Eliphalet Whitney (5th Great-Grandfather; 1757-1832) was baptized on May 4, 1757, in Shrewsbury, Massachusetts. Marriage intentions were published on June 16, 1776, in Lancaster, Massachusetts, for him "of Shrewsbury" and **Lois Houghton** (5th Great-Grandmother; 1756-1838) "of Lancaster." They were married on August 12, 1776, in Shrewsbury. Eliphalet's family was listed in the 1790 census in Shrewsbury; 1800 census in Hartland, Windsor County, Vermont; 1810 census and 1820 census in Morristown, Vermont; and not listed in any 1830 census. (The Whitney Family, pages 51-53)

Sacrificed Everything for His Country

Elizabeth Whitney (6th Great-Grandaunt; 1702-1789) was born July 23, 1702, in Watertown, Massachusetts, and baptized on June 17, 1711, in Weston, Massachusetts. She was admitted to the church in Weston on September 3, 1727. Elizabeth married Daniel Bigelow (1697-1789) and they were the parents of six children: Daniel, David, Nathaniel, Elijah,

Colonel Timothy Bigelow (1739-1790; see below), and Silence Bigelow. All of their children were born in Worcester, Massachusetts.

Colonel Timothy Bigelow (1739-1790), son of Elizabeth Whitney, “was one of the prime movers in the provincial cause in the Revolutionary war, being associated with Warren



Above: Painting of Col. Timothy Bigelow's (1739-1790; son of Elizabeth Whitney, 6th Great-Grandaunt) house before 1782 that was discovered on a panel board above a fireplace when the paint was scraped off. Below: Tim Bigelow's signature made in 1776. During the Revolutionary War he led his regiment in many important engagements with the enemy, including the pivotal victories at Saratoga (which led to France joining the war against England) and Yorktown (the final major battle of the war).

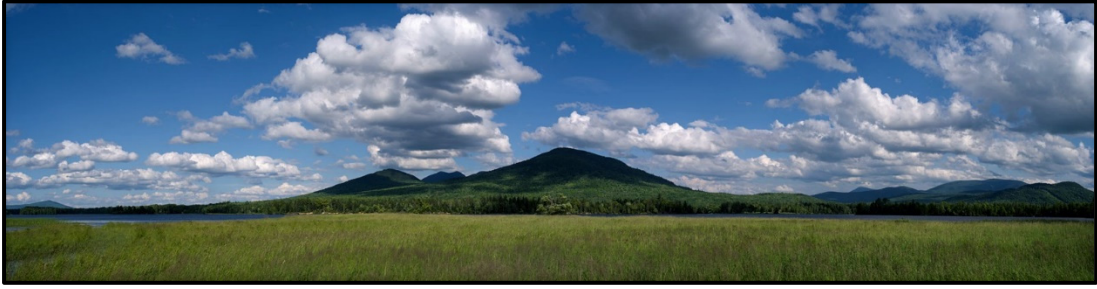
Otis, and other leading spirits. In March 1773, he was elected a member of the local Committee of Correspondence, and continued a member until called into active service in April 1775. He was active in the organization of the American Political Society in December 1773, comprising the leading patriots of the town, and meetings of the society were frequently held at his house. He was an influential member of many revolutionary committees. Was a delegate from this town at the first and second sessions of the Provincial Congress in 1774 and 1775.”

“In the spring of 1775, Mr. Isaiah Thomas, the publisher of the *Massachusetts Spy*, printed in Boston, was placed by the British authorities on the list of suspicious persons, and his paper was proscribed. Joseph Warren and Timothy Bigelow advised his removal with his press and types to Worcester. Although an affair of some difficulty and requiring great caution, Capt. Bigelow undertook the task, and, selecting a dark night, he with others succeeded in conveying the press and types to Barton's Point, and ferrying them to Charlestown, and from thence transporting them to Worcester to the basement of his own house, where the press was set up ready for use.”

“He organized and commanded the company of minute men which marched from Worcester on the alarm at Lexington, April 19, 1775, and on the organization of the army at Cambridge was appointed major in the regiment of which Jonathan Ward was colonel. He took part in the ill-fated expedition against Quebec in the fall of 1775, was taken prisoner and confined nearly a year, when he was paroled and afterward exchanged, and was soon in active service as Lieut. Colonel. February 8, 1777, he received a commission as colonel and was appointed to the command of the 15th Massachusetts regiment in the Continental

Worthy to Remember an Abridgment

army then forming principally of men from Worcester County. On the completion of the regimental organization, he marched with his command to join the northern army under



This page: Mount Bigelow in Franklin County, Maine, which is named for Timothy Bigelow (1739-1790; son of Elizabeth Whitney, 6th Great-Grandaunt). It is over 4,000 feet high. On his trek to Quebec with Gen. B. Arnold, he was ordered to the top of the mountain for reconnaissance and is thought to be the first white man to ever climb the mountain.

Gen. Schuyler, arriving in season to assist in the capture of Burgoyne by

Gen. Gates at Saratoga. He was also in service in Rhode Island, Verplanck's Point, Robinson's Farms, New Jersey, Peekskill, Monmouth, Valley Forge, West Point, and Yorktown. At the close of the war, he was stationed for a time at West Point, and afterward assigned to the command of the arsenal at Springfield. On relinquishing his military duties, he returned to Worcester and engaged in his old occupation as a blacksmith. In 1780, he with others obtained a grant of 23,040 acres of land in Vermont, upon which was later founded the town of Montpelier, now the capital of the state. He is described as having been a man of fine personal appearance, tall (6' 2") and erect, and possessed of a martial bearing. He married Anna Andrews on July 7, 1762. In 1861 the remains of Col. Bigelow were exhumed, incased in a metallic casket and place in a receptacle beneath the base of the monument (located on the Worcester common) erected by his great-grandson, Col. Timothy Bigelow Lawrence, of Boston" (*Some of the Descendants of John and Elinor Whitney*, by William Whitney, published 1890).

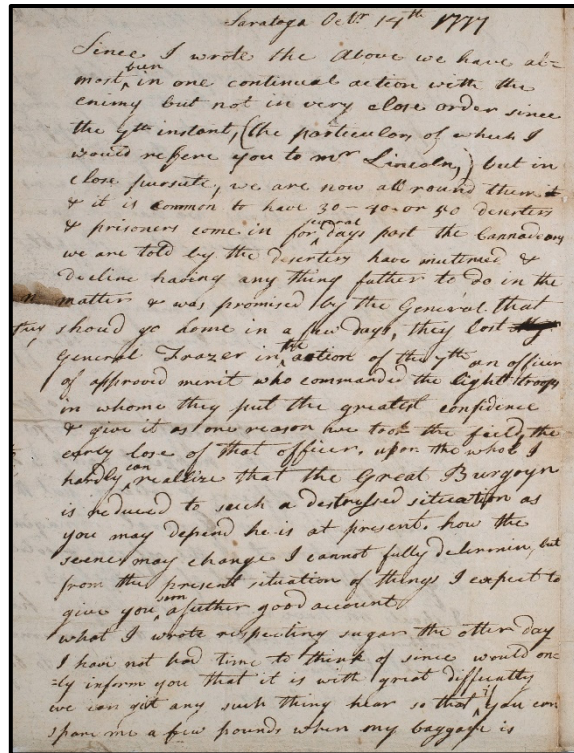


Major Bigelow wrote to his wife, Anna, while with General Arnold on his trek to Quebec: "October 26, 1775. On that part of the Kennybeck called the Dead River, 95 miles above

Norridgewock. Dear wife. I am at this time well, but in a dangerous situation, as is the whole detachment of the Continental Army with me. We are in a wilderness nearly 100 miles from any inhabitants, either French or English, and about five days provisions on an average on the whole. We are this day sending back the most feeble and some that are sick. If the French are our enemies, it will go hard for us, for we have no retreat left. In that case there will be no alternative between sword and famine. May God in his infinite mercy protect you, my more than ever dear wife, and my dear children. Adieu, and ever believe me to be your affectionate husband, Timo Bigelow.”

It was on this expedition that Major Bigelow was ordered to the top of the

Right: First and second pages of a letter written by Colonel Timothy Bigelow (1739-1790; son of Elizabeth Whitney, 6th Great-Grand-aunt) from Saratoga, New York, on October 14, 1777. General Burgoyne (below) had surrendered his army to the Americans just a week earlier on October 7, 1777. He wrote that until the 7th they had “been in one continual action with the enemy.”

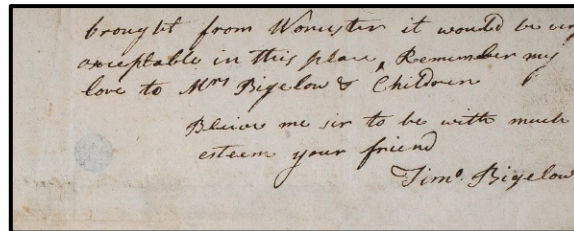


mountain near Chaudière Pond, and the headwaters of the Kennebec River, in search of reconnaissance information on



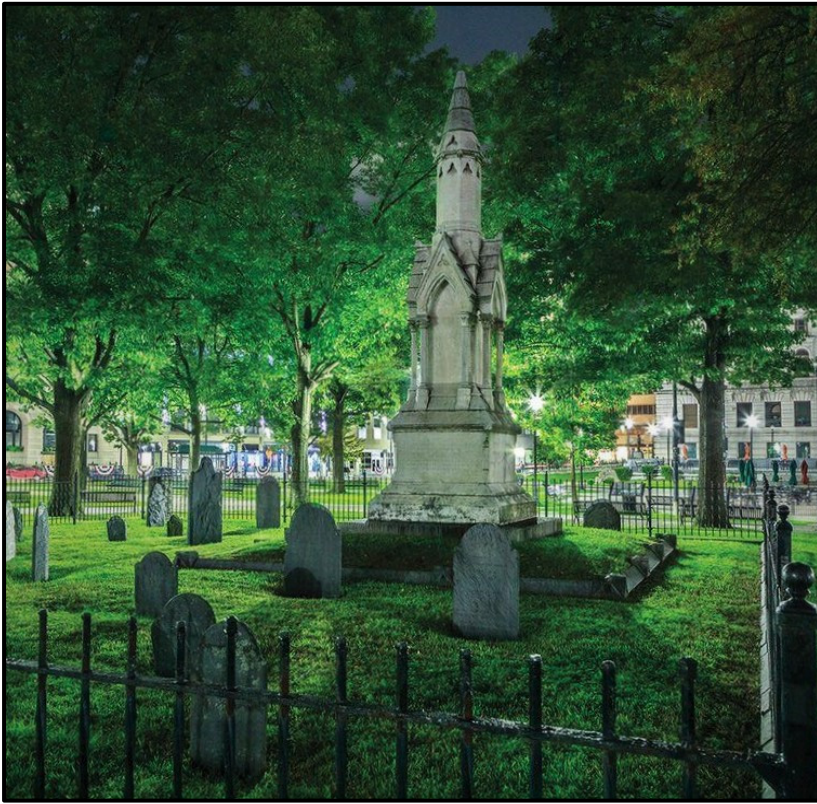
the city of Quebec. He is said to be the first white man to climb the mountain and it has been named Mt. Bigelow ever since.

(“Mount Bigelow’s Avery Peak is a 4,090-foot mountain in the Bigelow Range in Franklin County, Maine. The mountain is named after Major Timothy Bigelow who climbed the rugged summit in 1775 for observation purposes. Most of the mountain is part of the over 10,000-acre Bigelow Preserve created in 1976.”)



He soon wrote another letter to his wife: “Chaudier Pond. Oct. 28, 1775. Dear Anna, I very much regret my writing my last letter to you, the contents were so gloomy. It is true our provisions are short (only five pints of flour to a man and no meat) but we have this minute received news that the inhabitants of Canada are all friendly, and very much rejoiced at our coming, and a very small number of troops in Quebec. We have had a very fatiguing march of it, but I hope

it will soon be over. The express is waiting; therefore, must conclude. I am dear wife, with unlimited affection, your faithful husband. Timo. Bigelow.”

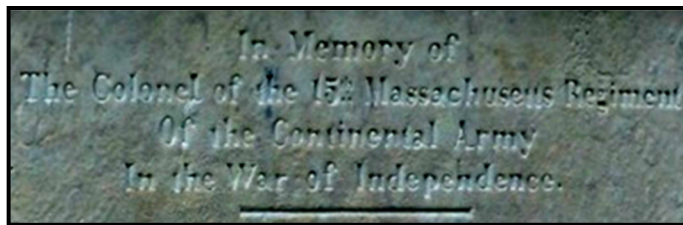


Above: Monument dedicated on April 19, 1861, to Colonel Timothy Bigelow (1739-1790) in Worcester Common in downtown Worcester, Massachusetts, in 2011. This is “the very same common where he drilled his minutemen and prepared them for the American Revolutionary War.” He was a brave and dedicated patriot who led his men of the 15th Massachusetts Regiment of the Continental Army into many battles, but in his hour of need no one assisted him.

After the war Timothy returned to Worcester where “he found his once impressive business and financial status grievously depreciated. Soldiers were paid in Continental paper money. Post-war time was hard and this currency no longer held its value. The cost of necessities had risen 3,340 percent over pre-war prices. With his can-do spirit he set about rebuilding his blacksmith and innkeeper business. But with necessities like shoes costing \$40 a pair and the American dollar had not yet been adopted, one could only trade with credit. The brawn required of the blacksmith trade had been

stripped of Timothy by too many years of poor nutrition during the war. He was a shell of the man he once was, he faltered, and his business failed. His creditors mounted and he found himself so deep in debt, he could not see a way out.”

He was sent to the overcrowded Worcester debtor’s prison where he died on March 31, 1790, at the age of 50. “The friend and fellow patriot to whom he had given aid in saving his printing press, Isaac Thomas, placed only a single line in the *Massachusetts Spy* newspaper, reporting Timothy’s death.”



Col. Bigelow’s son, Timothy Bigelow, graduated from Harvard and became a prominent businessman and politician. (The Whitney Family, pages 78-82)

Conclusion

It's interesting how the arrow of time goes in only one direction leading us from childhood to old age and death. If there wasn't an eternal plan for our lives it would be so meaningless. Otherwise, we would live a few short years, and regardless of how well we lived, go to nothingness. I don't believe that. I choose to believe that we have a kind Heavenly Father who has placed us on earth as part of an everlasting plan for our happiness. As the scripture says, "All things have been done in the wisdom of Him who knoweth all things. Adam fell that man might be; and men are, that they might have joy" (2 Nephi 2:28-29).

Every ancestor of mine that is recorded in this history, with only a few exceptions, has died. Most married, had children, lived here or there, grew old and passed away with basically everything they possessed passing away soon thereafter (few homes remain standing after a hundred years). They were as real as I am, but the law of entropy allows no one to live beyond a certain span of years. Everything breaks down from a complicated state to a lesser state, heat goes to cold, complex goes to simple; it is unavoidable. As another scripture states, "Death hath passed upon all men, to fulfill the merciful plan of the great Creator." (2 Nephi 9:6)."

I don't want this to turn into a sermon, but just to be living to live isn't enough. There must be a reason for all of this and I believe there is.

For example, when I look at the life of Dr. James Erastus Lay (1843-1916; his relationship to me is equivalent to a second great-granduncle) I'm impressed. When he was seven years old, he moved with his family from Tennessee to a "wild, primitive region" of south Texas, where he immediately became acquainted with "arduous labor, hardships, and danger." He was obedient and hard-working. When war came, he did what he thought he should and enlisted in the army for four years and only missed three days of active service. Thereafter, he read medicine and soon entered the Tulane Medical College, and in 1868 began the practice of medicine. That year he married, had five children, and was always faithful to them. He was much admired and it was written of him: "As a practitioner of medicine he was one of the most efficient, sympathetic with the suffering ones, and faithful. The nights never got too dark, nor the roads too muddy, nor the weather too cold, and many times on horseback he swam the Lavaca and Navidad Rivers to relieve suffering humanity." Ten years before he died, he wrote a history of his community and in it "praised the Negroes ...who proved to be the strong right arm of the white man in subduing these wilds and fitting them for the coming generation...During the war...they stayed at home and cultivated our fields and actually saved us from ruin." He was considerate and appreciative and wrote: "Sometimes, when I cast a glance back across this gulf of buried peoples and things of more than fifty years, I feel as one who had lived through two mornings of time on earth." When he died the entire town of Hallettsville, Texas, closed all of its businesses for his funeral.

I believe that when we die we all go into the Spirit World and continue our lives until the Day of Judgement. Then we will all be resurrected and brought to stand before God and

give an account of our lives. I have to believe that a man such as James Lay will not be afraid of such a moment but rather be honored. There's obviously much more that I could write about all of this, but what I'm saying is that life is wonderful, and if we use it well we have nothing but glory and honor ahead of us.

In conclusion, I want to say that I believe life is a miracle and it is amazing that almost everything around us is conducive for life. I reject the highly improbably assertion that we are all here because of an infinite series of accidents on inert matter. The list of external and internal factors that have to be perfect in order for life to exist are amazing. Some things are obvious: If the earth was a little closer to the sun we would burn up, a little further away and we would freeze, but most are not that plain such as the existence of a magnetic field around the earth, called the Van Allen belt, which protects our atmosphere from destruction. The simple and unusual fact that ice floats makes life possible—otherwise all the oceans would be solid ice. It goes on and on, with the moon at just the right distance from the earth to keep it stable, and the spin of the earth at just the right speed. This discussion doesn't even address the complexities of our mortal bodies, where everything (the heart and circulatory system, the filtering system, the lungs, the muscles and skin, the digestive system, the nervous system and so much more) must all work together and function with precision for us to live. This is all fine-tuned to a point that is beyond the comprehension of anyone.

This also brings up the important point of how everything got highly ordered in the first place. The Second Law of Thermodynamics states that everything is always moving from a higher, more organized state, to a lower, less organized state. The heat death. This is a fundamental law of the universe, as one physicist said, "If someone says that his theory goes against the Second Law of Thermodynamics you can know immediately that it is false." Yet we see order and complexity throughout the universe. What power is working against this law to make planets and life possible? Physicists admit that they do not have an answer, but obviously some power is making complex order possible.

So, why go to all of this trouble if there isn't some special reason for our existence. God has stated why he does it and it isn't for himself—it is for the ultimate good of his children. He said, "The Heavens, they are many, and they cannot be numbered unto man, but they are numbered unto me, for they are mine. And as one earth shall pass away and the heavens thereof even so shall another come; and there is no end to my works, neither to my words. For behold, this is my work and my glory—to bring to pass the immortality and eternal life of man" (Moses 1:37-29). So, this world has been made for our benefit and when all is said and done we will join our ancestors in that eternal world. This truth is reflected in the words recited at a Viking funeral as recorded by Arab chronicler Ibn Fadlan in 992 A.D.: "Lo there do I see my Father. / Lo there do I see my mother, / And my sisters and brothers. / Lo there do I see the line of my people back to the beginning. / Lo they call to me. / They bid me take my place among them, / In the halls of Valhalla, / Where the brave may live forever."